

THE
REPRESSOR OF OVER MUCH BLAMING OF
THE CLERGY.

BY
REGINALD PECOCK, D.D.,
SOMETIME LORD BISHOP OF CHICHESTER.

EDITED
BY
CHURCHILL BABINGTON, B.D.,
FELLOW OF ST. JOHN'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

PUBLISHED BY THE AUTHORITY OF THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS OF HER MAJESTY'S
TREASURY, UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE MASTER OF THE ROLLS.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
LONGMAN, GREEN, LONGMAN, AND ROBERTS.

1860.

PECOCK'S REPRESSOR.

V. CHAPTER.

THE iiij^e. principal processe of the Newe Testament, bi which myzte seeme endewing of prestis to be vnleeful, is writun i^e. Thimoth. vj^e. c̃., where Poul blamed sum men "whiche deemeden wynnyng to be pite," and there he seith to Thimothie bischop thus: *A greet wynnyng is pitee with sufficiencye, for we brouzten yn no thing into this world, and no dout that we mowe not bere away eny thing; but we hauyng foodis and with what thingis we schulen be hiled, be we content or paid with these thingis. For thei that wolen be maad riche fallen in to temptacioun, and into snare of the deuyl, and into manye vnprofitable desiris and noiose, which drenchen men into deeth and perdicioun. For the roote of alle yuelis is coueitise, et cætera. But thou, man of God, fle these thingis; but sue thou ryztwisnesse, pitee, feith, charite, pacience, myldenes.* This processe lettith not the seid gouernaunce of endewing. Forwhi, if this processe schulde so streitli be vndirstonde, that a bischop schulde not haue more than mete and drinke, hous and clooth, certis thanne it muste be seid that Poul wolde no bischop haue eny stoor of bokis, neither money forto bie or lete make therwith eny bokis, which is azens Poulis owne meenyng, ij^e. Thimothie, iiij^e.¹ c̃. toward the eende. And also a bischop schulde not haue an hors forto on him ride, (if the bischop were oold or sike,) neither a staffe forto go by in his eelde for sijkenes. Wherefore bi "foode and couering" Poul vnderstondith al that is necessarie into good cure

The fourth text (1 Tim. vi.) considered, where Paul declares godliness with sufficiency to be great gain; and that we should be content with food and raiment. 'Food and raiment' here mean competency, and so exclude not fixed endowment.

¹ iij^e. MS.

CHAP. V.

keping and mynystring, euen as ofte tymes in Holi Scripture¹ bi "breed" is vndirstonde al maner of foode. And if this be trewe, certis sithen the hauour and possessioun of immouable godis helpith and fortherith a bischop into the bettir bering and vsing his cure vpon hise vndirlingis, (as schal be schewid aftirward,) it folewith that vnder these ij. thingis schortli expressid of Poul here to Bischop Tymothie, "foode and coueryng," is conteyned possessioun of vnmouable godis, in the maner and mesure and vce as thei helpen the bischop forto make the better cure vpon hise vndirlingis. Also it is to be markid weel that Poul seith: *A greet wynnyng is pitee with sufficiencye.* Lo, how Poul allowith weel al that makith a sufficiencye into eny purpos or effect which muste be doon; and sithen into sum degre of good cure bering availith moche plente of vnmouable ricchessis had and receyued withoute labour of it wynnyng and geting, it folewith that it stondith weel with the proces of Poul in this present processe, that bischopis haue endewing of vnmouable possessiouns.

The perils of poverty at least as great as those of riches; as appears by the history of the Apostolic age.

Ferthermore, whanne Poul seith thus: *Thei that wolen be maad riche fallen into temptacioun, and into snare of the feend, et cetera*; it is to be vnderstonde that not oon but dyuers it is forto seche and wille be maad riche bi² wynnyng of tho ricchessis thoruz craftis or marchaundisis or other meenys of bisynessis, and dyuers it is forto receyue ricchessis mouable or vnmouable redy whanne thei ben profrid. Certis, thouz the firste maner may not be doon withoute the perels which Seint Poul spekith of here, the ije. maner may weel ynouz be doon withoute such perels. *3*he, perauenture more perel schal befall³ in ouer greet pouerte than in ouer grete ricchessis so freli profrid and receyued; but if it be in a fewe persoones indisposid forto entirmete with ricchessis, whiche ouzte forbere for the while the prelatie, into which suche

¹ See Deut. viii. 3.; Matth. iv. 4.

² *mad bi*, MS. (first hand).

³ *be falle*, MS.

ricchessis ben zouun, rather than appeire hem silf in receyuyng tho ricchessis, or apperre her successouris aftir hem in removing away tho richessis; sithen not alle men ben in lijk maner thoruz out disposid naturali and gracioseli. Forwhi, ij°. Tessal. iij°. c. and ij°. Cor. xj°. c., mensioun is mad, that in Poulis daies, bi cause endewing was not maad to prechouris other than it wher of Poul spekith i°. Cor. iij°.¹ c., therfore prechers zauen hem to flaterie and to plesaunce forto the more likingli fille her wombis and her pursis so myche and so thikke, that for to putte hem away out of the peplis fauour Seint Poul suffrid labour and payne in this, that he laborid for his owne lijfode and for the lijfode of hise mynystris, not withstonding that he myzte bi riȝt haue askid his lijfode and fynding of hem to whom he prechid. And therfore bi experience sufficientli take in tho daies greet pouerte and lak of stable endewing and forto stonde to deuocioun of the peple in zeuing and offring, (with mannys natural frelnes to suffre payne of bodi, whanne he schal lacke hise necessarie esis,) is as perillous or more perillous in prelatis than is habundaunce of ricchessis (mouable or vnmouable) freli profrid and withoute greet seching in the prelatis sides receyued.

To which now seid sentence sowneth it what Salamon writith, Prouerb. xxx°. c. toward the bigynnyng, whanne he preied to God thus: *I preied to thee twey thingis, denye thou not to me bifore that y die. Make thou fer fro me vanite and wordis of leeing; zeue thou not to me begrie and ricchessis; zeue thou oonli necessities to mi lijfode; lest perauenture y be fillid, and be drawe to denye and seie, Who is the Lord? and lest y compellid bi nedynes stele, and forswere the name of my God.* Lo, how that, thouȝ Salamon sauȝe perel in ricchessis and perel in beggerie, zit he

СНАР. V.

Confirmation of
this from the
prayer of Solo-
mon.

¹Probably we should read ix°. See 1 Cor. ix. 3-14.

CHAP. V.

expressith the gretter perel of synne to come bi begrie than to come bi ricchessis. And if herto be cast that noon persoon, noon comounte can be endewed into his oonli suffiience and forto abide in thilk suffiience thoruz manye ȝeeris in successioun, but if the endewing be mad in the bigynnyng forto be ouer the suffiience as for thanne being, (as her of is miche experience had in Englonde, Fraunce, and othere londis, and cause her of is this, that euer more the world decrecith in peple,) the seid sentence wole seme the trewer.

The fifth text (8 Tim. ii.) considered, where Paul tells Timothy that no soldier of God entangles himself with cares of this life. This place rather proves that the maintenance of the clergy should be so ample, that they need not be anxious about every little sum they spend.

The v^e. principal processe of the Newe Testament is writun to Thimothie Bischop, ij^o. Thimothie ij^o. c., where Poul seith to him thus: *Noman holding knyght-hode to God wlappe him self with wordli nedis, that he plesse to him to whom he hath preued him self. For he that fizteth in a bateil schal not be crowned, but if he fizte lawfulli.* Certis this processe dooth not azens the seid gouernaunce; forwhi grete lordis han lasse nede forto wlappe hem self in worldli nedis aboute her londis than lasse lordis han, for as miche as greet lordis mowe avorthi to haue and fynde with her costis officers vndir hem forto attende sufficientli to alle the wordly nedis of her londis, and ȝit thei mowe haue ynouȝ bisidis. In so miche that experience hath ȝouun bfore these daies, that grete lordis and ladies being worthi householders and ful grete forȝeuers of dettis to her tenauntis, ȝhe, and gretter and habundanter forȝeuers than othere, couthen¹ not rekene a summe into an hundrid schilingis; and han had her londis and householdis in best maner reulid bi othere officers weal thryuyng vndir hem; and the lordis han had therbi ful riche and preciose leisers forto haue serued God in hizer and deuouter weies, if thei wolden; and in lijk maner it myȝte fare with

¹ *couth*, MS. (first hand).

bischopis and louzer persoonen of the chirche richeli endewid, 3he, and bi such greet riche endewing thei schulen haue lasse thouzt and lasse kark and clayng lest her godis be lost and spilled, than thei schulden haue if thei were not endewid ouer what were to hem conli sufficient. Forwhi thei mowe wite weel and wolen considere weel that thouz thei lese miche, zit thei schulen haue ynou3 bisidis into her nede and into her sufficiencie; and therfore, thouz thei ouzten not be ouer myche recheles in lesing her godis, zit thei mowe at sumtyme ful vertuouseli and wijaly lete sum passe into lost, lest that better attendaunce to goostli deedis be therbi lost. And perauenture this cause moued deuoute temperal lordis in the cold daies forto so richeli endewe bischopis and othere statis of the chirche; and therfore noman may argue and proue that, as bi strengthe of her riche endewing, that¹ the statis of the chirche ouzten or schulden be lad into wors plijte than thei schulde be, if thei were porelier endewid; or if thei were not endewid with immouable godis at al. Wold God the bischop writer of this book hadde so sure knowing of his saluacioun as he hath experience vpon the trouthe of this now of him affermed sentence.

The vj^e. processe of Holi Scripture in the Newe Testament, which myzte seeme meete azens the seid endewing of prelatis in the preesthode, is writun Math. v. 8. thus: *If thi rizt ize sclauendre thee, pulle him out and caste fro thee; for it spedith to thee that oon of thi membris perische, than that al thi bodi go into helle: and if thi rizt hond sclauendre thee, kutte him away and caste fro thee; for it spedith to thee that oon of thi membris perische, than that al thi bodi go into helle.* Lijk processe with

The sixth text (Math. v.) considered, where Christ counsels us to cut off the right hand, if it offend us. This should dissuade those from riches who are naturally prone to trust in them, but not those who make a good use of them. They are instruments both of vice and virtue.

¹ The repetition of that is needless and awkward, and seems at first sight to be a mere clerical error; yet the very same redundancy occurs in the third sentence of the following paragraph.

CHAP. V.

more ther of is write Math. xviii^o. ̄. and Mark ix^o. ̄. Certis of this proces folewith not that, if myn ize or myn hond sclandre me not, that y schal caste him away fro me. And ther fore bi this processe folewith not that tho persoones, whiche han natural disposicioun and grace forto weel vse and dispose ricchessis, (and for to not ouer miche truste vpon hem, and not ouer miche loue hem, and not ouer miche be thouztful and troublid aboute hem,) ouzten forsake hem and not receyue hem, if thei be to hem profrid. And if eny man be in contrarie wise vndisposid vnscapabili, lete him abstene and forbere that he come not into prelacie endewid; and not that for his vndisposicioun he schulde prouoke, procure, and make that manye hundridis of hise successouris schulden lacke the greet help and fortheraunce into gode deedis, whiche thei myzten haue bi riche endewing. For the philosophir feelid bettir than so, seiying that ricchessis ben instrumentis of vertu, thouz in indisposid persoones bi her vndisposicioun oonli thei ben instrumentis and occasions of viciis.¹

It is now proved that no doctrinal text of the New Testament forbids the temporal endowment of the clergy.

Thus miche, fro the bigynnyng of the iij^o. chapter hidir to, is ynouz forto schewe that Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament in his parti, which is of the ij^o. there seid sort, (that is to seie, which is pure doctrinal,) lettith not the endewing of preestis bi immovable possessiouns. For if it be weel answerid to these vj. now bifore going processis of doctrinal Scripture, sownyng sumwhat azens the seid endewing, (as it is now bifore at ful² to hem answerid,) certis ful

¹ Pecoek without doubt has Aristotle in his eye. The following passage from the *Ethics*, among others more or less similar, will elucidate his allusion: "ὅτι δὲ ἐστὶ χρεῖα τις, ἔστι τοῖς τοῖς χρῆσθαι καὶ εὖ καὶ κακῶς· ὁ πλοῦτος δὲ ἐστὶ τῶν

χρησίων· ἐκαστὸν δ' ἄριστα χρῆται ὁ ἔχων τὴν περὶ ἕκαστον ἀρετὴν καὶ πλοῦτος δὲ χρῆσεται ἄριστα ὁ ἔχων τὴν περὶ τὰ χρήματα ἀρετὴν." *Eth. Nic.*, lib. iv. c. i.

² the ful, MS. (first hand).

esy and lizt it schal be therbi forto answeere to alle othere doctrinal textis and processis of Holi Scripture in the Newe Testament, if eny of hem be sownyng azens the seid endewing.

CHAP. V.

vj. CHAPITER.

THAT no parti of Holi Scripture in the Newe Testament being of the iij°. there seid soort that is seid, being historial ensaumplal, lettith the seid endewing of preestis, is now to be proued thus: If eny ensaumpling schulde lette the seid endewing, it schulde be the ensaumpling of Crist or of sum Apostle or of the multitude of Cristen men, of which it is rad, Acts ij°. c. in the eende, thus: *Alle that bileueden weren to gidere and hadden alle thingis comoun; thei seelden possessiouns¹ and catel, and departiden tho thingis to alle men, as it was nede to ech;* and Acts iiij°. c. in the eende thus: *How manye euere weren possessouris of feeldis either of housis, thei soolden and brouzten the pricis of tho thingis that thei selden, and leiden bfore the feet of the Apostlis; and it was departid to ech, as it was nede to ech:* or ellis it schulde be the ensaumpling of hem of which Poul spekith, Hebr. xj°. c., that *thei wenten aboute in brocke skynnes and in skynnes of geet, nedi, angwischid, turmentid; to whiche the world was not worthi.* But so it is, that noon of these ensaumplingis it lettith. Wherefore noon ensaumpling in Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament it lettith.

That the ensaumpling of Crist lettith it not, lo, y proue thus: Thouz alle Cristen men ben bounde forto

NO HISTORICAL EXAMPLE RECORDED IN THE NEW TESTAMENT FORBIDS THE ENDOWMENT OF THE CLERGY. Certain texts considered.

The example of Christ considered. No text.

¹ *possessiouns*, MS. (first hand). | version, from which this citation is made.
The plural occurs in Wiclif's (later) |

CHAP. VI.

clearly shews whether the example of his poverty was left to us under counsel or under command. Consequently we must have recourse to the judgment of the reason to determine this point.

folewe summe ensaumplingis of Crist and in sum maner for this that it is writun Iohun xiiij°. ē., *I have ȝouun an ensauple to ȝou, that ȝe do as y have doon*; and for this¹ that is writun i°. Iohun ij°. ē., *He that dwellith in him* (that is to seie in Crist) *he owith for to walke as he walkid*; and so of othere textis ther to alleggid in the book clepid *The iust apprising of Holi Scripture*, the first parti, the² chapter: and thouȝ herwith it is writun ij°. Cor. viij°. ē. that *whanne Crist was riche, he was maad for us poor, that we bi his pouerte schulden be riche*: ȝhe, and thouȝ it be writun, Luk ix°. ē. in the eende, that Crist was so poor, (namelich fro the hauyng of vn-movable godis,) that *he hadde not an hous into which he myȝte bowe his heed*: ȝit it is not cleer, open, and certeyn bi these textis now alleggid neither bi eny othere textis in Scripture, whether Crist ensaumplid his now seid so greet pouerte to alle Cristene or to preestis vnder comaundement or vnder counseil oonli. And if he ensaumplid it vnder counseil oonli and not vnder comaundement, no man to whom it is so counseilid and profrid is bounde forto take it³ and performe it, as ech man may soone wite. And therfore sithen no thing lettith but that Crist myȝte haue ensaumplid it vnder counseil oonli and [not] vnder comaundement, as ech man muste needis graunte, we musten haue sum other thing than is Holi Scripture forto iuge whether Crist in this now seid ensaumpling ensaumplid to us vnder counseil and profre and pro-uoking oonly, as he ensaumplid chastite to alle Cristen that myȝten take it, Math. xix°. ē.: or ellis that he ensaumplid this seid pouerte to preestis or to hem

¹ this is interlineated by a later (?) hand, which has also inserted so after for, just below.

² A space left in the MS. for the number.

³ it is interlineated by a later hand.

and to othere men vndir comaundement. And thanne ferther, sithen no thing ellis out and bisidis Holi Scripture can be founde a sure iuge forto this iuge, but if it be mannys weel disposid natural resoun or ellis sum sure special reuelacioun mad fro God out and bisidis Holi Scripture of the Bible; it folewith needis, that we ouzten not take this now seid ensaumpling of Crist as doon to vs vndir comaundement, but if cleer weel disposid natural resoun it deme to be ȝouun to us vndir comaundement. But so it is, that no cleer natural weel disposid resoun wole deeme that Crist ensaumplid the now seid greet pouerte vndir comaundement to eny persoon. Wherfore no persoon (preest ne other) is boundun for to it take and fulfille.

That no cleer resoun wole deme the seid ensaumpling to be haue doon vndir comaundement, y proue thus: No cleer resoun can deeme that Crist ensaumplid thilk greet pouerte vndir comaundement, but if the same cleer resoun can deeme that thilk same greet pouerte is a comaundement, thouȝ Crist hadde it not ensaumplid. Forwhi bi this that Crist dide and vsid and ensaumplid thilk pouerte, resoun can take noon evidence that ther yn Crist comaundid it; sithen thanne bi lijk skile ech deede, which Crist dide and ensaumplid, he ensaumplid vndir comaundement, and he ther yn and therbi it comaundid; which is not trewe: for as miche as he him silf witnessith, Math. xix. ̄. ̄., that oonli vndir counseil he profrid chastite to alle men that myȝten it take; and also resoun deemeth sufficientli ynouȝ, that no thing may lette him that is God for to ensauple vndir comaundement or vndir counseil at his fre liberte what euer good dede him lustith to ensauple. Wherfor this is needis trewe, that resoun can not and mai not deeme that thilk seid greet pouerte was ensaumplid by Crist vndir comaundement, but if resoun can deeme that thilk same pouerte was and is a comaundement of

Reason does not prove such example to be under commandment. For if poverty be under commandment, the commandment is independent of Christ's example; otherwise every example of Christ's life, as perpetual cell-bacy, would be an example of commandment. But no assignable reason can be given why poverty should be commanded to all Christians.

CHAP. VI. God and schulde so haue be, thouȝ Crist hadde not it ensaumplid. And thanne ferther therwith thus: And so it is, that neither bi eny sufficient¹ eydence of lawe of kinde, (as soone aftir schal be proued in the next chapter folewing,) neither bi eny sufficient eydence of Holi Scripture or of other special and peculiar sure weel tried reuelacioun, neither bi eny other wey assignable, cleer and weel disposid resoun can deme and iuge that this seid pouerte was and is and hadde be a comandement to alle Cristene or to preestis oonli, if Crist hadde not it ensaumplid. Wherefore no cleer and weel disposid resoun ouȝte deeme it to be a comaundement to alle Cristene or to preestis for this that Crist it ensaumplid.

Every argument of reason, or Scripture, or pretended revelation to prove that poverty is commanded to priests or laymen may readily enough be answered. And so the example of Christ's poverty no way hinders priests from having temporal possessions.

What euer skile of resoun can be mad that the seid pouerte is and hadde be a comaundement to preestis or lay men, thouȝ Crist had not it ensaumplid, riȝt weel may to it be mad cleer answer; what euer text of Holi Scripture therto sowne, (other than thei to whom bifore in this iij^e. partie answer is mad,) riȝt soone and eaili mai to it be mad sufficient answer: and what euer extrauagaunt reuelacioun be pretendid to be had therto, riȝt soone and liztli may be schewid that thilk reuelacioun is not autentik and at fulle² tried, that he be for a sure and stable trouthe approued. And thus it may be seen, that the ensaumpling of Cristis greet pouerte in abstenyng fro temperal vnmovable possessiouns lettith not preestis forto hem take, receyue, holde, and weel demene into gode vsis.

Further, even if Christ's example of poverty had been binding on all priests, the circumstances under which it

And ferther, forto seie more in this mater of Cristis ensaumpling, thouȝ it were so that Crist ensaumplid vndir comaundement his seid pouerte to alle preestis; ȝit ech preest, which schulde folewe thilk

¹ So the MS., but perhaps only by a clerical error.

² *the fulle*, MS. (first hand).

ensaumpling thoruz the al fulnes and likenes of it, CHAP. VI.
 muste se bifore whiche ben the circumstauncis vndir was given must
 whiche or with which or bi which Crist so ensamplid be now as they
 the seid pouerte to preestis, and withoute which he were then, in
 wolde not so haue ensaumplid it to preestis; so that order that it may
 if eny of tho circumstauncis hadden not be had of be still binding
 Crist, he wolde not haue ensamplid it to preestis. on them. But
 And eer that these circumstauncis be knowe whiche the times are
 thei ben, and eer than the preest (which wolde folewe changed, since
 ther yn Crist) knowe that tho same circumstauncis the dayes of Christ
 ben in him lijk myche as thei were in Crist, ellis he and his Apostles,
 ouzte not folewe Crist in the same euen miche so that their
 pouerte neither bi comaundement neither bi counseil, example of
 more than now eny preest ouzte folewe in euen like- poverty is not
 nes the crucifyng of Crist or the fasting of Crist as binding on us
 comaundement or as counseil; and that bi cause he now.
 knowith not him silf to be vndir thilk state, con-
 diciouns, and circumstauncis vnder whiche Crist was,
 and for whiche and bi whiche Crist wolde be so
 crucified. Forwhi ellis this preest toke upon him a
 deede, which were not morali vertuose to him; bi
 cause thilk deede hath not with him hise circum-
 stauncis, whiche ben to him dewe in doom of resoun.
 Therefore thilk deede of the preest of in-folewing Crist
 in the seid pouerte and also in the seid crucifyng
 were to this preest viciose; and zit Petir writith in
 his i^a. Epistle, the ij^a. chapitre, to alle Cristen thus:
Crist suffride for us, leving to zou an ensaumple,
that ze folewe the stappis of him. And sithen it is
 so, that preestis in these daies, (thouz thei be prelatis,
 prechers, and successouris to the Apostlis and to
 Crist,) ben not in lijk state, condicioun, plite, and
 circumstauncis, neither in lijk neede in which Crist
 and hise Apostlis weren¹ forto forbere and forsake

¹ were, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. VI.

vnmovable possessiouns, (as it is touchid and schewid resonabili weel bifore in this thridde partie the iiij^e. chapter, and as more ther of is schewid in *The book of counseilis*;) therefore it is not comaundement neither counseil to eny preest in these daies forto folowe Crist in his so greet seid pouerte, neither to folewe the Apostlis in her lijck so greet pouerte: namelich as bi and for strengthe of her ensaumpling; bi cause tho circumstauncis, for which thei so ensampliden, ben not now had in us. Neuertheles, if for eny other special cause and circumstaunce now had in eny preest, (as peraventure for experience had upon his freelte forto ouer miche loue ricches,) he wole take to him sum greet pouerte, as maundement of lawe of kinde, or as counseil of lawe of kinde, it is vertuose ynouz to him; thouz it be not vertuose to an other, which is not naturali so gleymed with loue to ricchessis. And this abstenyng, which this freel man makith, is good and vertuose morali bi groundis of the lawe¹ of kinde and bi his reulis.

More discussion on the binding force of the example of Christ and his Apostles to be found in Pecock's *Just apprising of Holy Scripture*; from which it will appear that the example of his poverty applies to all priests neither by way of counsel nor of command.

Who euer wole se more how the ensaumpling of Crist and of hise Apostlis biholden preestis and alle Cristene, he mai fynde fair teching ther of in the book clepid *The iust apprising of Holi Scripture*, in ther of the firste partie, the ^e chapter. And bi what is seid here and ther upon the ensaumpling of Crist and the ensaumpling of hise Apostlis, (for oon reule is of her alle ensaumplingis,) mai liztli to ech witti man be seen, that neither the ensaumpling of Crist him silf neither the ensaumpling of hise Apostlis (in the seid greet pouerte of abstenyng fro all im-movable possessiouns) was ensaumpling bi wey of maundement forto hem ther yn folewe, neither bi wei of counseil to alle preestis: sithen not lijck circum-

¹ of lawe, MS. (first hand).

² A space left in the MS. for the number.

stauncis longing to the taking of thilk pouerte ben in alle preestis now, whiche weren thanne in hem. CHAP. VI.

Noman may kunnyngli allegge this, that Crist forsoke forto be chose king, whanne the peple wolde haue chose and mad him king upon hem, as that ther yn Crist ȝaue an ensauple to preestis or to eny other persoon forto not receyue eny temperal possessions or eny temperal dignite. Forwhi, as mai be take out of dyuerse placis of the Newe Testament, thilk peple were (as for thilk tyme) leefulli vnder the Emperour of Rome, bi her owne graunt and couenant mad betwixe hem and the Emperour of Rome; and therfore iustli and rȳtli thei were sugettis to the Emperour of Rome; and he was her hȳest king and emperour; and he made Heroud king vnder him forto regne upon the same peple of Iewis; and bisidis this, Pilat also bare an office there vnder the Emperour of Rome. And so thilk peple myȝte not iustli (as for thanne) haue chose Iesus or eny other persoon forto be her king; for thanne in that thei hadden be traitouris to the Emperour and to Heroude, and thei hadden do wrong to him aȝens doom of resoun: which doom of resoun Crist him silf allowid; for he seide, (Math. xxij. ̃., Mark xij.¹ ̃., and Luk xx. ̃.,) *Ȝelde ȝe to Cesar tho thingis that ben of Cesar, and to God tho thingis that ben of God.* And so, if Crist wolde haue consentid to the peple willing forto chese him her king, he had in that consentid to her wrongful doing. And therfore al the ensaumpling which Crist schewid, as in that, was no more than this: that ech man schulde fle, that he consente not to eny wrongful aleccioun or chesing mad vpon him. And this ensaumpling is fer fro the ensaumpling that no preest schulde haue eny vnmouable possessioun.

Christ's refusal to be made a king supplies no example to priests or anyone else not to accept temporal possessions or dignity. If Christ had consented to the people, he would have sanctioned treason, as they were the lawful subjects of the Emperor of Rome at that time.

¹ xv^o., MS.

vij. CHAPTER.

The example of the infant church of Jerusalem considered, which had all things common. Their example was under counsel only, and applied to the laity just as much as to the clergy. It applies not to the clergy now, unless they are in the same circumstances that they were then; as they are not.

THE ensaumpling of the pouerte chosun bi hem, of whom it is writen Acts ij°. c. in the eende and Acts iiij°. c. in the eende, was an ensaumpling of counseil and not of comaundement; and it was doon bi the multitude of the lay peple, as weel as of clerkis; and therefore her deede ensaumplith to lay peple now being, as weel as to clerkia. And so open it is, that if thilk ensaumpling schulde be comaundement to hem to whom it was ensaumplid, thanne comaundement were that alle lay folkis schulden¹ lyue in the same pouerte in which thei lyueden, and and no layman vndir payne of dampnable synne schulde haue eny good in propre lordschip, and that whether thilk good were movable or vnmouable. And therefore thilk ensaumpling was vndir counseil oonli; and to al the lay peple, as weel as to clerkis; and so thilk ensaumpling gooth no thing forto weerne bi maundement the seid endewing of preestis; neither bi counceil, but if the preestis were now in lijk caas and condicioun and alle circumstancis, in whiche thei at thilk tyme and in thilk place weren.*

To prove this more distinctly, it is to be observed that the first Christians of Jerusalem lived in poverty either by God's command or by their own choice.

For the more cleering that the ensaumpling of thilk Cristen multitude in the tyme of the Apostlis at Ierusalem, of which multitude it is spokun bifore in the bigynnyng of the vj°. chapter, makith no boond or comaundement that preestis or clerkis of the newe lawe lyue withoute endewing of vnmovable possessions, y procede thus: Thilk seid Cristen multitude lyuede thanne so in her pouerte as bi comaundement

¹ schulde, MS. (first hand).

* wer, MS. (first hand) apparently.

of Goddis lawe therto hem comaunding and binding, or ellis thei lyueden thanne so in her pouerte bi her fre wil forto so lyue or not so lyue. CHAP. VII.

If thou seie that thei lyueden so, for that Goddis lawe therto hem bonde bi comaundement, and ^{zit} thei weren¹ lay persooones; thanne, sithen oon and the same was and is the lawe of God to hem and alle othere lay men and wommen, it folewith that alle othere lay men of Corinthe, of Philippis, of Thessalonie, and of ech citee and cuntre, whom Poul had conuertid, were bounden aftir her conuersioun forto lyue in lijk pouerte, as weel as the seid Cristen multitude in Ierusalem lyued. Which openli is vntrewe. Forwhi Poul suffride alle hem whiche he conuertid forto haue alle her godis aftir her conuersioun, whiche thei hadden bifore her conuersioun; and he askid of hem, that thei schulden of her ricchessis and of her habundaunce in godis sende sum almes to poor men in Ierusalem, as it is open ofte in hise epistlis. Wherefore vntrewe it is, that the seid Cristen multitude in Ierusalem lyueden in her seid pouerte bi comaundement of Goddis lawe.

And azenward, if thou wolde seie that thei so lyueden bi fre wil forto so lyue or not so lyue without comaundement of Goddis lawe; thanne folewith ther of, that to the same or lijk maner of lyuyng noon othere Cristen men weren thanne or ben now bounde; no more than thei weren thanne to thilk poor maner of lyuyng bounde. And so the seid ensaumpling of thilk Cristen multitude in Ierusalem bindith no man.

Also thilk multitude weren lay persooones. Wherefore if her gouernaunce in lyuyng poorli schulde binde bi ensaumpling, it schulde binde lay men and lay

If they lived in poverty by command of the Divine law, the Christians of other places must have been equally bound so to live, as it is plain that they were not, from the Epistles of St. Paul.

But if they lived so by free choice only, then no Christians now are any more bound so to live, than they were then.

Also they were laymen, so that their example would bind laymen, if it bound at all; which has

¹ were, MS. (first hand), and so below, p. 318. l. 1.

CHAP. VII.

been proved to be false.

Moreover the persecutions at Jerusalem, and consequent dispersions of the Christians, forbade them to have any store of wealth or immovable possessions; and it would have been folly in them to have attempted it. But it follows not that is folly now in peaceful times so to do. So that their example binds no man at all, and counsels no man who lives not in the same state of persecution as they did.

wommen, as thei weren. Which is now bifore proued to be untrewē.

Also anon after that thilk seid Cristen multitude biganne in Ierusalem, so greet persecucioun was maad vpon hem and upon the dekenes and the Apostilis, that alle the Cristen persoones whiche weren in Ierusalem fledden out of Ierusalem, and weren disperclid abroad into othere dyuerse coostis and cuntrees, excepte oonli the Apostilis; as herof open storie is had, Acts viij. c. in the bigynnyng. And sithen this or such othere lijk persecucioun thilk multitude awaitid and abode after forto to hem and upon hem come, and lijk troubelose tyme was in Ierusalem al the while Peter and Poul lyueden; it muste nedis ligge in open doom of resoun that folie hadde be to al thilk Cristen multitude, (thoruz al such tyme lyuyng in Ierusalem,) forto haue storid and tresourid to hem eny grete possessiouns to be holde of hem in lordschip, and to be take to othere into ferme, and forto receyue ther of rent; bisidis the oonli housis and gardeyns, whiche weren necessarie for hem silf and her meyne forto in hem dwelle bi daies and nyztis. And therefore, thouz it hadde be folie to hem forto so kepe with hem gretter possessiouns than tho now seid, and that for the circumstaunce of thilk thanne being troubelose and perilose tyme; zit ther of folewith not bi ensaumpling¹ therof, that it schulde be folie or that it was folie to othere Cristen multitudis, (dwelling in othere cuntrees out of so troubelose persecuciouns,) forto holde gretter possessiouns than tho in which thei in her owne persoones with her children and necessarie meyne dwellen or dwelliden. And so the ensaumpling of the seide Cristen multitude in Ierusalem bindith noon other Cristen into lijk maner of poor lyuyng; neither

¹ bi eny ensaumpling, MS. (first hand).

counsellith eny other Cristen into lijk maner of lyuyng, whiche othere Cristen be not in lijk circumstance of perilose persecucioun, in which the seid Cristen multitude in Ierusalem thanne in the tyme of Apostlis weren. CHAP. VII.

Ferthermore, tho persooones of whiche Poul spekith, Hebr. xj. ð., (and of which the processe is alleggid bifore in the vj. chapiter of this present iij. partie,) were religiouse men, forsaking miche of worldlihode and of fleischlihode¹; as weren² the sones of Ionadab the sone of Recab, whiche "dranken no wijn, neither "bildiden housis, neither sewen sedis, neither plaun-
 "tiden vynes, neither hadden vynes, but dwelliden in "tabernacles thoruz alle her daies;"³ whom and whos conuersacion God comendith, Ieremye xxxv. ð., where he seith to hem thus: *For that ze obeieden to the comaundement of Ionadab zoure fader, and kepten alle hise comaundementis, and diden alle thingis whiche he comaundid to zou, a man of the generacioun of Ionadab sone of Recab schal not faile stonding in my sict in alle daies.* And sithen these men weren Iewis in the tyme of the old lawe, and weren lay men and not preestis neither dekenys of the lawe, it is open that her ensaumpling was no comaundement. Forwhi, if it hadde be comaundement, it schulde haue be comaundement to lay persooones, as thei hem silf were; and thanne it wolde folewe, that it hadde not be leeful eny Iew forto haue had eny vnmouable possessioun, which is pleinli azens Goddis owne allowance thoruz the v. bokis of Moyses, and in the book of Iosue in manye chapitris. And therfore needis the ensaumpling of thilk folk in al her abstinence, as weel fro myche fleischlihode as weel as fro myche

The persons named in Hebr. xi. were laymen and regulars, like the Rechabites: their example not binding even on the Jewish laity, as is evident from Leviticus, much less on Christian priests.

¹ *fleischli hode*, MS. (without hyphen, but with one a little below).

² *were*, MS. (first hand).

³ See Jerem. xxxv. 6, 7.

CHAP. VII.

worldlihode, was oonli vndir counseil; and ȝit to alle tho oonli whiche were nedid, or ellis weel disposid for-to lyue in thilk maner. And so thilk ensaumpling of tho persoones weerneth not the endewing of preestis in these daies doon and had bi vnmouable godis. And here y make an eende of Scripture storial ensaumpling, which is the iij°. soort of Scripture in the particioun of Scripture bifore sett in the iiij°. chapter.

The endewing of the clergy not forbidden by human law, but on the contrary fully sanctioned thereby.

That mannys lawe forbedith not and weerneth not the seid endewing nedith not to proue; for open it is ynouȝ to ech leerned man, that mannys lawe grauntith and meynnteneth suche endewingis at fulle. And therefore no more of this membre for to sette it in this book.

The writings of the Fathers are discordant in this matter, and of no greater authority than in so far as they agree with the laws of God, or man, or reason.

Writingis of Doctouris in greet plente and noumbre myȝten be brouȝt into witnessing of this present purpos, and greet multitude of her writingis myȝten be brouȝte sownyng into the contrarie¹; but for as miche as her feelingis and her writingis neither binden neither vnbinden in eny mater more or ferther or other wise than thei taken² out of lawe of kinde or of Holi Scripture or of mannys lawe, neither to hem it is to trowe ferther or more than thei kunne hem grounde in eny of these now spoken groundis or fundamentis, (as is proued in the book clepid *Iust apprising of Doctouris*;) therefore forto bringe forth here the writingis of Doctouris for this present purpos or azens it, y forbere. Ech of hem seide and wroot, as he trowid for the tyme to be trewe; thouȝ ful ofte thei seemen among hem to discorde, and ful ofte redili thei discorden. Thus miche, fro the bigynnyng of the iiij°. chapter in this present iij°. partie hidir to, is ynouȝ for proof of the firste principal conclu-

¹ into contrarie, MS. (first hand).

² Probably we should read *ben taken*.

sioun in his ij^e. partie, that Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament lettith not the iij^e. principal gouernaunce rehercid bfore in the firste chapter of this present iij^e. partie. CHAP. VII

viiij. CHAPITER.

THE ij^e. principal conclusioun is this: Doom of cleerli in kinde disposid resoun werneth not and lettith not the seid thridde principal gouernaunce sett in the bigynnyng of the firste chapter of this present iij^e. partie. That this conclusion is trewe y proue thus: If eny such now seid doom of resoun schulde weerne and lette the seid iij^e. principal gouernaunce, thilk doom of resoun schulde be oon of these domes now suyngli to be rehercid. But so it is, that noon of hem so weerneth and lettith; but ech of hem is as semyng colour oonli and not a very prouyng doom, as in processe suyng schal be schewid. Wherefore doom of cleerli disposid resoun in kinde weerneth not and lettith not the seid iij^e. principal gouernaunce.

The ij^e. premisse of this argument schal be proued bi long processe thus. The firste semyng colour in doom of resoun is this: Aftir the sentence of Crist, (Math. vij^e. c. and Luk vj^e. c.) *Such is the tre, which is the fruyt of the same tree;*¹ so that bi the fruyt of the tree the same tree is knowun, whether he be good or bad. But so it is, that the fruyt of the chirchis riche endewing is synne of pride, of glotenye, of symonye, and so forth of manye othere. Wherefore the tree of hem is nauzt, which is the seid riche endewing.

The ij^e. semyng [colour] is this: If riche endewing hadde be profitable to the clergie and to al the hool chirche of God, Crist him silf bi his owne persoon

THE SECOND PRINCIPAL CONCLUSION. Reason does not forbid the endowment of the clergy with temporal possessions. The only plausible arguments from reason against it shall be now stated and discussed.

The first argument against the second conclusion. Simony, pride, and other vices as naturally spring from the wealthy endowments of the church, as bad fruit from a bad tree. Consequently all such wealthy endowments are vicious.

The second argument. If such endowments had been profitable either to the

¹ This is not an exact quotation. See Matth. vii. 20; Luke vi. 44.

CHAP. VIII. hadde endewid richeli the clergie of the chirche in hise daies, and hadde bede that aftir his passing out of this lijf men schulden make suche endewingia. But Christ not so endewid his chirche in hise daies, neither bede the clergie aftir hise daies in this lijf forto be richeli endewid. Forwhi therof is no mensioun in al the Newe Testament. Wherefore such riche endewing of the clergie is not profitable to the clergie, neither to the other partie of the chirche.

The several parts of this argument proved. The first premiss alone requires any confirmation, which it receives from the consideration of Christ's exceeding love to the church.

The first premiss of this argument muste needis be grauntid, as it wolde seeme. Forwhi¹ Crist loued his chirche and the clergie therof more than eny creature of this world can loue the chirche and the clergie; and the proof of loue is execucioun of werk and of deede; it seemeth folewe, that sithen othere persoones for loue which thei hadden to the clergie endewiden the clergie, miche rather Crist for loue wolde haue endewid the clergie, or wolde haue mad special ordinaunce therfore bi deede, or at the leest bi word, if he hadde knowe that such riche endewing hadde be to his clergie necessarie or profitable. And so the firste premysse of this ij^o. argument semeth to be trewe. The ij^o. premysse of the argument is also openli trewe. Wherefore the conclusioun concludid bi tho ij. premysse in the same argument is also trewe.

The third argument. Church-writers testify to the fact that since the church became richer, it became more corrupt.

The iij^o. is this: Seint Ierom in writing the lijf of Malk the monk seith, that *sithen the chirche waxid in dignitees, he decrecid in vertues.*² And an other cronicler seith in sentence thus: *Eer the clergie of the*

¹ Perhaps *sithen* should be inserted.

² "Scribere disposui ab adventu Salvatoris usque ad noetram setatem, id est, ab apostolis usque ad nostri temporis fecem, quomodo et per quos Christi ecclesia

nata sit et adulta, persecutionibus creverit, et martyriis coronata sit; et postquam ad Christianos principes venerit, potentia quidem et divitiis major sed virtutibus minor facta sit." S. Hieron. *Vit. Malch. Mon.* (Op. tom. ii. p. 41. Ed. Vallars.)

chirche was endewid with vnmouable possessiouns the clerkis weren holi and deuoute and goostli, and bi enesamplung of so holi conuersacioun turneden miche of the world into trewe feith and vertuose conuersacioun; and thanne also the clerkis weren redi forto putte her lijfis for witnessing of trouthe and for the goostli helthe of her neizboris. And azenward astir in tyme that the clergie of the chirche was endewid with vnmovable godis, the clergie decrecid in holi lyuyn and in alle necessarie gouernauncis to the helthe of the chirche, which bi fore the seid endewing thei hadden; and viciis grewen into the clergie miche thickir than bifore, as pride, ambicioun, veir glorie, glotenie, leccherie, coueitise, and speciali symonie; and suche othere.¹ Wherefore it seemeth that thilk endewing was yuel doon.

The iiij^e. is this: It is fablid to be trewe, that whanne greet Constantyne the Emperour was baptisid of Siluester Pope, and hadde endewid Siluester Pope with greet plente of londis of the empire, a voice of an aungel was herd in the eir seiying thus: "In this dai venom is hildid into the chirche of God."

The fourth argument. When Constantine had largely endowed the church of Rome with his donation, the voice of an angel exclaimed that poison was infused that day into the church of God.

¹ The following passage of Nicolaus de Clamengiis (written about A.D. 1414) agrees substantially with this extract, yet it can hardly be the place intended to be quoted:—"Nemo est, ut opinor, qui non satis audierit et mente teneat quantum Christi ecclesiam ministri, viri utique probata virtute clarissimi omnique tempore lande merito celebrandi, terrenam opulentiam contempserint. . . . Ubi vero, ut fere assolet, paululum ex diuitiis rerumque secundarum affluentia luxus et insolentia in ecclesiam subiere, tepescere sensim cœpit religio, virtus hebes-

cere, solvi disciplina. . . . Sed ut pompis et luxui res subesset, avaritia crebrescere," &c. *De corrupt. Eccl. stat.* in Brown. *Fasc. Append.* pp. 555, 556. He goes on to enlarge on the "simonica pravitas" a little afterwards, see p. 559.

² "Anno III^o.XV. Constantinus baptizatur a Sancto Silvestro, et tunc ditavit ecclesiam Romanam libertatibus, prædiis, et possessionibus, et dedit sedem suam imperialem Sancto Petro et suis successoribus. Et illo tempore Diabolus in aere volando clamavit, *Hodie venenum ecclesie Dei infusum est.*" *Sprot. Chron.* p. 43. (Ed. Hearne.) "Nar-

CHAP. VIII.

The fifth argument. It is not seemly that bishops and abbots, who should be patrons of mercy, should hold courts and pass sentence of death. Consequently all endowments, to which such powers belong, are vicious.

Wherefore the seid endewing bi immovable godis to the clergie is vnvertuose and yuel.

The v^e. semyng skile is this: It is not semeli, honeste, conuenient, and according, that bischopis and abbotis (whiche schulden be grete sterers to the lay partie into deedis of pitee, and schulde be bridelis or refreynyng meenys to the lay parti fro deedis of cruelte and of vnpitee, and that bi deede in ensaumpling and bi word in preching, counceiling, and exorting) schulden do and vse deedis strecching and disposing and abling into the grettist vnpitee and grettist cruelnes that mai be; but so doon summe bischopis and abbotis bi sum of her temperal vnmouable endewing. Forwhi bi summe of her endewingis summe bischopis and abbotis han and holden courtis, in whiche iugementis ben zouun in her name, aucto-rite, and power into hangement and into deeth. And forto do, zeue, or assigne thilk deeth vsuali and customabili is oon of the grettist dedis of vnpitee and cruelnes that is, and disposith also into gretter vnpitee and cruelnes, and lettith a man forto haue and kepe with him pitee and mercifulnes. Wherefore at the leest, if not al riche vnmouable endewing, zit thilk maner of endewing is not to be mad to bischopis and abbotis.

It is no answer to this argument to say that the officers of the bishop exercise these powers for him. *Qui facit per alium facit per se.*

If eny man wole be aboute forto excuse the bischop or abbot fro the inconuenience which this argument is aboute forto bringe into him, and that bi this that he not iugith into deeth, but an other man

rant chronica quod in dotatione ecclesie, vox audita est in aere angelica tunc temporis, sic dicentis, *Hodie effusum est venenum in ecclesia sancta Dei.*" Wicl. Dial. lib. iv. c. 18. "The angel said full sothe, when the church was dowed, that this day is venym shed into the church." Id. *Of clerks pos-*

sess., MS. cited in Lewis' *Life of Wicl.* p. 122. See also *The vision of Piers Plowman*, v. 10,659, sqq. vol. 2. p. 325. (Wright's Ed.), where it is said, that—

"An aungel men herden
An heigh at Rome crye,
Dcs ecclesie this day
Hath ydronke venym."

vndir him and in his absence; certis this excuse is no¹ sufficient excuse. Forwhi what euer is doon in an othir mann's name, power, stide, and auctorite, (him it witing and not weerning) is doon of him; and he therof is the doer, as into this point, that he therbi be iust or vniust, riȝtful or vnriȝtful, preisable or dispreisable, doing honestli or doing vn honestli. And therefore if iugementis of deeth be doon in the seid courtis in name and auctorite of the bischop or abbot, al is oon (into the now rehercid effectis) as thouȝ tho bischopis or abbotis diden it in her owne persoones. For ellis Pilat hadde be excusable of Cristis deeth, bi cause he lefte him to the hondis of othere men doing amys in his name. Also ellis it schulde be seid that the king iugith no man into deeth, neither sleeth eny man, neither executith iugement of deeth; bi cause he so euermore dooth bi hise officers doing in his name: which is fals and vntrewe. For no iugement of deeth may come iustli saue fro him and bi him, for he is the mynystre of God ordeyned therto bi God, as Poul seith, Rom. xiiij. c. And therefore this afore sett answe is not worth.

For answe and assoiling to these semyng skilis and colouris, and first for answe to the first of hem y graunte weel that "such is the tree which is the "fruyt of the tree;" that is to seie, if the fruyt of a tree be badde, the tree is badde; and if the fruyt of a tree is good, the tree is good. Forwhi the tree is not oonli an occasioun of the fruyt, but he is the cause² of his fruyt making and wirching into the fruyt that it be brouȝt forth. But certis so is it not bitwixe ricchessis and the synnes whiche comen fro out and bi tho ricchessis. For tho ricchessis ben not causis of tho synnes, but ben oonli occasiouns of tho synnes; and that oonli to the freel and culpable wil

THE FIRST ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS ANSWERED. Sins do not spring from riches, as fruit does from a tree. Riches are only the occasions by which sins come, which spring from the culpable will of man.

¹ not, MS. (first hand).

| ² is cause, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. VIII.

of men, which is the verri cause wirching tho synnes. And therefore, bitwixe the hauyng, bi which a tree hath him silf anentis his fruyt, and the hauyng, bi which ricches hath him silf anentis the synnes comyng fro, out, and bi him,¹ is a greet dyuersite. Certis, if the synnes comyng forth fro and bi ricches weren causid of the ricches, and the ricches were cause of tho synnes and made tho synnes, as the tree makith the fruyt, the now first mad skile and argument schulde procede weel, and schulde proue sufficientli his entent. But sithen it is so, that ricchessis ben not causis of the vicis whiche comen fro and bi hem, but the freel wil of the man which vsith tho ricchessis is the making cause of tho synnes, and the ricches is not more than an occasioun of hem oonli, therfore the firste argument and skile is not worth. What difference is bitwixe a cause of a thing and an occasioun of the same thing schal be tauzt aftir in the iiij^o. parti of this present book the iij^o. chapitre, where more is seid perteynyng to this present answer.

If riches were the cause of sin, because sin comes by them, they would also be the cause of good, because good comes by them. But contrary effects can only proceed from a free agent.

That ricches is not cause of eny synne mai be proued thus: Thou canst not seie whi and wherfore ricches schulde be cause of synne, saue for that fro, out, and bi ricches synne cometh. Weel² thanne, y therto seie azen³ thus: Fro, out, and bi ricches comen ful manye and ful grete vertuose deedis, as ful grete and huge almesful and piteful deedis, summe perpetual, summe for a tyme to dure; wherfore thou ouztist graunte that ricches is cause of vertu and of good, as it is cause of synne and of yuel. And so ricches schulde in lijk and euen maner be⁴ cause of ij. contrarie effectis, which is not to be grauntid,

¹ bihim, MS.

² Weel is added (by a later hand?) in the margin.

³ azens, MS. (first hand).

⁴ bi, MS.

saue of a causer bi liberte and fredom, as is free wil; and such is not riches. Wherefore he is not cause of synne, but an occasioun of synne oonli. CHAP. VIII.

And thanne ferther: If this were to be holde trewe, that for this that riches is occasioun of al the synne which out, fro, and bi him cometh, riches were badde and ouzte not be had; but that the hauying of it were viciouse and vnleeful, and that for this that yuel cometh ther fro and ther bi:—certis thanne for lik skile, sithen fro and bi the greet riches in which the aungel Lucifer was sett and putt, came his synne and the synne of manie othere aungelis and her perpetuel dampnacioun, it wolde folewe that thilk riching of the aungel was vicioseli doon of God; and so God ther yn was viciouse. And sithen this folewith not, as ech man muste needis graunte, it folewith that ech man muste also lik weel graunte, that thouz out and fro and bi temperal riches (as out, fro, and bi an occasioun oonli) cometh myche synne and other yuel, therof folewith not neithir is concludid and proued the hauying of the same riches to be yuel.

Also thus: Other wise cometh not yuel and good out, fro, and bi richnessis which preestis and other men holden and vsen, than as out, fro, and bi her tungis comen forth bothe yuel spechis and gode spechis, preisingis to God and dispreisingis to God, profitable teching to the vnkunnyng and vnprofitable speche to the vnkunnyng, and so forth of manye miche necessarie deedis doable bi mennys tungis and of manye ful wickid and ful miche noiose deedis comyng forth bi mennys tungis. Forwhi tungis be not but the instrumentis of the fre wil, bi and with which the free wil of man wirchith sumwhile good sumwhile yuel; and so richnessis ben not but instrumentis of and to the fre¹ wil, bi which the free wil of the vsers

If riches ought not to be had, merely because sin comes by them, Lucifer ought not to have been endowed with riches by God.

Good and evil proceed from men's riches just as they do from their tongues; both being only the instruments of their free will: consequently the riches of priests and the tongues of priests are the instruments of much good and of much evil.

¹ to fre, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. VIII. wirschith in sumtyme good and in sumtyme yuel. And so bothe the tungis of preestis and ricchessis of preestis ben instrumentis and occasiouns of ful miche good and of ful miche yuel.

Yet neither their riches nor their tongues are to be destroyed; but the frailty of their will is to be reformed.

What schal therefore be doon to her tungis? Schulen thei be kutt of, for that thei ben founde occasions of yuel? Certis, nay; for thanne bi thilk kutting of schulde also ther with be kutt of alle the godis, whiche bi tho tungis mowe also be doon and had. Wherefore, bi lijk resoun and skile, neither ben ricchessis to be kutt away fro preestis, for that of the ricchessis cometh yuel; sithen in thilk kutting away schulden be kutt away alle the goodis, whiche schulden come and whiche mowen come bi vce of the same ricchessis. What thanne is to be doon anentis the vicis of the tunge? Certis the freelnes of the wil is to be kutt awei and to be leid aside with greet bateil, greet scole, and greet craft; and the tungis ben to be lete stonde stille. And if this be trewe, certis so bi lijk forme and for lijk skile auentis the vicis comyng forth among preestis bi her ricchessis, the freel wil is to be curid and to be leid aside, and the ricchessis ben to be holden¹; namelich for, thou; oon of hem vse tho ricchessis vicioseli, summe successouris to him schulen vse hem vertuoseli. And God forbode that the vice of this preest now lyuyng schulde hindre the vertues of gode men after him in tyme comyng!

Confirmation from St. Augustine.

To this same sentence ful weel accordith Seint Austyn in a long proces so cleerli, so sweeteli, and so resonabili, that noman may berke or bite therazens; which proces is writun in the iij^e. parti of hise sermons, the xxxij^e. sermoun, and is this in wordis now folewing. *Scripture preisith him which myȝte haue trespassid and not trespassid, which "wente not after*

¹ *holde*, MS. (first hand).

"gold," *Ecclesiastici xxxj. c.* The gold schulde go aftir thee, not thou aftir the gold. Sotheli no thing that is mad of God is yuel. Be not thou yuel, for forsothe the gold is good. Lo, y proue thus: Lets me putte gold bitwize a good man and an yuel man. Lete the yuel man take it; anoon poor and louze men ben oppressid, iugis ben corruptid, lawis ben peruertid, gouernauncis and policies ben disturblid. But whi is this? What is the verri cause of this? Certis, for that an yuel man toke the gold. Lete a good man take the gold; anoon poor men ben fed, nakid men ben clothid, oppressid men ben delyuered, prisoneris ben out brouzt. Lo hou grete godis comen of the gold which a good man takith; and how grete yuelis of the gold¹ which an yuel man takith. Wherto therfore ze at sumwhilis brouzt into wraththe seien, "O wolde "God thilk gold were not had"? Be thou not yuel; loue thou not the gold. If thou art yuel, thou goost aftir the gold; if thou art good, the goold goith aftir thee. What is this, that the gold goith after thee? Certis, thou ledist and art not led; for thou hast the possessioun and art not had in possessioun.² Thus seith Austin there. And ferthermore sumwhat aftir there Austyn seith thus: No thingis maken and

¹ of gold, MS. (first hand).

² "Ipsam laudavit Scriptura, Qui potuit transgredi, et non est transgressus; qui post aurum non abiit. (Eccli. xxxi. 8). Post te debet ire aurum, non tu post aurum. Nam bonum est aurum. Non enim aliquid mali creavit Deus. Tu noli esse malus; et bonum est aurum. Ecce aurum pono inter bonum hominem et malum. Tollat malus; inopes opprimuntur, iudices corumpuntur, leges pervertuntur, res humanæ perturbantur. Quare hoc? Quia aurum tulit malus. Tollat

bonus; pauperes pascuntur, nudi vestiuntur, oppressi liberantur, captivi redimuntur. Quanta bona de auro, quod habet bonus! quanta mala de auro, quod habet malus! Ut quid dicitis aliquando stomachati, *O si non esset ipsum aurum?* Tu noli amare aurum. Si malus es, is post aurum: si bonus es, it post te. Quid est, it post te? Tu ducis, non ducis; quia possides, non possideris." S. August. *Serm.* cccxi. c. 9. (Op. tom. v. pp. 873, 874. Ed. Benedict. Antv. 1700).

CHAP. VIII.

ben causis of gode maners and of gode vertues, saue gode loues. Lete not gold be take away fro mennys hauyng; but lete the gold abide and be had, that thou proue mennys hauyng. Whi? Lete mennys tungis be kutt away, for that bi hem summen blasphemem God; and where schulen we thanne haue preisers of God? What dooth a tunge, he that singith weel or spekith weel knowith weel; and a ful good instrument he is. Zeue thou a good wil to the good tunge, and thanne gode thingis ben spokun; men being in discord ben brouzt into accord, men discoumfortid ben coumfortid, leccherose men ben chid and blamed, wrathful men ben refreymed, God is preisid, Crist is commendid, the wil is heet and inflamyd into loue, but into godli loue not into manli loue, spiritual loue not fleischli loue. These goodis dooth the tunge, but whi and bi what wirching cause? For good is the wil which vsith the tunge. Zeue thou an yuel man to the tunge, and thanne schulen be blasphemers, chiders, chalengers, and [informers].¹ Alle these yuelis comen fro the tunge, for that the yuel man vsith the tunge. Be not therfore takun away thingis fro thingis, but be at and be sett to good vce to thingis.² Thus seith Austyn there.

¹ A space left vacant in the MS.

² "Non faciunt bonos mores, nisi boni amores. Tollatur aurum de rebus humanis; immo adsit aurum, ut probet res humanas. Præcudatur lingua humana propter Dei blasphematores, et unde erunt Dei laudatores? Quid tibi fecit lingua? Sit qui bene cantet, et bonum est organum. Da mentem bonam ad linguam: bona dicuntur, discordes concordantur, lugentes consolantur, luxuriosi corripuntur, iracundi refrenantur, Deus laudatur, Christus

commendatur, mens ad amorem inflammatur; sed diuinum, non humanum; spiritalem, non carnalem. Hæc bona facit lingua. Quare? Quia bona est mens quæ utitur lingua. Da malum hominem ad linguam: erunt blasphematores, litigatores, calumniatores, delatores. Omnia mala de lingua, quia malus est, qui utitur lingua. Non tolerantur res de rebus humanis: sint res et adsit usus rerum bonarum." S. August. u.s. c. 11.

Lete oonli good men and weel proued men in vertues be takun in to preesthode and into prelacie, wherynne ben riche possessiouns; and without dout miche more good schal come bi the hauyng of tho riche possessiouns, than schulde come if thei were not had. But alle the cause, whi yuel cometh fro and bi tho riche possessiouns had in prelacie, is for that vertuose men and weel proued men in leernyng and in lyuyng ben not chosun and takun into prelacies; but sumwhile children, sumwhile men wantounli brouzt up in court, sumwhile vnlearned men for her greet blood and her hiȝe birthe; ȝhe, into the dampnacioun of hem whiche so chesen and takun,¹ as it is ful miche to drede. Lete therfore this that is verry cause of the yuel be take away, and lete it abie which is gilty: lete not it be take away, which profrith him silf redi into good and of which schal come good, whanne it schal come into gode mennys hondis: lete not it abie which trespacith not. And thanne is² doon, what ouȝte here ynne be doon; and ellis it is doon, which ouȝte not be doon. And thus myche is ynouȝ for answeere to the i^o. semyng skile.

CHAP. VIII.
If biabops were learned and good men, no evil would arise from their wealth: but now children, vicious men of court, and ignorant men of high birth are often promoted.

ix. CHAPTER.

FOR answeere to the ij^o. semyng skile, the first premyssse is to be denied, which is this: "If riche endewing had be profitable to the clergie and to al the hool chirche of God, Crist him silf bi his owne persoon hadde endewid richeli the clergie of the chirche in hise daies," *et cætera*. Forwhi if this premyssse now denied were trewe, certis, bi lijck skile

THE SECOND ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS ANSWERED. If Christ's silence were an argument against the endowment of the clergy, it would be an argument against the appointment of deacons, which

¹ Probably a clerical error for taken.

² The six following words are added in the margin by a later hand.

CHAP. IX.

was made by the
Apostles and the
people.

Crist in his owne persoon hadde ordeyned dekenes to be in his clergie; sithen it was profitable dekenes to be in the clergie of his chirche, as it is open, Acts vj°. c. at the bigynnyng. And ȝit Crist bi him silf not so ordeyned, but the Apostlis and the peple to gidere hem chosen and ordeyneden, as it is open there, Acts vj°. c. And therefore the now rehersed firste premysse of the ij°. semyng skile is to be denyed.

Their argu-
ment falsely
implies that
Christ himself
ordained every-
thing necessary
to the clergy of
his church. But
he never or-
dained for them
or for any man
the necessities
of life made by
men's craft, but
only the matter
and wit necessary
for their pro-
duction. These
remarks applied
to the appoint-
ment of deacons
and endowing of
the clergy.

Also into this same purpos thus: The rehersed firste premisses myȝte not be trewe, but if he schulde meene and vndirstonde that Crist ouȝte and wolde haue ordeyned bi him silf and in his owne persoon al that is nedeful to his clergie of his chirche, as is open ynow. But this meenyng is vntrewe. Forwhi breed and wijn and ale and housing and clothing and manie othere thingis maad bi mennys craftis ben necessarie to be had in persoones of his clergie, and ȝit Crist in his owne persoon and bi him silf ordeyned not and ȝeueth not to eny man breed or wyin or gowne or hood or hous; but he ȝeueth bi him silf and in his persoon maters of which breed and wijn and housis and clothis ben to be mad, and therwith he ȝeueth to men hondis and feet and membris of the bodi and inward and outward sensityue wittis and resoun and wil and moving powers, bi whiche alle applied to gidere men mowen make breed, wijn, housis, and clothis. And in lijk maner Crist ȝaf to the Apostlis witt of resoun for to knowe that dekenhode was profitable to his clergie, and Crist ȝaf to hise Apostlis wil for to chese tho dekenes; and so in that Crist ȝaue to hem dekenes mediatli, that is to seie, bi meenis bifore ȝounun to the Apostlis. And if this be trewe, whi not in lijk maner, for lijk skile, it is to be seid, that Crist ȝaf mediatli, (that is to seie, bi meene ȝiftis to his clergie,) the endewing of immouable godis, which the clergie now hath: for as miche as Crist ȝaue to the clergie witt and wisdom forto knowe

thilk endewing be profitable to the clergie, and also wil forto aske and receyue the same endewing; thouz Crist 3aue not to his clergie thilk same endewing bi him silf immediatli, (that is to seie, withoute eny before 3ouun meenys,) ri3t euen as he 3aue dekenhode to his clergie mediatli, thouz he 3aue not the same dekenhode to his clergie immediatli? And so open it is herbi, that the firste premisses of the ij^e. semyng skile is to be denied.

CHAP. IX.

And whanne it is argued ferther, that thilk first premisses muste be trewe, for ellis God loued not so miche his clergie as men endewing his clergie loueden his clergie, certis this folewith not. Forwhi at sum while it mai so be, that the 3euer or benefeter forto 3eue mediatli, (that is to seie bi a meene to the receyuer,) schal be more profitable to the receyuer than schulde be, if the 3euer schulde 3eue the same 3ifte or benefet immediatli bi him silf to the same receyuer. Also at sumwhile it mai be so, that more good and more honeste or more preising and worschip schal come, (alle thingis considerid and biholdun,) to the 3euer, if the 3euer 3eue mediatly his 3ifte or benefete, than schulde come if he 3af the same 3ifte or benefet immediatli bi him silf. And so it mai be ful weel, that not for defaut of loue had to the receyuer, neither for the lasse loue as in that and for that born anentis the receyuer, the 3euer 3eueh his 3ifte or benefet to the receyuer, but for the more loue had and born bi the 3euer anentis the receyuer.

It is no argument to say that Christ's love to his ministers would be less than man's love, if he directly endowed them not and they did. A gift may be more profitable to the receiver, and more honourable to the giver, when made mediately and not immediately.

Also it mai be ful ofte, that for the more good to be doon al abouzte, (thouz not al to the receyuer,) it bisemeth and it is fitting,¹ and therfore it is to be doon, that the 3euer 3eue his 3ifte and benefet mediatli and not immediatli: and 3it this doing is not so

A gift made mediately may also be more conducive to the general good, than when made immediately to the receiver. From hence it

¹ sitting, MS.

CHAP. IX.
 may appear that
 Christ's love to
 his church may
 not be less but
 rather greater,
 because he has
 acted in this
 matter as he has
 done.

maad for the lasse loue to the receyuer, than schulde be if he ȝaf it immediatli. Wherefore sithen we ben sure that God loueth his chirche as his spouse, and dooth no thing to it for defaut of¹ loue, (and name-lich not for that he loueth his chirche lasse than eny man loueth it, as it is open Isaie xlix^e. ̄., where God seide to his oolde chirche thus; *Whethir a womman mai forȝete her ȝong child, that sche haue not merci on the sone of hir wombe? Thouȝ sche forȝetith, y schal not forȝete thes* :) it is to be feelid therof folewingli, that this doing of God bi which he dooth to his chirche hise ȝiftis, puruiauncis, and benefetis medi-atli is so maad of him for oon of the² ij. causis now rehercid, or for sum other lijk resonabili to be allowid cause, and therefore not for that he loueth his chirche lasse than eny creaturris louen or loueden or schulen loue it. And herbi it is to be feelid and seid, that in this wirching of Crist, bi which he wrouȝt medi-atli into the endewing of his clergie, was as greet or gretter schewyng of his loue toward his clergie, thanne was the schewing of loue which peple mad to his clergie bi that that thei wrouȝten immediatli into the same endewing. And this is answeere good ynouȝ at this tyme to the secunde semyng skile.

X. CHAPTER.

THE THIRD
 ARGUMENT OF
 THE LOLLARDS
 ANSWERED. St
 Jerome's opinion
 is not infallible.
 His assertion is
 probably untrue,
 and even if true
 does not prove
 the rich endow-

To the iij^e. semyng skile y answeere thus: I graunte that Ierom seide tho wordis, *Sithen the chirche wexid in dignitees or in possessiouns, he decrecid in vertues*: as thouȝ his meenyng had be this, "Euer and alwey sithen the chirche wexid in possessiouns, he decrecid in vertues." But what here of, thouȝ he

¹ of is interlineated by a later hand. | ² these, MS. (first hand).

so seide? Certis his tunge was not the key of heuen or of erthe, neither had power to make eny thing to be trewe or fals, or other wise to be than he couthe fynde bfore it to be trewe or fals in doom of resoun or in Holi Scripture. Whi therfore schulen we ouer miche weie and apprise his seiying? First y schal schewe ful likeli that hise wordis were not trewe; and thanne next y schal schewe vnsoilabili that, thouȝ tho wordis weren trewe, ȝit out of hem folewith not that the endewing of the clergie with riche possessions is yuel and vnleeful.

CHAP. X.
ments of the
clergy to be evil
and unlawful.

First that tho wordis weren not trewe, it semeth herbi. How euer kunnyng and weel learned preestis and prelatis a this¹ side of the Apostlis weren to gidere in² eny tyme in the clergie of³ the chirche bfore his endewing in riche possessions, so kunnyng and weel learned preestis and prelatis han ben to gidere sithen and aftir that the chirche was endewid bi vnmouable possessions; ȝhe, and myche kunnynger and better learned; and also therwith mo suche han be⁴ sithen. For, who euer can schewe that bfore the daies of Hillari, Ambrose, Ierom, and Austyn, and Gregori weren in the Latyn chirche so worthi techers with holi lyuyng to gidere as thei weren and as her successouris weren, y schal ȝeue to him myn arme.

His words are
probably untrue.
There have been
as many learned
and holy prelates
since the church
was richly en-
dowed as before,
and indeed much
more learned.

Ferthermore, how euer goostli almysful preestis and prelatis in preching and in writing profitable bokis weren to gidere in eny tyme bfore the seid endewing, so almysful in the seid goostli almes han ben to gidere sithen⁵; ȝhe, and miche more almysful, bi

Good preaching
and profitable
books have also
increased since
the clergy have
been more richly
endowed and
better educated.

¹ *athis*, MS.

² *in* is interlineated, perhaps by a later hand.

⁵ So the original scribe, rightly :

but a later hand has made an erasure and changed *of* into *or*.

³ *ben*, MS. (first hand).

⁴ *sithen* is interlineated in a later (?) hand.

CHAP. X.

cause thei weren kunnynger and better leerned; and therwith many mo such han be sithen.

Alms have likewise been more plentifully distributed, because the clergy have had more to give.

Also hou euer in bodili maner almesful preestis and prelatis han be in eny tyme to gidere bfore the seid endewing, so almesful in bodili almes han be to gidere preestis and prelatis sithen; 3he, and miche more so almesful, as is open ynou3; for thei hadden possessiouns, wher of thei my3ten miche more avorthi into almes, than thei that hadden litil and as it were nou3t.

There have been as many confessors and martyrs among the clergy since Constantine's days as before; and many have had the spirit of martyrs who did not suffer martyrdom. On the whole, therefore, the assertion of Jerome seems to be false. Unworthy promotions have been the only cause why in later ages evil has arisen from the rich possessions of the clergy.

Ferthermore, as holi confessouris and as manie in the same lengthe of tyme han be of preestis and prelatis sithen the seid endewing, as were bfore the seid endewing a this¹ side the Apostlis; and as holi and as manye and mo of martiris bi deeth, (and other wise troublid bi exile and bi prisonyng,) hanbe² of preestis and of prelatis sithen the seid endewyng in tyme to gidere, than were bfore in eny tyme of lijk quantite to gidere. And thou3 in tho³ daies of Emperouris Nero and of Traian and of Domician and of Dioclician and othere suche manie mo martiris weren made than in tyme⁴ of lijk quantite sithen tho daies, certis, 3it the multitude of tho martiris were lay men and not preestis or bischopis. Forwhi alle the bischopis and othere preestis, that weren in tho daies thoruz manie 3eeris to gidere, weren ful fewe. And also thou3 it hadde be so, that mo bischopis and preestis hadden be martiris in the daies of tho princis than in the daies of princis a this side the Emperour Constantyn, 3it it was oouli for this, that persecucioun of tirantis was redier in tho daies than was sithen in the daies of Constantyn and aftir hise daies; and it

¹ *athis*, MS., and similarly a little below.

² *hanben*, MS. (first hand). The

conjunction of the words is probably not accidental.

³ Probably we should read *thc*.

⁴ *intyme*, MS.

was not for default of good wil in the preestis and bishopis lyuyng forto suffre martirdom, if it hadde be profrid to hem and if God hadde purveied so for hem. For y dare weel seie that Ierom, Ambrose, Austin, and Gregori weren as redi in wil forto haue suffrid marterdom, if it hadde be putt to hem, as euer was eny othir preest or bishop which bfore the endewing of the chirche was martirid a this side¹ the Apostlis: wherfore the holynes was as greet² in thes persoones not martirid as was in hem, namelich sithen these haboundiden in greet doctrine and in cure mynistring miche aboue hem. Wherfore folewith that tho wordis writun *In vitas Patrum*, bi whiche it is meened thus, "that alwey and euer, sithen the clergie " of the chirche³ encrecid in possessiouns, he decrecid " in vertues," is⁴ vntrewe. For in the bigyunyng of the seid endewing and bi long tyme aftir, al the while that weel leerned men and weel proued men in lyuyng were takun into prelacie, the chirche grewe vpward bothe in kunnyng and in lyuyng, as therto ful miche the seid riche endewing helpid; and therfore this, that the chirche or the clergie sithen the seid endewing hath decrecid in vertues, came bi an other thing yn and bi an other wey than bi the seid riche endewing; which other thing and wey, if it were kutt away, the riche endewing schulde do ful miche good and lette miche yuel. And so wolde God that thilk now meened thing and wey were so kutt away!

Now next aftir this, thouz tho wordis writun *In vitas Patrum* and vndirstondun in the seid menyng were trewe, zit that therof⁵ folewith not the purpos of the argument, which is that the seid riche endewing

Next if Jerome's words were true, it follows not that the endowment of the clergy is unlawful. It is in the

¹ *side*, MS. (first hand).

² *agreet*, MS. (first hand).

³ *of the chirche* is added in the margin by a later (?) hand.

⁴ The construction requires *are*; yet perhaps the scribe is guiltless.

⁵ *zit therof*, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. X.

nature of things that after a certain time they decline. Ever since London bridge has been supported by rents, it has continually declined, and will decline. Application of this observation to the present purpose, and further remarks on the meaning and authority of Jerome's words.

schulde be yuel, y proue thus: These wordis which y schal now seie ben trewa. Alwey and euer, sithen the brigge of Londoun was endewid with temperal rentis, the same brigge hath be febler and febler, and euer schal so be into tyme he be at his laste cast. What folewith here of? Schulen men seie her of to folewe, that thilk temperal endewing so zouun into the mentenance of the brigge is harmeful or yuel to the brigge? Alle men witen weel that it not so folewith. But thanne whi folewith it not? Certis for¹ the brigge and ech hous is of such nature and kinde, that aftir a certein of 3eeris next to his first making he biganne to appeire, and he euer sithen appeirith, and schal appeire needis: euen² as a man aftir a certein of hise 3eeris spend schal appeire, how euer miche cost be sett into the mentenaunce of his bodili weel-fare. In lijk maner al the hool chirche of God is of such kinde that, namelich after a certeyn tyme of his age, he appeirid, and schal appeire contynueli; as Crist ther of prophecied, Math. xxiiij. c., and Mark xiiij. c., and Poul, first Thim. iiij. c., and ij. Thym. iij. c. Weel thanne, sithen this is the cause whi out of the briggis contynuel appeiring sithen he was endewid folewith not thilk endewing forto be to him yuel, bi the same or lijk skile, thouȝ the chirche bothe in the laife and in the clergie kepe his nature of contynuel appeiring aftir the tyme in which riche endewing was 3euun therto into his supporting, therof folewith not that the endewing mad to the clergie is vnprofitable to the chirche and is synful and vnleeful; no more than that the endewing 3ouun to the brigge of Londoun into the supporting of his contynuel appeiring is to the same brigge harmeful. The seid Fadir *In vitas Patrum* schulde therefore haue seid more

¹ Probably we should read *for that*.

² *euen* is added in the margin by a later hand.

than he seide in the bifore rehercid wordis, if bi hisse wordis he wolde haue meened that the endewing of the clergie hadde be yuel doon. For he muste haue seid thus miche: "Alwey and euer sithen the chirche " wexid in possessiouns he decrecid in vertues, and " thilk wexing in possessiouns was cause or occasioun " of thilk decrecing in vertues; therefore this endew- " ing of the chirche in possessiouns was yuel doon." And if thou bere him an hond that he meened so myche bi hisse bifore rehercid wordis, thouz he not alle hem out spake, certis zit y schal proue that of al this meenyng, thus largeli born an hond to him, folewith not the seid endewing to be yuel doon and to be vnleeful. Forwhi, if he meened that the seid endewing was cause of the seid chirchis decrecing in vertues, he seide not ther yn trewe; sithen it is proued bifore in the viij^e.¹ chapter, and schal more be proued aftir in the ² chapter, that such endewing is not cause but occasioun oonli of moral yuel. And if this Fader meened that the seid endewing was occasioun oonli of the seid chirchis decrecing, zit therof folewith not the seid endewing to be yuel doon and to be vnleeful, as is proued bifore ful pleinli in the vij^e. chapter of this present iij^e. partie. Forwhi than God hadde yuel do in endewing Lucifer with so greet fairnes, and in endewing men with her tungis; and so in no wise bi, fro, and out of this seid Fadris wordis, thouz thei weren trewe, folewith the seid riche endewing of the clergie to be vnleeful or to be yuel doon.

xj. CHAPTER.

FURTHERMORE for to trete upon this Fadris seiying, thouz this what is now seid and proued, (that the

It is further to
be considered
how much good

¹ vij^e., MS.

² A space left in the MS. for the number. See Part iv. ch. iii.

CHAP. XI.

as well as how much evil the rich endowment of the clergy occasions. No one can be sure that it occasions more evil than good, and so no one can without presumption say that it ought to be put an end to.

seid endewing to be oonli an occasioun of yuel, and not to be cause of yuel,) is ynouȝ forto lette of the oold Fadris seid wordis folewe the riche endewing of the clergie be yuel doon; ȝit more than this mai be sett therto into the same purpos, and in this maner; that, thouȝ a gouernance be an occasioun of yuel, it is to be considerid ferther of how miche good the same gouernaunce is occasioun and of how myche yuelis letting and forbaring the same gouernaunce is an occasioun, with this, that the same gouernaunce is an occasioun of sum yuel, thouȝ not of riȝt myche yuel. And if of al the yuel, which cometh bi the gouernaunce, the same gouernaunce is not but an occasioun and not cause; and therwith the same gouernaunce is occasion of myche good, and is occasioun of letting miche yuel; and herwith it is not knowun whethir the yuel comyng bi the seid gouernaunce is more than the yuel which is lettid bi the same gouernaunce;—certis no man ouȝte thilk while iuge that thilk gouernaunce ouȝte be leid away. But so it is in this present purpos, that thouȝ the riche endewing of the clergie be an occasioun of myche yuel, ȝit it is an occasioun of myche good; and it is also occasioun of aȝen putting miche synful yuel, which ellis schulde falle; and no man can iuge pleinli and sureli, that the yuel which cometh bi the seid riche endewing is gretter than is the yuel which is lettid to be bi the same endewyng; as y commytte to the discrecioun of wise men for to it ouerse and iuge. And her with it is trewe, that the seid riche endewing is not cause of the yuelis which comen occasionarili oonli bi it, as it is bifore proued in the [viij^e.]¹ chapter of this present iij^e. partie. Wherefore no wise man neither eny other man without ouer greet booldnes of presumpcioun ouȝte iuge and seie,

¹ A space left in the MS. for the number.

that the seid riche endewing ouzte be kutt away for the yuel of which the same endewing is occasioun. CHAP. XI.

3it ferther, not withstonding al this, it mai seme bothe bi reson and bi Holi Scripture, that the yuel which is lettid bi the seid riche endewing is gretter than the yuel which is comyng out ther of and ther bi. And forto proue this first bi resoun y procede in this wise: It is miche harder forto suffre peyne of fleisch in this lijf than it is forto forgo and forbere lustis of fleisch in this lijf, as ech man may soone aspie in experience: and also bi resoun, for bi suffring of peyne bodili deeth cometh miche sooner than bi forbering of delectaciouns oonli. And if this be trewe, thanne it is more perel to a man for to bere him weel in suffring of peyne, than is forto bere him weel in forbering of delectaciouns and lustis. But so it is, that al the perel which is in hauyng of grete ricchessis is, lest a man bere him not weel in forbering lustis; and the perel which is in lacking ricchessis is, lest a man bere him not weel and strongli in suffring of peyne. Wherefore nedis folewith, that more perel is to a man,¹ whanne he is sett in to suffring of peyn, than whanne he is sett into forbering of lustis. And thanne ferther thus: But so it is, that whanne a man is sett forto reioice grete ricchessis, he is sett forto forbere lustis strongli and manli; and whanne he [is] sette forto lacke tho ricchessis, he is sett forto suffre peynes strongli and manli. Wherefore folewith needis, that gretter perel is in lacking of ricchessis than in the hauyng of hem; and gretter perel nouzwhere is,² saue where grettir yuel is likeli to come: wherefore gretter yuel were likeli to come in the clergie, if thei hadden lak of plenteuose ricchessis, than if thei hadden plenteuose ricchessis.

It seems probable from reason and Scripture that the said endowment hinders more evil than it occasions. Proof of this from reason. It is harder to suffer pain and want than to abstain from lusts and pleasures. So that more danger arises to the clergy from poverty than from riches.

¹ a man, MS. (first hand, a corrector having wrongly erased the article).

² is is interlineated by a later (?) hand.

CHAP. XI.

Proof of the same thing from Scripture. In St. Paul's time the Corinthian preachers, who lived only on voluntary offerings, were tempted to please the people with new and false doctrines, when they perceived their maintenance diminishing; and to set them against the doctrines and persons of the Apostles. These evils resulted from the poverty of the clergy.

For to proue the same bi Holi Scripture y procede thus: Frowhens schule we trowe this came, that so manye pseudo or false Apostlis preching for lucre weren in the chirche in tyme of the Apostlis, as of such spekith Poul and Peter and Iohun and Iudas in her Epistilis, than fro this now to be seid? Aftir that thei weren assigned bi the veri Apostlis forto preche, thei hadden no finding assigned and lymytid to hem in propre neither in comoun; bi cause the clergie in thilk daies was not endewid with vnmouable possessiouns; neither was eny posytyue lawe mad, wherbi the prechouris myzten cleyne eny certeinte of porcioun to be ȝouun to hem of the lay peple to whom thei prechiden; but thei eten freeli ȝouun mete and drinke of hem to whom thei freli prechiden; neither thei weren so stronge in pacience and in douȝtynes that thei wolden laboure for her lijfode and contynue her preching, whanne the peple waxe vnkinde and vndsuout forto sufficiently hem fynde in necessaries, (as Poul for lijk caus and in lijk caas wrouȝte with hise hondis forto haue his lijfode to preche:) and therfore thei weren temptid and stirid and brouȝt into consent and into deede and werk for to preche bi gileful meenis, wherbi thei myzten the more redili receyue of the peple ȝiftis in to her eese and habundaunt fare; and therfore thei prechiden newe thingis and vntrewe thingis forto plesse the peple the more; and at the laste, (for as miche as ther fore bitwixe the Apostlis and hem wexid distaunce and contrauersie, as needis muste wexe,) the pseudo Apostilis wrouȝten persecucioun bothe priueili and openli aȝens the trewe Apostlis, and peruertiden ofte tymes myche what the trewe Apostilis hadden weel groundid, and thei turneden the peple ful ofte and myche forto lothee and hate the Apostilis, and forto not bileue to¹ the verry

¹ to is interlineated by a later hand.

trewe Apostilis, as mai be had of the firste and ij^e. Epistilis of Poul to the Corynthies. And whether this yuel comyng into the chirche in this now seid maner, and that for defaute of riches, was not a greet myscheef; 3he, and gretter than schulde haue be likeli to falle, if alle the clergie in tho daies hadde be endewid bi vnmouable godis richeli, deme 3e. For what¹ so greet myscheef schulde bi likelihode haue come bi habundaunce of riches in tho pseudo, as came bi her pouerte in hem, whanne thei diffameden the trewe Apostlis and peruertiden the Corinthies and the Thessalonicenses² fro the wey in which Poul and Apollos³ hadden hem foundid and groundid? And therfore to alle freel persoones and not disposid to greet perfitnes of pacience and of douztines, as Poul was, the lak of sufficiency is of more perel than habundaunce ouer and aboue sufficiency.

Also forto proue this same purpos more euidentli bi Holi Scripture, y procede also thus: It is writun, Prouerb. xxx^e. c. thus: *3eue thou not to me beggerie neither riches; 3eue thou onli necessities to my lifflode; lest perauenture y be fillid and be drawn to denye, and seie, Who is the Lord? and leste y compellid bi nedines stele, and forswere⁴ the name of my God.* Lo how Salamon is aknowe to God that bothe greet riches and lak of sufficiency ben occasiouns of yuel; and therfore for feer he desirid the meene, which is sufficiency, withoute hauyng of nede and withoute hauyng of more riches than is necessarie into sufficiency, as weel for thanne as for tyme to come. Neuertheles into my present purpos he weel witnessith, that gretter perel is⁵ in lak of sufficiency than is in habundaunce of grete richessis;

Further proof from Solomon's prayer, in which he prays for sufficiency, and against beggary and riches; lest riches might lead him to forget God, but beggary to deny him, which is worse.

¹ *for what*, MS.

² *Thessalonicenses*, MS.

³ *Appollo*, MS.

⁴ *for swere*, MS.

⁵ *is* is added by a later hand.

CHAP. XI. sithen he openli knowlechith that the yuel, of which lak of sufficiencye is occasioun, is gretter yuel than is the yuel, of which habundaunce of riches is occasion. Forwhi, as he seith, the yuel, of which the lak of sufficiencye is occasioun, is to stele and forsake God bi ooth and so bi avisement; and the yuel, of which habundaunce of riches is occasioun, is forto forsake¹ God in a liztnes and in a rechelesnes. And alle men witen that the former of these ij. defautis is gretter than is the secunde. Wherefore more yuel cometh of lak of riches than of habundaunce of riches.

The sufficiencye
there spoken of
is a permanent
provision against
present or future
want.

For more pleyner vndirstonding to be had upon the now bifore rehercid wordis of Salamon, Prouerb. xxx^o. ̄, and forto wite what Salamon meened in hem, and forto therbi se how it is trewe that greeter yuel cometh bi lak of riches than bi the hauyng of riches, it is to vndirstonde and to holde that Salamon in the now seid text meened bi "sufficiencye" not oonli the hauour which fillith or remedieth al his lak and nede now had, but which is ther with so abiding that it schal not lasse; or ellis not so myche lasse, but that it schal alwey aftir² be able to fille and remedie al his lak and nede, which is for eny tyme likeli to falle. And that Salamon vndirstode thus bi the seid sufficiencye spokun in his text, it is open herbi; forwhi al hauour, that is lasse than is this now seid sufficiencye, is "beggeri" as for now or as for tyme to come, as schal appere and be open anoon³ aftir whanne it schal be declarid what beggeri is. Wherefore sithen Salamon preied that "beggerie" schulde not falle to him," and ȝit that "he schulde" haue sufficiencye," he muste needis vndirstonde bi sufficiencye such a thing which ledith not into beggerie,

¹ *sake*, MS. (first hand).

² *aftir* is added in a later hand,
which has made erasures in the text.

³ *anoon* is interlineated by a later hand.

but which *azenstondith beggerie*. And that is the sufficiency now declarid. CHAP. XI.

Forthermore bi "*beggerie*" Salamon vndirstondith in the same text *al lak*¹ of the now seid sufficiency, or the *lak* of the now seid sufficient hauour. Forwhi whanne euere eny man lackith his seid sufficient hauour, and is not in nyze power forto gete or haue it bi his owne wyynyng or bi eny other wey than bi asking it of othere, that it be *zouun* to him, sotheli than he is excusid forto begge; and his plite, in which he thanne is, which is not ellis than *lak* of sufficiency into what he hath for than to do, mai and ouzte be clepid to him beggerie. Beggary here means the lack of such sufficiency.

The "*ricches*" of which he spekith in the same text is hauour of so miche *ricches*, that thouz it lassee and abbate, as myche as it is likeli it abate bi condicioun of the world, zit it schal not be so litil, but that it schal be to a man ouer and aboue the seid sufficiency,² al the while that he hath to do with thilk *ricches*. And that he vndirstode thus bi thilk *ricches*, y proue thus: If he hadde vndirstonde eny *ricches* lasse than this now seid, sithen ech *ricches* lasse than this now seid wole make bi proces of tyme to his possessour state or plite of sufficiency, it wolde folewe that Salamon in the seid text, whanne he preied that *ricches* schulde not be *zouun* to him, he preied ther yn that sufficiency schulde not be *zouun* to him. Wherefore he meened bi *ricchesse* as it is now expowned. And contrariwise riches signify its excess.

And so folewith herof, that vndir the meenyng of Salamon in his now rehercid preier to God it is includid that he wolde this: If eny couent or comounte or eny oon persoon schulde be endewid into such sufficiency Application of Solomon's prayer to the case of ecclesiastical endowments. Founders of convents and

¹ *al-lak*, MS.

² *the seid sufficiency* is added in the margin by a later hand.

CHAP. XI.

colleges must leave much more to their foundations than is barely sufficient for their original and immediate wants, if they wish to keep them from beggary.

that he schulde not falle into beggerie, he muste be endewid with lijfode which schal neuere appeire; and therwith hise costis muste be suche, that thei schulen neuere encrece; or ellis, for as miche as these ij. now rehercid pointis mowe not be had abiding in eeny comounte or persoon, therefore in the seid preier of Salamon muste needis be includid this,—that ech couent or comounte or persoon to be endewid in to his sufficiencye muste needis be endewid with so miche good that, (thouȝ it appeire as myche as it is to appeire bi his natural condicion and bi the¹ rennyng condicioun of the world,) ȝit it schal neuere so miche abate, but that al the nede of thilk same couent,² comounte, or persoon schal ther bi be releued and remedied: and ellis thilk couent, comounte, or persoon is not foundid and endewid into his sufficiencye, as Salamon takith here sufficiencye. Forwhi he is not foundid and endewid fro this, that he is out of the fal into beggerie bi proces of tyme. And so herbi founders of collegis and of couentis and of persoones and of statis mowen³ take⁴ good remembraunce, if thei founde eny such, that thei founde and endewe miche aboue the sufficiencye which is into the remedying of nede had in the dai of fundacioun: and ellis, certis, bi proces of tyme her werk, otherwise than so foundid and endewid, schal come into beggerie, which y woot weel thei wolen not desire but awoide, what thei mowe.

Consequently founders of colleges are deserving of all praise, if they endow them much beyond their wants, when they are first founded.

For sureli to seie y haue take heede, and in al my daies and long bifore y wiste neuere ȝit college or cumpanie endewid, (thouȝ thei weren endewid ouer and more than the nede of hem askid in the dai of

¹ the is interlineated, perhaps by a later hand.

² couēt, MS., the stroke over the

o being apparently by the same hand.

³ mowe, MS. (first hand).

⁴ take is added by a later hand.

her fundacioun,) but that aftirward her endewing so mythe schranke and her costis so miche grewe more than couth be bfore seen, that it was aftirward ouer litle to supporte her necessaries. And therfore founders and endewers of eny persoones or comountees, if thei endewiden so richeli, that it was more than bi streit mesure was to her nede ynouȝ in the dai of her fundacioun, thei weren¹ not ther yn to be blamed; but thei weren¹ ther yn to be preisid, bi cause that thilk lijfode wolde continueli schrinke, and the costis wolde contynueli growe and encrece. Forwhi if a fadir for loue to his sone wolde ordeine to him a peire of schoon, and the lethir wher of the schoon schulde² be maad were of such kinde that it wolde daili schrinke whilis it were vsid in weryng, certis this fadir were not to be blamed, if he wolde ordeyne that these schoon be notabli widdir than the meetenes of hem wolde aske, as for the firste dai in which thei schulden be³ worne, but he were to be preisid, if he wolde so ordeyne to his loued sone; ȝhe, the fadir were worthi be blamed, if he wolde ordeyne these schoon to be no wijdir than euen meete to hise sones feet in the dai of his⁴ firste wering. Forwhi therof wolde needis folows that with inne proces of daies the schoon schulden be so narowe, that thei schulden needis wringe his sones feet into greet payne of his sone. And therfore bi lijk skile the endewers of reli-gioses hauing possessioun and of cathedral chirchis and of collegis weren not to be blamed in that, that thei so richeli endewid her foundid cumpenies aboue the⁵ streit or euen meet of the nede had in the dai of fundacioun, but thei weren ther yn to be preisid, if thei so diden, for the⁵ cause now seid; thouȝ the

¹ were, MS. (first hand) twice.

² schulde, MS.

³ be is interlineated by a later hand.

⁴ her, MS. (first hand) apparently, which is perhaps better.

⁵ the is interlineated by a later hand (twice).

CHAP. XI.

persoones so foundid ben miche to be blamed, but¹ thei in the meene tyme wijsly and weel kepe thilk ricchessis and wijsly and weel hem expende, as sufficient resoun wole deme.

But it does not follow that this sufficiency is the most perfect way of life, because Solomon chose it. Scripture neither asserts nor implies anything of the kind.

But of al this, (thouȝ founde^ris and endewe^ris of couentis, of collegis, of statis, and of persoones in state ouȝten for to in this maner endewe, whilis thei entenden forto warde and wilne that her werk come not into beggerie; and thouȝ Salamon preied to God that he schulde not haue lasse than the seid sufficiency declarid now bifore to be of his meenyng, and that he schulde not falle into the² beggerie also now bifore declarid to be of his meenyng,) schal it be seid therfore of this to folewe, that it is a perfiter lijf forto lyue in such a now seid sufficiency or in the seid richessis, than forto lyue in the seid beggerie? Nai certis, this folewith not. For thouȝ Salamon so preied for more suerte to his freelnes, and for that he was not so perfit that he couthe bere beggerie at ful³ withoute sclaudre, bi cause, as Scripture witnessith weel, he was a ful freel man; and therefore he hadde more nede forto seke aftir the surer to him weies, than aftir the hardir and the bateilfuller weies and therefore the perfiter to him weies; and thouȝ founders and endewe^ris of collegis and of couentis and of persoones in state founden and endewen into more suerte, bi cause that in multitude of persoones fewe schulden be founde disposid to hize perfitnes, (in reward of hem whiche schulen be disposid to meenes⁴ and louȝer degre of lyuyng than is perfitnes:)—ther of folewith not, that ech other maner of lyuyng, dyuers fro this which Salamon askid, and dyuers fro this whiche the seid endewers entenden in her seid fundacioun and endewing, is not so holi and

¹ Perhaps we should read *but if*.

² *the* is interlineated by a later hand.

³ *the ful*, MS. (first hand).

⁴ Probably we should read *meener*.

so perfit as these ben; neither it is to be seid that Holi Writt approueth the seid sufficiency to be of more holynes than the seid beggerie or the seid riche endewing, bi cause that Holi Writt makith mensioun that Salamon chase and askid rathir the seid sufficiency than the seid beggerie or the seid ricchessis. For of this, that Holi Writt makith this now seid mensioun, folewith no more, but that Holi Writt groundith this¹ or witnessith this;—that Salamon chaas the seid sufficiency bifore the seid beggerie and bifore the seid ricchessis. But the argument is nauzt, “Holi Writt seith that Salamon chaas this bifore that; therfore Holi Writt seith that this is bettir than that;” but if therwith this were knowen for trewe, that Salamon chas this afore that, bi cause that this was bettir and perfiter than that, and that he weel knewe this to be better than that. But this Holi Writt seith not, and also this is not trewe, as may be proued: and therfore it is to be seid, as is now bifore seid, that Salamon,—as a freel [man], and as he which ofte and miche synned, and as he which knewe² his vnperfitnes, and was feerd forto aske and assaie and take upon him the hardir, hizet, and perfiter wey,—askid mekeli and discreetli the imperfiter³ wey, as it which was to him surer and meeter than was the perfiter wey. And more than this can not bi the rehersed text of Salamon be had bi maistrie, if eny man be aboute forto seie ther azens nay, in the maner now mynistrid.

Neuertheles alwey thoruz al what is seid euer this apperith to be trewe, that forto be endewid in to a sufficiency azens beggerie, which ellis now schulde be, and azens beggerie, which ellis in tyme com-

But this endowment with sufficiency is not sinful in any case, and for the most part of men is wisest and best.

¹ *this* is interlined by a later (?) hand.

² *miche knewe*, MS. (first hand).

³ *i pfitr*, MS. Very likely the

scribe, (who often disjoins prepositions in composition from their nouns and verbs,) intended the text to be *in perfiter*.

CHAP. XI. yng schulde come and be, is not vnleeful and synful; but it is accordyng with doom of resoun, and is therefore leeful: 3he, and to¹ men being not disposid to grettist perfitnes, and of which it is not like to be turned into such disposicioun, it is discreetist and best.

xij. CHAPTER.

THE FOURTH ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS ANSWERED. The story about the angel's voice in the air at Rome, when Constantine endowed the church, is neither certain nor probable; and so the argument fails.

To the iiij°. semyng skile, which groundith him silf vpon a storie of a voice herd in the air seiying thus, *In this dai venom is hild out into the chirche*, it is to be seid, that thilk ground is not sure trouthe, neither he is likeli to be trewe: and ther fore neither eny sure trouthe² neither eny likeli to be trowid trouthe may be proued or knowun or trowid therbi. And so cesith al the strengthe of this iiij°. semyng skile.

Four reasons to prove this. The first reason, Giraldus Cambrensis, (circa A.D. 1200,) the original authority for this story, says that the devil and not a good angel uttered the voice; so that those who believe the story must admit that the father of lies uttered the voice. And why is he to be believed?

That thilk storie, which the iiij°. semyng skile takith for his ground and fundament, is not worthi to be trowid, y proue bi liij. resouns; of whiche the firste is this: If no storier or cronycler hadde writun of thilk voice to be spokun in the air, noman now ouzte bileue³ or trowe that thilk voice was so spokun: so that al wherbi we ouzte trowe⁴ eny thing of thilk voice is this, for that so or so or so (and in noon other wise) it is writun in storie or cronicle of thilk voice spokun.⁵ But so it is, that in noon storier or cronicler it is writun that eny good aungel seide thilk voice in the air; but in ech storie or cronicle speking therof it is seid and writun that the feend spake thilk voice. Forwhi noon fundamen-

¹ into, MS. (first hand).

² neither eny sure trouthe is added in the margin by a later hand.

³ to beleue, MS. (first hand).

⁴ to trowe, MS. (first hand).

⁵ writun, MS. We must either make this correction, or cancel the first or second writun.

tal cronicle or storiè writith therof, saue Giralde in his booke clepid *Cosmographia Hibernie*; and othere storièrs and cronicleers aftir him taking oonli of him. And he seith that "the oold enemy made thilk voice "in the air."¹ Wherefore ech man, which wole trowe that thilk voice was seid in the air, ouȝte answeringli trowe that thilk voice was spokun bi the feend, and not by a² good aungel. And if this be trewe, whi and wherto schulden we bileue his seiȝng to be trewe; sithen he is oure enemy and oure bigiler, as Scripture witnessith, i°. Pet. v°. ȝ.; and sithen he is a lier and the fader of lesing, as Crist him silf witnessith, Iohun viij°. ȝ.?

The ij°. resoun into the same purpos is this: If it were seid or witnessid of me that y seid certein wordis in a certeyn place, or that y seide hem after that y hadde do a certeyn deede; if it kouthe be knowe sureli or bi sufficient likelihode that y neuere was in thilk place, or that y neuere dide thilk deede, thilk witnessing so mad upon me were not to be bileued, neither were worthi to be trowid trewe. Wherefore, bi lijke skile, sithen it is so that ech fundamental storie speking of this seid voice seith and storieth, that it was mad in the air, aftir that the first Constantyn Emperour was baptisid at Rome of Siluester Pope, and aftir that he hadde endewid the Pope Siluester and the chirche of Rome, as it is open in the now bifore fundamental cronicle or storie of Giralde, (and no man storieth therof saue he, and thei that sithen hise daies taken the same of him,) it folewith

The second reason. But in truth the whole story is fabulous from beginning to end. Constantine was not baptised at Rome nor by Silvester at all; but was baptised in Nicomedia by the bishop of Nicomedia, as Eusebius, a most credible historian, expressly testifies.

¹ There is an edited work of Giraldus Cambrensis, entitled *Topographia Hibernie*, in which this passage does not occur: there is, however, another treatise of his extant in MS., called *Descriptio Mundi*, in which it may possibly

be found. See Cave's *Hist. Lit. s. v.* It will be observed that Sprott's account, quoted above, agrees with that of Giraldus, from whom it is no doubt copied.

² as, MS. (accidentally?).

CHAP. XII. that if it can be sureli or in sufficient likelihode proued, that the seid first Constantyn Emperour was neuere baptised of Siluester Pope neither at Rome, al the storyng, cronicling, and witnessing of thilk same seid voice is not to be trowid for trewe. And thanne ferther forto proue that the seid firste Constantyn Emperour was not baptisid of Pope Siluester neither in Rome, y procede thus: Noman except Constantyn him silf schulde wite better whanne and where Constantyn was baptisid, than he which was lyuyng and conuersaunt with the same Constantyn, and was as priuey with Constantyn in the counceillis of his herte and of his conscience, as a confessour is now priuey with a prince to which he is confessour; as mai be take bi the storie clepid *The thre departid storie* in the firste book the iiij^e. chapiter, and in the ij^e. book the xiiij^e. chapiter and the xvj^e. chapiter. But so it is, that this ful famose and worthi clerk and bischop Eusebi Cesarience, (ful miche preisid and bileueed of Seint Ierom,¹ and of whos worthines greet testimonie is had in the ij^e. book of *The thre departid storie* in the viij^e. chapiter and in the x^e. and xj^e. chapitris, bisidis the othere now bfore alleggid chapitris into the same purpos, and which wroot the moost famose and moost credible storie had among Cristen men next to the storie of the Bible, clepid *The Chirchis storie*, and which wroot the moost credible *Cronicle* of alle othere had among Cristen men, to which Ierom couplid the *Cronicle* which he wroot,) was moost homeli of alle othere with the seid Constantyn, and was so priuey and so homeli with the seid greet Emperour Constantyn, that bi the same Eusebi came out into

¹ The various testimonies in his favour from St. Jerome may be seen in Euseb. *Hist. Eccl.* vol. 1. pp. lv.-lviii. (Barton's Ed.) The passages from the *Historia tripartita* of Cassiodorus, to which Pecock here refers, are not much to the purpose.

knowing of alle othere men the appering which was mad to Constantyn of the crosse in the eir, and which appering Constantyn toold in greet secreetnes to the same Eusebi and to no mo, as it is open bi the iiij. chapter in the firste book of *The iij. departid storie*. And this Eusebi, (so credible and, as a principal fadir in tho daies of the chirche, as moost and best knowing the lijf, conuersacioun, and holines of the same Constantyn,) took up on him for to write and storie the hool lijf and the deeth of the same Constantyn: and herwith he witnessith in the same *Book of Constantynys lijf*,¹ that the seid Constantyn was baptisid first in the laste daies of his lijf in Greek cuntre in the citee clepid Nichomedia and of the bischop clepid [Eusebi].² And this was doon aftir that Siluester was deed; for in the daies of Iulie Pope successour to Siluester, (as may liztli be had in cronicles,) that Siluester died, bfore that Constantyn died.

Wherefore this now seid thing which Eusebi so storieth in *The book of Constantynys lijf* is more to be bileeued or trowid than what into the contrarie is founde in eny legende of Siluester, (which noman can telle who wroot it, neither whens it came, or whidir it wole,) or than the storie of Damasus Pope writun to Ierom of deedis of Popis, or than eny storier or cronicler taking of the seid legend of Siluester or

His account to be preferred before the legend of Silvester's acts or of Constantine's donation, and to the history of the popes by Damasus.

¹ Euseb. *de Vit. Constant.* lib. iv. c. 62, 63.

² A space left for the name in the MS. Eusebius does not give it, but only says, (c. 61), when "ἐπὶ προσέτειον τῆς Νικομηδείας ἀφικνεῖται πόλεως, . . . ὁδὲ πρὶ αὐτοῖς (the bishops present) διετέτατο:" after which (c. 63) he received baptism. Cave (*Hist. Lit. s. v. Constantinus*)

observes: "Obiit . . . impetrato prius ab adstantibus episcopis baptismo, manu ut videtur Eusebii Nicomediensis, utpote loci illius episcopi; licet id nec Eusebius, nec Socrates, Sozomennus, vel Theodorus referant." Several late writers, however, affirm it. See Brown. *Fasc. Rer.* pp. 158, 161. Marian. *Scot. Chron.* A.D. 336.

CHAP. XII.

taking of the seid Damesis stori yng writun by¹ Damasus long sithen Constantyn died, or than the long epistle which is pretendid to be the epistle of Constantyn and is sett in the book clepid *The decrees of Hizest Bischopis*, of which now seid long epistle a greet porcioun Graciaun puttith in his *Summe*, Dist. xcvi^o, chapter [xiv^o.] *Constantinus*: namelich sithen in legendis ben founde manie ful vntrewe fablis, as in a book therof to be mad schal appeere, and sithen azens the seid epistle putt to Constantyn special suspicioun mai be had; for in othere epistlis of Constantyn, which he wroot whanne he was in his moost rialte, is not such a stile of him as is in this now seid epistle, (as ech man may se which wole biholde in the i^o. and ij^o. bookis of *The iij. departid storie*;) and sithen in the seid storie of Damase Pope is founde vntrouthe, which Ierom weel aspiid, and fro which² Ierom gooth, and whos contrarie Ierom affermeth in his writing in his book *De viris illustribus*,³ c. *Clemens*,⁴ not withstanding that to Ierom was write and seid the same Damasis stori yng.⁵

¹ in, MS. (first hand).

² the which, MS. (first hand).

³ Hieron. *de Vir. ill.* c. 15. (Op. tom. ii. p. 839. Ed. Vallars.) Pseudo-Damasus says of Clement that he wrote two epistles "quæ canonice nominantur;" Jerome, on the contrary, says, "secunda epistola . . . a veteribus reprobatur." (See Coleti, *Concil.* tom. 1. pp. 75, 119.) This appears to be the discrepancy to which Pecoock alludes.

⁴ After *Clemens*, the MS. has "and also in lijk maner of the same mater in his Cronicle which he made to be ioyned to the Cronicle of Eusebie:" but a corrector has written *vacat* against the lines.

⁵ The *Acta Silvestri*, in part per-

haps the work of Isidore Mercator, about 820 A.D. (see Coleti, *Concil.* tom. 1. p. 1578); the *Liber pontificalis* or *Gesta pontificalia* of Damasus, and his Epistle to Jerome, a medley of old things and new, (see Cave, *Hist. Lit.* s.v. Damasus); the *Edictum Constantini*, printed with notes in Coleti, *Concil.* tom. 1. pp. 1564-1576, and forming a part of the *Acta Silvestri*, and quoted by many authors from Isidore downwards (see Coleti, l.c. p. 1573), are now known to be spurious. The *Vita Silvestri* by Pseudo-Damasus is printed with notes in Coleti, *Concil.* tom. 1. pp. 1431-1444. The remark of Binius, "Hoc edictum de Constantini donatōne ex actis

Also into the same purpos thus: Ambrose and Ierom helden so trewe it what Eusebi seid in the now rehersed maner of Constantyns baptising, that thei bileueeden it and witnessen it;¹ not withstanding Pope Damasis wroot the contrarie to Ierom: But so thei wolden not haue trowid and witnessid in her writing azens the legend of Siluester and azens the storiying of Damase Pope,² but if thei hadden had sufficient euydence for to cleue in thilk mater to Eusebi and not to Damase, neither to the legend of Siluester. Wherefore the storiying of Eusebi in this mater of Constantyns baptising is to be trowid bfore al other storie affermyng the contrarie.

CHAP. XII.

This account confirmed by Ambrose and Jerome.

Also thus: Theodoritus,³ Socrates, and Sozomenus weren the moost famose storiers in the daies of Theodosie the ij^e. Emperour; of which iij. so famose storiers a worthi lettrid man and senatour of Rome clepid Casiodor lete make and compile the ful famose and credible storie clepid *The iij. departid storie*, moost credible next to the storie of Eusebie clepid *The chirchis storie*, and was mad and compilid for thilk entent that it schulde be contynued in progresse and in processe to *The chirchis storie*: and ij. of these iij. seid storiers (that is to seie, Sozomenus and Theodoritus) witnessen accordingli with Eusebi Cesarience that the seid Constantyn was baptisid oonli in hise laste daies litle bfore his deeth, whanne he wiste he schulde die, in the xxxj^e. ȝeer of his empire, and euen so long aftir he was conuertid into Cristen feith and Cristen holi

And by the Tripartite History.

Silvestri Papæ, sub Eusebii Cæsarensis nomine falso Græce scriptis, primum edidit Theodorus Balsamon," about 1180 A.D., is true only as respects its Greek translation.

¹ Ambros. *de Ob. Theodos. Or.* c. 40. (Op. tom. ii. p. 1209, Ed. Benedict). Hieron. ap. Vincent.

Bell. *Hist. lib. xxiv.* in fine. See Brown. *Fasc. Rer.* p. 158. The index to St. Jerome's works does not indicate the passage.

² See Coleti, *Concil. tom. i.* pp. 1431, 1567.

³ *Theodoricus*, MS., and *Theodoricus* below.

CHAP. XII. lyuyng, and in the same place which Eusebi spekith of.¹ Wherefore, if the reule of Crist in the Gospel be good and to be kept, which he techith there to be kept, that "in the mouth of ij. or thre schal ech "word of witnessing stonde,"² it folewith that this parti is miche more credible than is the contrarie partie; 3he, and that the contrarie parti is an apocrif. And so fynali it is proued that the storie affermyng the seid voice to be mad in the eir seijng, *This dai venom is hilde into the chirche*, is not credible.

The third reason. The authority of Giraldus is unsupported by any ancient authority now extant.

The iij^e. resoun is this: The storyng which the seid Girald makith of this voice is this in wordis, *It is rad that the oold enemy pronouncid openli in the eir thus, This dai venom is hildid into the chirche*. Wherefore folewith that if it be not writun in eny storie bifore the seid storyng of Girald, that the oold enemy made such a voice thanne in the eir, al the storyng which Girald makith of the same voice is not to be bileued. But so it is, that noon eldir storie or cronicle can be founde writun bifore the seid storyng of Girald, in which eeldir storie is mensioun mad of thilk voice. Wherefore this that Girald writith of this voice is ful sengil to be bileued.

His only authority seems to have been popular rumour then current.

Confirmacioun to this resoun is this: Sithen the storyng which Girald makith of this voice is this, *It is rad that such voice was in the eir, et cætera*, Girald 3ildith him silf in so storyng that he is not the fundamental storier ther of, but that ther of is an other storie bifore him, fro which he takith his storyng of the same voice: wherefore³ if noon other storie be founde eeldir than the storie of Girald, in which eeldir storie mensioun is maad of this same voice, (as in trouthe no such storie or writing can as

¹ *Hist. Trip.* lib. iii. c. 12.

² See *Math.* xviii. 16.

³ The sense seems to require *therefore*.

3it be founde,) it folewith that at the leest vnto thilk eeldir stori yng be founde, the stori yng of Girald in mater of this voice is not to be bileeued; but it is to be bileeued that Girald was bigilid, (as manie othere writers bi liztnes and vnavisidnes han be,) that whilis and whanne thei herden in fame¹ that a thing or a deede was doon, thei trowiden that ther of was sum writing and stori yng: and thei maden hem silf ouer bold in thilk trowing forto write in her writingis, that of thilk deede it is writun and storied; not withstanding that no stori yng or writing is had ther upon. And so finali, forto conclude, it is proued that the iiij^e. semyng skile lackith al strengthe forto proue his entent.

xiiij. CHAPTER.

THE iiij^e. resoun is this: If suche as is bifore seid a voice was spokun in the eir, whanne Constantyn had maad at Rome the endewing which he made, thilk voice was so maad and spoken in the eir for this, that thanne first endewing by immovable possessiouns entride into the chirche; or ellis for this, that thanne first greet habundaunt endewing bi immovable possessiouns entride into the chirche.

The fourth reason. If any such voice was uttered, it was either because the church was then first endowed absolutely or else then first abundantly. But both suppositions are false, and consequently the story also.

Thou maist not seie that for the firste of these twei causis: For whi in the daies of First Vrban Pope, goostli fadir and techer of Seint Cecilie Virgyn, which was mad pope bi an hundrid 3eeris bifore the popehode of Siluestre and the regnyng of Constantyn Empereour, the chirche of Rome was endewid with immovable possessiouns, as croniclis openli witnessen, and as it is open bi the writing of the same Vrban in the greet book clepid *The decrees of Hizest*

For in the first place, the church of Rome had temporal possessions in Urban's time (223-230 A.D.), and the church of England still earlier, in the time of Lucius (circa 180 A.D.)

¹ a fame, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. XIII.

Bischopia in the firste and ij^e. chapitris of his decree ;¹ and also by manye mo ȝeeris bifore the daies of Pope Siluester and of Constantyn Emperour in the daies of Pope Eleutheri and of Luci, king of Britouns, the hool al chirche of Englonde was endewid with temporal immovable possessiouns large and greete, forwhi with the same large and grete possessiouns with whiche bifore the hethen bischopis and hethen chirchis in Ynglond weren endewid, as stories witenessen²; as of these bothe endewingis oold stories and cronicles³ (being famose and worthi and credible and not being apocrifis) maken mension. And therefore not for the firste now bifore seid cause thilk voice was maad and spokun in the eir.

And next, Constantine's donations were on a small scale; the large possessions of the pope being derived from Pepin, Charlemagne, Louis le Débonnaire, and Matilda of Tuscany, in much later times (754-1077 A.D.)

Thou maist not seie that for the ij^e. cause now bifore seid thilk voice was maad in the eir: Forwhi, as anon her aftir it schal be proued, the seid Emperour Constantyn endewid not the 'Pope Siluester neither eny chirche in Rome with eny greet habundaunt immouable possessiouns, but oonli with possessiouns competentli and mesurably, with sufficiencye seruyng for the fynding of the preestis and mynystis of the chirchis whiche he endewid; except oon chirche clepid⁵ Constantynyana, into which chirche he ȝaf a certein of possessioun for fynding of liztis and for fynding of bawme into brennyng of laumpis, ouer the competent vnmoouable endewing

¹ See Coleti, *Concil.* tom. 1. pp. 636, 637. This Epistle is spurious, being one of the forgeries of Isidorus Mercator. The Chronicles, such as that of Martinus Polonus (*Supp.* A.D. 226), who says, "Hujus tempore cepit primum Romana ecclesia prædia possidere," are probably derived from it.

² Geoffrey of Monmouth (*De Gest. Brit.* lib. v. c. 1.) seems to be

the original authority for this statement. How far it is "worthy and credible" the reader may judge from Fuller's *Ch. Hist. of Brit.* book 1. cent. ii., and Collier's *Ecc. Hist. of Brit.* book 1. cent. ii.

³ *chronicles*, MS. (first hand).

⁴ *not pope*, MS. (first hand).

⁵ *clepid* is added in the margin by a later hand.

which he made into the same chirche for fynding of the preestis and mynystres seruying in the same chirche;¹ but al the habundaunt and riche endewing of the pope and his see chirche in Rome, came bi othere persoones longe aftir Constantyn, as by Pipyn king of France, and by Charles king of Fraunce and emperour, and bi Lodowic king of Fraunce and emperour, and bi Matilde a greet ladi which ȝaf the greet and riche and rial marchionat of Anchon to the pope to gidere at oonis, and bicame ther bi to be the douȝtir of Saint Peter, as in cronicles and stories it is open forto se,² and sumwhat therof is sett in the *Summe* of Gracian, Dist. lxiiij^c, chapiter [xxx^c.] *Ego Lodowicus*; and in like maner diden manie othere persoones mo than of whom it is writun. Wherefore the seid voice was not maad in the eir for the ij^c, now bifore sett cause. And so fynali folewith that for no cause thilk voice was maad, and therefore no such voice at al was in the eir than mad, thouȝ bi sum corrupcioun of leeing the fame of thilk voice hath long tyme be had and contynued.

That this is trewe what is now bifore seid, that the First Constantyn Emperour endewid not Pope Silvester neither eny oon chirche in Rome with eny greetly habundant and riche vnmouable possessiouns, y mai proue bi manie euydencis; of whiche oon is this: If the seid Constantyn had mad such greet habundaunt riche endewing to Silvester and to the chirche in which Silvester sate, Damasus Pope had mad mensioun of thilk same endewing in the storie which he writith to Ierom, and that for dyuerse

Eight various proofs that the pretended donation of Constantine is fictitious. The silence of Damasus is conclusive against it.

¹ See Coleti, *Concil.* tom. 1. p. 1433.

² See Mart. Polon. *Chron.* (inter alios) for all the principal facts here mentioned in their proper places.

The authorities, giving an account of Matilda's life and acts, are fully set down by Mosheim, *Eccl. Hist.* pt. II. c. II. § 11. (vol. 2. pp. 339, 340, Lond. 1841.)

CHAP. XIII.

skilis now anoon aftir to be rehersed; but not withstanding this the seid Damasus makith no mensioun of the seid greet endewing born an hond to Constantin, that he schulde it make to Siluester Pope. Wherefore treuthe is, that thilk greet endewing so born an hond was not maad.

For Damasus would have mentioned the great rather than the small endowments of Constantine, if he had known that they had been made, since he professes to send to Jerome as complete a history as he can; and he was more likely to know of his large than of his small donations.

The skilis ben these: Damasus was preied of Ierom, that Damasus schulde write to Ierom as miche as Damasus couthe fynde in Rome what was doon fro Petir into the dai of Damasus Pope; as the epistle of Ierom sent to Damasus and the epistle of Damasus to Ierom beren witnes. And Damasus writith azen to Ierom the now seid storie, and seith that al what he couthe and myzte wite, encerche, fynde, and knowe what was doon fro Seint Petris daies into hise owne daies thanne lyuyng he hadde write in the now seid storie, which he sende to Ierom. Wherefore sithen it is not likeli that such a notable deede of endewing, if it hadde be doon bi Constantyn, schulde haue be vnknowe to Damasus succeding to Siluester withinne an hundrid of 3eeris, more than othere smale endewingis doon bi Constantyn to diuerse chirchis of which Damasus makith mensioun alredi, it folewith that if thilk greet endewing of the Pope hadde be doon bi Constantyn, Damasus wolde haue write of it, as weel as of othere smaler and lasse endewingis mad to¹ chirchis in Rome bi Constantyn.

And he must have known of them, if they had been made, because he would have succeeded to them.

An other skile is: If thilk greet endewing hadde be mad to Siluester, Damasus schulde haue be in possession of the same endewing in the same tyme in which he wroot to Ierom; and of no thing Damasus myzte bettir knowe than of the same thing which he helde in possession. Wherefore more sureli than of any other thing, which Damasus wroot to Ierom in

¹ to the, MS. (first hand).

the seid story, he wolde haue write of thilk greet; CHAP. XIII.
 endewing, if eny such greet endewing hadde thanne
 be: and sithen Damasus not so wroot, it folewith
 that noon such greet endewing was bi Constantyn
 doon.

The iiij°. principal eydence is this: If eny such
 now seid endewing was mad bi Constantyn, sum
 mensioun schulde haue be mad therof in sum funda-
 mental and credible stori or cronicle. But so it is,
 that of thilk endewing no stori or cronicle makith
 mensioun, saue the legende or storie of Siluestris gestis
 and the oon bfore seid epistle putt and ascryued vn-
 likeli to Constantyn, and tho stories and cronicles
 which taken of it and folewen it; and neither thilk
 storiyng of Siluestris gestis neither the seid epistle is
 not credible neithir worthi be allowid, as it is schewid
 bfore in the next chapiter, and as schal better be
 cleer aftir in this present chapiter. Wherefore it is
 not to be takun and to be trowid as a trouthe, that
 Constantyn made eny such seid so¹ greet endewing.

The iiij°. principal eydence is this: The worthi and
 famose and credible stori clepid *Thre departid storie*
 (mad of thre moost famose and credible storiers in
 Greek lond in the daies of Theodosie not long after
 Constantyn) makith mensioun in the laste chapiter of
 the iiij°. book, and in the iiij°. chapiter and vj°.² chapiter
 of the iiij°. book, and bi manye othere chapitris in
 the hool book, that the greet Constantyn in hise laste
 daies, whanne he trowid be nyze his deeth, made his
 testament and departid his hool empire into thre par-
 ties, and tho thre parties he biquathe to hise thre
 sones, Constantinus, Constancius, and Constans; and in
 special he assigned and biquathe the lordschip of the
 west parti, which was Rome, with al the cuntrey

The silence of
 credible histo-
 rians is a strong
 argument against
 his donation.

The *Tripartite
 History*, more-
 over, directly
 overthrows it by
 its account of
 Constantine's
 will and of the
 territories of his
 immediate suc-
 cessors.

¹ so is interlineated in a later
 hand.

² The last reference is wrong;
 perhaps c. 35 is the place intended.

CHAP. XIII. aboute out of Greek lond, to his eeldist sone Constantyn, which sone reioiced the same parti so to hem deuysid and that thoruz al his lijf, and his brother Constans next aftir him reioiced the same west parti of the hool empire, (not withstanding that Constans was zonger than Constancius,) and his brother Constancius after the deeth of hem bothe al the hool empire of Eest and West. But this schulde not haue be trewe, if the first grete Constantyn had maad the seid greet habundaunt upon him born an hond endew-ing. Forwhi thanne the sones of the same Constantyn myzten not haue regned vpon Romainys and upon peple of al the cuntre ligging west fro Greek cuntre. Wherefore thilk seid greet endewing born upon the First Constantyn was neuere doon: and therfore the seid epistle ascriued to Costantyn,¹ and also the storie of Siluestris gestis ben not but vntrewe apocrifia.

Also Boniface IV. asked Phocas to give him the Pantheon to be converted into a church (806 A.D.), which shows that Rome was not then his own.

The v^e. principal euydence is this: After the deeth of Siluester Pope bi ocl. 3eer, Boneface the liij^e. and Pope of Rome, willing forto halewe the hous in Rome clepid Panteon, and forto make it² a temple of alle martris, askide of Focas, being emperour bothe of the Eest and of the West, (that is to seie, of Greke lond and of the cuntrey ligging in west fro Greek lond,) leue forto so do; and he askid of Focas, that Focas schulde zeue to him thilk hous Panteon, that he myzte ther of make a temple of alle martris, which was bifore a temple of alle ydolis.³ But so it is, that this licence and this zifte the Pope Boneface wolde not haue askid of the Emperour Focas, namelich into so holi a purpos to be therbi sped, if Bonefas hadde be⁴ ful lord of al Rome and of alle cuntrees ligging aboute bi zifte of the Firste Constantyn, and if Focas

¹ So the MS., perhaps by a clerical error, but ?

² it is interlined by a later hand.

³ Bed. *Eccl. Hist.* lib. ii. c. 4.

⁴ be is added by later hand.

hadde not be lord therof. Wherefore the seid large endewing born upon Constantyn to be mad to Siluester Pope was neuere doon. An so eftsoone it is open that the seid epistle ascryued to Constantyn and the storie of Siluestris gestis ben not but vntrewe apocrifes.

CHAP. XIII.

The vij^e. principal evidence is this: In alle the daies fro the deeth of the Firste Constantyn in to the daies of the Firste Charlis (being king of Fraunce and emperour of Rome to gidere bi v. C. 3^eer aftir the deeth of Siluester) regniden in successioun euermore oon emperour after an other pesibili to gidere and at oonys upon the eest cuntrey of Greek lond, and upon the west cuntre of Rome, and bi west Rome, as is open ynou3 in cronicles; and how and whi fro thens¹ weren ij. emperouris oon in the West vpon Germanie and an other upon the Eest in Greek lond the cronicles declaren plainli. In whiche daies, as it is miche likeli, came yn the lordschip which popis han had vpon Rome and the cuntrees aboute liggig, and that bi graunt of the First Charles, maad bi the pope emperour of Germanie, and bi graunt of Lodowic emperour aftir the same Charles. But this my3te not haue be trewe, if the seid greet endewing born upon Constantyn hadde be doon. Wherefore truthe is that it was neuere doon.

Also from the time of Constantine's death (337 A.D.) to the time of Charlemagne (800 A.D.) the Greek emperors reigned over the whole East and West, including Rome. The temporal dominion of the popes over Rome probably came in during the reigns of the first German emperors.

Neuertheles azens thilk endewing which the seid Damasus Pope spekith in his storie writun to Ierom, and which endewing Damasus berith upon the First Constantyn to be mad to chirchis in Rome and to mynystrie in hem, y wole not replie, neither argue, neither holde and trowe, bi cause that forto ther azens holde y haue noon eydence: but certis thilk endewing maad bi Constantyn in vnmouable godis to dyuerse chirchis in Rome, of which endewing s spekith

Yet it is not denied that Constantine may have made the small endowments mentioned by Damasus; but these are quite different to those named in the forged Epistle of Constantine.

¹ *frothens*, MS., and similarly below, p. 366.

CHAP. XIII. Damasus, was not but litle and mesurable ynouȝ to tho chirchis and the mynystris, and was fer dyuers and othir and myche lasse than the greet endewing which in comoun fame is born upon the Firste Constantyn, and of which spekith the storie of Siluestris gestis and the epistle of which it is bifore spokun in the next chapiter; of which epistle Gracian takith a large porcioun in his *Summe*, Dist. xcvi., chapiter [xiv^c.] *Constantinus*. And therfore thilk storie of Siluestris gestis and the seid epistle ben needis vntrewe apocrifis.

Moreover the confirmation by the Greek emperor of the pope's election for some centuries after Silvester's death proves that the pope was not then temporal lord over Rome.

The vij^e. principal evidence in to the same purpos is this: Bi manye hundrid ȝeeris after the deeth of Pope Silvester the eleccioun of the pope mad at Rome was sende into Greke lond, where the emperour was oftir¹ and lenger to gidere than at Rome, forto be confermed or admittid of the emperour; as can be proued bi sufficient credible cronicles and stories, and in special forto seie in the cronicle of Martyn, where he spekith of Pope Vitilian.² This y seie not for this, that it so doon was weel doon; but herfore y seie it, that it hadde not be so doon, if the emperour of Greek lond hadde not be thanne in tho daies as ful lord and emperour of Rome and of alle cuntrees ligging ther aboute, but the pope had be ful al lord of Rome and of alle the cuntrees ligging aboute, as the seid born an hond endewing pretendith, and as the storie of Siluestris gestis witnessith. Wherefore folewith that no such large endewing was maad bi Constantyn, and folewith that the seid stori of Siluestris gestis and the seid epistle ben vntrewe apocrifis.

¹ *oftir*, MS.

² "Hic (Vitalianus) nuncios suos direxit ad imperatorem juxta consuetudinem significans de sua ordinatione. Qui nuncii postquam

reverenter fuissent recepti, renovatis Romanæ ecclesiæ privilegiis, redierunt." Mart. Polon. *Chron.* A.D. 657.

If eny man wole be aboute forto defende the seid legend or writing of Siluestris gestis bi it what therof Pope Gelasie writith in his epistle, of which epistle a greet part Gracian rehercith in his *Summe*, Dist. xv^o, chapiter [iii^e.] *Sancta Romana*, y seie to him azenward thus: Loke thou bettir upon the processe of Gelasie in the now alleggid place, and thou schalt fynde that he neither approueth, neither reproueth, neither confermeth, neither infermeth¹ the seid writingis of Siluestris gestis, but he makith mensioun of hem, and seith how men doon aboute hem; and thanne leeueth hem, as he fonde hem withoute eny deede of auctorite bisett upon hem.² And therfore he dooth no thing there azens me.

CHAP. XIII.
The Acts of Silvester not confirmed by the Decretal Epistle of Gelasius.

The viij^o. principal euydence into the same purpos is this: In the seid epistle putt to grete Constantyn it is conteyned, that anoon withinne iiij. daies after that Constantyn was baptisid of Siluester Pope, Constantyn schulde seie that he wolde translate his empire fro the empire of Seint Petris successour, and Constantyn seide that therfore he wolde go into the Greek cuntre, and wolde bilde a newe citee for his empire at Bizancium in Greke lond;³ but this is vn-trewe. For her azens witnessith and writith *The thre departid storie* in the ij^o. book the xvij^o. chapiter, where is plein storie azens this. For Constantyn purposid forto haue bildid his citee in an othir place⁴

Finally the *Tripartite History* proves the Epistle of Constantine to be spurious by the false account which it gives of the founding of Constantinople.

¹ A later hand needlessly alters into *infirmeth*.

² "Item actus B. Silvestri Apostolicæ sedis Præsulis, licet ejus qui conscripsit nomen ignoremus a multis tamen in urbe Roma Catholicis legi cognovimus et pro antiquo usu multæ hoc imitantur ecclesiæ." Decret. Gelas. ap. Grat. Decret. l. c. But this production itself, first quoted in the ninth cen-

tury, is a forgery, from the anvil of Isidore, as it appears. See Cave *Hist. Lit.* s. v. Gelasius.

³ See Coleti, *Concil.* tom. i. p. 1572.

⁴ "Veniens ad campum ante Ilium positum juxta Hellespontum super Ajacis tumulum . . . civitatem designavit, portasque fecit quæ hactenus videntur à navigantibus. Hæc agente per noctem Deus apparuit," &c. *Hist. Trip.* lib. ii. c. 18.

CHAP. XIII.

thanne at Bizans, and he biganne in so ferforth that touris weren there seen bi many ȝeeris aftir: but bi warnyng in his sleep he turned his purpos and biganne of the newe his citee at Bizant, which newe citee he clepid sumwhat aftir his own name Constantynopil, and wolde that it schulde be as a newe Rome. And herfore the seid epistle is an vntrewe apocrife, namelich sithen historiis, dwelling in thilk same cuntre and soone after the deede doon, kouthen knowe better the treuthe of the deede than othere men dwelling ferther fro thens in rombe.

The arguments here put briefly will be better understood by an examination into history.

Thus miche is ynouȝ (as here) for answer to the iiij°. semyng skile, sett bifore in the viij°. chapitre of this present iij°. partie. What is seid ouer schortli here for answer to the seid iiij°. semyng skile mai be seen in more lengthe to be trewe, if the reder of this wole encerche famose stories and cronicles diligentli.¹

xiiij. CHAPITER.

THE FIFTH ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS AGAINST ENDOWMENTS ANSWERED. The court-steward there named is really not the bishop's or abbot's steward, though often so called in popular language, but the king's, who appoints him judge in causes of life and death, while the bishop or abbot

To the v°. semyng skile it is to be seid, that thilk stiward, of which it is spoken in the v°. skile, iugith not in the bischopis name or stide, or in the abbotis name or stide; thouȝ the avauntage and the forfeite iustli comyng bi thilk iugement be ȝouun to thilk bischop or to thilk abbot; but the seid ²stiward iugith in the kingis name and in the kingis stide, which comyttith to thilk stiward power forto sitte and knowe and iuge in thilk cause and mater of deeth. And so the king iugith to deeth and executith into

¹ This paragraph follows the end of the next but one preceding (after the words *agens me*) in the MS. Pecoek, no doubt, wrote his eighth

argument after he had finished the chapter, and forgot to make the necessary transposition.

² *seid* is added by a later hand.

deeth, and this stiward vndir the king, and othere officers and executers vndir the stiward; and alle thei doon in the name and in auctorite and power and stide of the king, so comytting to the stiward, and that the stiward comytte ferther to othere. For whiche treuthe now seid the better to be vndirstonde, it is to wite that al iuging into deeth and al executing of thilk iugement cometh fro the king and fro his auctorite and power, and not but from him and bi him; so that it is not leeful that eny man iuge into deeth or slee, but he aloon, or thilk persoon to whom he commyttith. And for as miche as it were ouer cumberose to his persoon and not moost profitable to the comounte, that the king schulde sitte and iuge in ech cause of deeth and in ech other cause of wrong, therefore he committith his power and auctorite to temporal lordis vndir him forto execute it upon certein noumbis of peplis assigned to hem, and 3eueth power to tho lordis hem for to comytte ferthir to stiwardis vndir hem; and he 3eueth the avauntagis, (as forfetis, eschetis, and mercimentis, and fynys,) to tho lordis for her labour. But whanne it is so, that the king 3eueth to a bischop or to an abbot into almes or into sum other good deede therbi to be doon the now seid avauntage, which may come honestli and iustli to the king, he comittith not to the same bischop or abbot power forto sitte and knowe and iuge in the court whos avauntage the king 3eueth to the bischop or abbot; but the king comyttith the power forto sitte, knowe, and iuge to a stiward which in the kingis name schal sitte and iuge and condempne into deeth and execute the sentence or comytte ferther thilk execucioun to othere vndir him in the kingis name; thouȝ the king graunte and ordeyne that the stiward bringe to the bisschop or abbot al the avauntage of the court, which the same stiward schulde iustli bringe to the king him silf, if the king

CHAP. XIV.

by the king's
grant receives
the court-fines.
Similar instances
of the misuse of
language quoted.

CHAP. XIV.

hadde not zeuen it to the bischop or abbot. And so, forto speke in veri trewe propir speche, this stiward is not the bischopis or the abbotis stiward, but he is the kingis stiward; neither this court is the bischopis court, namelich in tho pointis and iugementis to which¹ deeth longith; but it is ther yn the kingis court; thouz in comoun speche vnpropirli takun it is woned be seid that thilk stiward is the bischopis stiward or abbotis stiward, and that he holdith the bischopis court or the abbotis court; lijk as it is woned bi vnpropre speche, whanne a parisch chirche is aproprid to an abbey of nunnys, forto seie that the abbas is persoun of thilk chirche, or the conuent or the abbey is persoun of thilk chirch, and the vikir sett in thilk chirche is vikir of the abbas or vikir of the abbey; which speche is no more trewe in propre maner of vndirstonding than were forto seie that the brigge of Londoun were persoun of a parisch chirch, and that the vikir sett in thilk chirch were vikir of the brigge, if alle the fruytis of thilk chirche were assigned and zouun into almes forto meyntene and repare² the brigge of Londoun, so that a sufficient porcoun of the same fruytis were left to a preest forto bere sufficientli the cure. But verrili and propirli to speke the seid womman or wommen be not persouns and prelati to men, (for it were azens the teching of Poul,) and the vikir sett in thilk chirche is vikir of the bischop or vikir of the persoun which was there bfore the appropriacioun, or of the persoun which schulde be there, if thilk appropriacioun not were: so that he is not the viker of the abbas or abbey, thouz the abbas or abbey be mad patroun for to chese him and presente him to the bischop, as it is grauntid to hem that thei mowe chese and presente men to the

¹ whichich, MS.| ² to repare, MS. (first hand).

bischof forto be persouns in othere not appropriid chirchis, euen as lay men mowe presente. In lijk maner, thouz the king graunte that the bischof or abbot haue the labour forto aspie and gete a man which can and wole iustli occupie the office of a stiward in the seid court, namelich in causis of deeth; zit what euer man the bischof or abbot so chesith, the king ther with and ther yn committith his power to the same person so chosun, and he ouzte not but in an vnpropre maner of speche be clepid (namelich in maters of deeth) to be stiward of the bischof or of the abbot, but of the king.

And sithen it is so, that as leeful and as honest it is the bischof or the abbot for to receyue the seid avauntage fro the seid stiwardis hondis, as forto abide into tyme the king had receyued it of the stiward, and thanne to receyue it of the kingis hondis, and more ese it is and lasse cost to receyue it of the stiward at next than of the king at next: therfore it is not to be blamed bischopis and abbotis forto holde and haue avauntagis of courtis and of causis¹ stretching into deeth, which the v^e. semying skile is aboute forto proue be vniust. For as it is iust ynou; and honest the king forto receyue suche eschetis and forfeitis comyng bi iust deeth of a malefactour, so it is iust and honest ynou; bischopis or abbotis to haue the same bi zifte to hem mad therof bi the king. And thus miche is ynou; for answeere to the v^e. semying skile.

Since the bishop may as lawfully and more easily receive fines, consequent on the death of a criminal, of the steward immediately than of the king immediately, he may justly take such fines. For they are lawful, and the king may dispose of them as he pleases.

Now at the laste eende of al this afore going defense mad for the iij^e. principal gouernaunce, that knyztis and squyeris, gentil men, and othere louzer comuneris han no caus forto grucche and be displeid, that the clergie (religiose and not religiose) ben so richeli

Temporal lords have no reason to be displeased with the endowments of the clergy, for much of the country is in a more civilized state than it would otherwise be.

¹ and of causis is added by a later hand.

CHAP. XIV. endewid as thei ben, namelich in the rewme of Ynglond, me thinkith this, that y schal now seie, schulde miche¹ move hem. The treuthe is, that the tenementis and alle the possessiouns with her purtenauncis, which the clergie (religiose or not religiose) holden and hauen, is better meintened and susteyned and reparid and kept fro falling into nouzt and into wildirnes, than if the same tenementis and possessiouns with her purtenauncis weren in the hondis of grete lordis or of knyztis or of squyeris; as experience it² wel schewith, namelich in the rewme of Ynglond, for othere rewmes y haue not seen; and also resoun confermeth the same, sithen what is rewlid and carid for of manye to gidere muste be better reulid than it which is reulid and carid fore oonli of oon.

Ecclesiastics are also easier landlords than laymen.

Ferthermore the tenauntis, occupiying the tenementis and possessiouns with purtenauncis vndir the clergie, ben esilier tretid, lasse disesid, and not greeued bi extorcoun, as thei schulden be, if thei helden the same tenementis and possessiouns of temporal lordis or of knyztis and squyers, as also experience weel schewith.

And they spend their revenues more advantageously for the community.

And thanne ferther the clergie, namelich religiose,³ beren not into her graues with hem the rentis whiche thei so endewid receyuen of her possessiouns, neither thei spenden therof more than with ese and withoute curiose and coostiose faar gooth into her bodies, and than wher with thei ben poorli ynouȝ clothid and couered for al the labour which thei maken bi nyztis and bi daies in preiying and preising and in keping the wey of her religioun: and the ouerplus being herto and to the costis of her reparaciouns is spend upon worthi gentil men leerned in lawe for menta-

¹ miche is interlineated by a later hand.

² it is interlineated by a later hand.

³ the religiose, MS. (first hand).

naunces of her ríztis, and upon knyztis and squyers CHAP. XIV.
and othere louzer¹ comuneris into her honest chering
and weel fare and into nurisching of frendschip and
of loue, and miche therof gooth into almes of poor
men. Where azenward, if all this same receit schulde
come into the hondis of grete lordis or of knyztis, it
schulde not be so weel spend; but it schulde be spend
in werre or fíztig or in reueling, as sopers in nyztis
at tauernes, and in costiose horsis, and in wantowne
and nyse disgisingis of araies, (and so forth of manye
othere staryng² gouernauncis, semyng summe wijlde
woode,) as othere men therto taking heed mowen weel
ynouȝ aspie. Wherefore ech weel avised man, consider-
ing bi lenger consideracioun what is now here in this
schort rehercel spokun, schulde and ouȝte bi resoun
take rízt weel aworth and be plesid, (whether he be
knyzt, squyer, gentelman, zoman, or louzer,) that the
clergie (bothe religiose and othere not religiose) reioice
her seid endewing vnmouable, rather than the seid
endewing were had in the lay mennys hondis, and bi
proces of tyme schulde come into the hondis of tem-
poral lordis. And here yn y eende the proof of the
ij^o. principal conclusioun of this present iij^o. partie.

The iij^o. principal conclusioun of this present iij^o.
partie is this: The iij^o. principal gouernaunce sett in
the first chapter of this present iij^o. partie is leeful.
That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: Ech
persoonis gouernaunce, which Holi Scripture forbedith
not, doom of resoun forbedith not, mannis lawe for-
bedith not, is leeful and not worthi be vndirnome and
blamed. But so it is, that neither Holi Scripture,
neither doom of resoun, neither mannis lawe forbedith
preestis of the Newe Testament forto haue in her pro-
pre lordschip and in comoun lordschip to gidere with

THE THIRD
CONCLUSION IN
DEFENCE OF THE
POSSESSIONS OF
THE CLERGY.
Church-endow-
ments are lawful.
Whatever is not
forbidden by
Scripture, reason,
or human enact-
ment is lawful;
but none of these
forbid the clergy
to possess lands:
therefore it is
lawful for the
clergy to possess
them.

¹ louze, MS. (first hand).

| ² staryng is added by a later hand.

CHAP. XIV.

othere persoones [of] housis and feeldis, namelich vttilri so ferforth that neither lasse neither more preestis haue eny such lordschip. Wherfore folewith, that preestis to¹ haue lordschip of housis and feeldis, namelich in sum mesure and quantite, is leeful ynouȝ.

The first premis of this syllogism is self-evident; the second has been already proved: therefore the conclusion is true.

The firste premysse or membre of this argument muste nedis be grauntid. Forwhi ech gouernaunce is leeful which is not forbode, sithen ech yuel gouernaunce is forbode, and no forbode is mad saue bi lawe of Scripture, lawe of kinde, (which is doom of resoun,) and lawe of man: and therefore ech gouernaunce of eny men, which is not forbodun bi Holi Scripture, or bi doom of resoun, or bi mannis lawe is needisli leeful. The ij^o. premisse of this same argument is sufficientli proued to be trewe bi the hool processe bigunne bifore in this iij. partie soone aftir the bigynnyng of the first chapter, and streijt along hidir to. Wherfore the conclusioun of this argument muste needis be trewe.

Explanation of certain terms and truths of logic, when an argument is formal and expressed fully.

Forwhi the kinde of euery good argument of ij. premissis or ij. proposiciouns dryuyng out from hem and concluding fro hem the iij^o. proposicioun, is this; that if euereither of the ij. premissis ben trewe, the iij^o. proposicioun concludid bi hem and out of hem muste needis be trewe. Ensaumplis herof ben these. For that this argument is good and formal: "Ech man is now at the chirche; mi fader is a man; eke thanne "mi fader is now at the chirche:"—therefore if the first premysse or proposicioun of this argument be trewe, which is this, that "ech man is now at the chirche," and if therewith also the ij^o. premysse be trewe, that "mi fadir is a man," sotheli needis cost, who wole or wole² not, the conclusioun of the same argument

¹ to is interlineated in a later hand.

² who wole, MS. (first hand).

muste needis be trewe, which is this, "my fader is
 " now at the chirche." And in lijk maner it is of
 euery formal argument mad of ij. proposiciouns or ij.
 resouns concluding out of hem the iij^e. proposicioun or
 resoun,¹ as thus: "Ech man is a synner; y am a man;
 " eke thanne y am a synner:" "No man is without a
 " bodi; the king is a man; eke thanne the king is not
 " without a bodi;" and so forth lijk it is in alle wel
 and formali² mad argumentis mad of ij. proposiciouns
 concluding and driving out of hem the iij^e.³ And fer-
 thermore it is to wite, that in ech such now seid argu-
 ment the ij. proposiciouns or spechis or resouns, so as
 is now seid concluding and dryving out of hem the
 iij^e. proposicion, speche, or resoun, ben clepid ij. pre-
 missis, or the firste and ij^e. premysse of the argument;
 and the iij^e. proposicioun, speche, or resoun driuen out
 and concludid forth bi hem and fro hem is clepid the
 conclusioun of the argument.

And ferther, euen as whanne a formali mad argument And when it is
 if expressed shortly
 is mad of ij. premysis concluding a conclusioun, if
 bothe premysis ben trewe, the conclusioun needis is
 trewe; so whanne an argument is mad schortli, so that
 the oon premisse is expressid in which the gretter
 strengthe of the argument lithe, and the other pre-
 mysse is stille vnspokun for schortnes; 3it, if thilk oon
 premysse expressid be trewe, needis muste the con-
 clusioun be trewe. Forwhi out of a treuthe folewith
 not a falshede, but out of treuthe folewith neuer eny
 thing saue treuthe; for ellis ther were no way to proue
 bi it eny thing be trewe, if a falshede myzte be con-
 cludid in a formal argument fro a treuthe, as weel as

¹ *resoun* is interlineated in a later hand.

² *formal*, MS.

³ This sentence runs very clumsily. Perhaps we should place a

full stop after *so forth*, and cancel all the rest of the sentence, which is a mere repetition of what has just preceded.

CHAP. XIV.

a treuthe may be concludid in a formal argument fro a treuthe. And therefore sithen this schort argument is formal: "Robyn rode without stiropis, eke thanne his "legge lollid," it muste nedis be that, if the premysse be trewe, that the conclusioun be trewe. And for that this argument is formal: "This thing is miche briȝte "and ful white, eke thanne he mai be seen;" ther fore if the premysse be trewe, the conclusioun is ther with trewe. And for that this argument is formal: "Noman lackith a bodi, eke thanne noman is without "a place long and brood:" ther fore if the premysse be grantid of eny man, he ouȝte nedis graunte the conclusioun.

The three conclusions now proved would be a sufficient vindication of church-endowments: yet for the more satisfaction of the reader three more shall be added.

Certis thouȝ no more were for to¹ iustifie the iij^e. seid principal gouernaunce than the profits of the thre next bfore going principal conclusiouns fro the bigynnyng of this present iij^e. parti hidir to, thei were sufficient forto iustifie the same seid iij^e. principal gouernaunce. Forwhi what schulde lette eny gouernaunce to be doon, if neither Holi Scripture, neither doom of cleer resoun, neither mennys lawis letten it to be don? Neuerthelatif sumwhat more into the² iustifying of the same iij^e. principal gouernaunce schal be set therto bi the iij.³ next conclusiouns now aftir comyng.

XV. CHAPTER.

THE FOURTH CONCLUSION. Scripture allows church-endowments, and that in plenty. For it well allows every

THE iij^e. principal conclusioun of this present iij^e. partie is this: Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament allowith⁴ the iij^e. ofte seid principal gouernaunce, that is to seie, preestis forto haue vnmouable posses-

¹ *to* is interlineated in a later (?) hand.

² *the* is interlineated in a later hand.

³ Pecock has in fact added *five*.

⁴ *allowith and approueth*, MS. (first hand).

siouns and that in greete plente. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: What euer deede eny Apostle or his writing allowith to be in a preestis moral conuersacioun, thilk same deede is not azens resoun to be in the same preestis moral conuersacioun; for ellis the Apostle and his writing schulde reule azens resoun, which is not to be grauntid. But so it is, that this deede, a preest and ech other Cristen man forto frely receyue, take, and vce alle maners of metis and alle maners of drinkis into his sufficiencye with thankigis to God Holi Writt weel allowith, as it is open i°. Thim. iiij°. ē., and of the ouer plus make doole to othere hauyng therto nede, as it is writun [Luk xj°. ē.]:¹ *The ouer plus zeus ze into almes.*

CHAP. XV.

priest to enjoy
richly every
creature of God,
and to give alms
of his abundance.

Also this deede, a preest forto freli take and chese of alle maidens to him a wijf, so that he wedde not of the newe eftsoone, if his first wijf die him lyuyng, and forto bigete children, and forto haue meyne and holde house, and forto nurische and bringe up hise children, and forto reule his wijf, meyne, and children, and forto purueie for hem was allowid of Poul, and bi lijk skile of the othere Apostlis, as is open of Poul bi what is writun i°. Cor. vij°. ē. in the bigynnyng, where he spekith generali to alle Cristen persoones of Corinthe, and therefore to preestis as to other, i°. Thim. iiij°. ē. and Tite i°. ē., in the vnderstanding which therupon was had in Poulis daies and fro² Poulis daies into this dai thoruz al Grece, as the deede proueth weel; and also in the vnderstanding which the West Chirche hadde and took upon the same wordis fro the daies of Petir and Poul into the daies of Austyn, as the deedis of preestis in the West Chirche into the

Scripture allows
moreover, the
marriage of the
clergy, as the
Eastern Church
also now does
and the ancient
Western Church
did.

¹ A space left in the MS. for the reference. Wiclif's (later) version of Luke xi. 41, substantially agrees:

Nethes that that is ouer plus zeus ze almes.

² This and the three preceding words are added in a later hand.

CHAP. XV.

daies of Austyn beren mensioun,¹ with *The threfold stori*² speking of the counseil of Nice, and with it that the seid Austin spekith of preestis weddid in hise daies;³ thouȝ it be trewe with al this that Poul, i^e. Thim. v^e. c., counseilid to Thimothe, that he schulde kepe him silf chaast.

Scripture likewise allows a bishop to have so much of moveable possessions as will support both himself and others. The cases of Timothy and Paul considered.

Also this deede, a preest forto haue in possessioun movable godis how miche euer he mai honestli and ríztli come to, (so that he be not gleymed with ouer myche loue to it,) and forto therof take ynouȝ, and of the ouer plus make disposicioun into almes is allowid bi Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament. Forwhi how ellis schulde Bischof Thimothe haue performed what Poul wolde him to performe i^e. Thim. v^e. c., that Thimothe schulde worschipe, (that is to seie, finde and nurische,) tho wommen of lxth. winter age, whiche aftir hir husbondis deethis wolden for deuocioun lyue chaast? And sithen Poul and his felawschip and disciplis being conuersaunt with him lyueden bi the ȝiftis and sondis, which dyuerse chirchis ȝauen and senden to him where that he were, as he witnessith him silf in hise epistlis, except that in summe cuntrees (as in Achaia) he forbare forto so receyue, that he wolde therbi confounde tho prechers, whiche weren glad forto into coueitouse maner receiue;—how ellis mizte this be vsid of dyuerse chirchis and comountees forto sende to Poul, and that Poul schulde receyue the sondis of hem, but if it hadde be so ful ofte that tho chirchis and comountees senden ful ofte, and Poul

¹ The truth of this assertion appears very evidently from a contemporary of Augustine: "Quasi non hodie quoque plurimi sacerdotes habeant matrimonia." S. Hieron. *adv. Jovin.* lib. i. c. 23. (tom. ii. p. 273. Ed. Vall.)

² See *Hist. Tripert.* lib. ii. c. xiv.

for an account of the proceedings of Paphnutius in that council.

³ See *Cod. Eccl. Afric.* can. xxv., where Augustine mentions the "uxores" of bishops, priests, and deacons. It is hard to say what particular passage Pecock may have referred to.

receyued bi her sondis ful ofte more than was neces-
sarie to him and to hise felaschip and hise disciplis,
so that thei hadden ful ofte so miche of movable godis,
that thei hadden cause forto ther with do almes to
poor and nedy persoones? Wherefore alle these iij.
kindis of deedis ben allowid¹ of Holi Scripture, 3he,
and ben resonable and not azens resoun to be in
preestis moral gouernaunce.

And thanne ferther thus: Al the cause assignable
whi it schulde be azens Scripture or azens resoun a
preest forto haue eny vnmovable godis, if it were
azens Scripture or resoun, is this: That bi the hauyng
of thilk godis he schulde be maad ouer thouztful and
ouer carkful and ouermyche louyng toward hem, and
ther bi he schulde be mad ouer myche necligent forto
attende to goostli thingis, and forto loue God and
goostli thingis. And noon other cause is therfore
assignable saue this. But so it is, that this cause,
(that is to seie, this seid thouzt, this seid cark, and
caring, and attendaunce,) is miche more in a man for
that that he hath wijf² and children and household
needis 3eerli and daili to be costioseli founde, and for
that he hath not but mouable godis oonli without the
suerte of contynuaunce, (which suerte myzte be had bi
vnmovable godis, if thei weren had,) than thilk cark
is in a man which hath vnmovable godis in so greet
plente, that he mai avorthi to haue discrete officers at
fulle vndir him, and that he mai avorthi forto lese
ynou3 and haue ynou3, rather than for to be ouer
bisi and ouer thouztful forto kepe and saue al, and
therwith is chaast, and lackith wijf and children, and
al the gleyne, loue, and delectacions whiche violentli
comen anentis his wijf and hise children. Wherefore if
it be with the alleggid Scripture or resoun, that a

Corollary from
these facts. The
only argument
against the un-
moveable posses-
sions of the clergy
arises from the
danger of care
and worldliness
coming by them.
But this danger
is greater when
the clergy have
wives and move-
able, i.e., inse-
cure goods; both
which are allow-
ed by Scripture:
consequently, &
fortiori, Scrip-
ture allows un-
moveable posses-
sions to an un-
married clergy.

¹ *approved and allowid*, MS. (first hand). | ² *a wijf*, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. XV.

preest mai haue a wijf, children, and household without vnmouable possessioun, miche rather it is with the same now alleggid Scripture and resoun, that a preest mai haue vnmovable possessiouns in greet plente (and rather in greet plente than in scant sufficiency), with chastite, and so withoute wijf and children, and folewingli withoute the greet cark falling to him for hem.

This conclusion may also be proved by a process similar to that by which another conclusion has been already proved.

Also this present iiij^e. conclusion mai be proued bi a processe of iij. supposiciouns, and of an argument formed vpon hem toward the eende of the first parti in this present book;¹ and for as miche as it is not fer fro this present place, therefore y wole not thilk processe here azen of the newe reherce.

THE FIFTH CONCLUSION. Reason sanctions the endowment of the clergy. The same arguments apply here that apply to the fourth conclusion.

The v^e. principal conclusioun in this iij^e. principal parti is this: Doom of cleerli disposid resoun in kinde allowith and approueth the iij^e. principal gouernaunce sett in the bigynnyng of this present iij^e. partie. That this conclusioun is trewe mai be proued bi alle tho same argumentis bi which the next iiij^e. principal conclusioun is proued. For thouz tho argumentis goon vpon the witnessing of Holi Scripture, zit in al it Holi Scripture dooth not ellis than witnesse what doom of resoun iugith in allowing and approuyng; and therefore alle tho same seid² argumentis seruen lijk weel for proof of the iiij^e. conclusioun and for proof of the v^e. conclusioun.

THE SIXTH CONCLUSION. Church-endowments are in the strictest sense lawful. Whatever Scripture and reason approve is in the strictest sense lawful, and it has been proved that they both approve of

The vj^e. conclusioun is this: The seid iij^e. principal gouernaunce is leeful in propriest maner of leefulnes. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: Ech gouernaunce, which Holi Scripture or doom of cleer reson allowith and approueth, is leeful in propriest maner of leefulnes. But so it is, that Holi Scripture and also doom of cleer resoun allowen and approuen

¹ See Part I. c. xix.

² *seid* is added in the margin by a later hand.

the iij°. seid principal gouernaunce. Wherefore folewith CHAP. XV.
 needis, that the seid iij°. principal gouernaunce is in church-endow-
 propriest maner leeful. ments.

The vij°. conclusioun is this: The iij°. seid principal THE SEVENTH
 gouernaunce is a gouernannc of Goddis lawe. This CONCLUSION.
 conclusioun schal be proued thus: Ech gouernance, Church-endow-
 which is leeful and allowid and approued bi Holi ments are an or-
 Scripture of the Newe Testament and bi doom of dinance of God's
 cleer resoun, is a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe and of law. For it has
 the Newe Testament, as it is vndoutabili proued in been shown that
 manye placis of my writingis, namelich in *The iust* they are lawful
apprising of Holi Scripture. But so it is, that the and approved by
 iij°. seid principal gouernaunce is leeful bi the next Scripture and
 bifore going iij°. principal conclusioun, and he is al- reason, i.e., that
 lowid and approued by Holi Scripture of the Newe they are an ordi-
 Testament and bi doom of cleer resoun, as prouen nance of God's
 weel the next bifore going iiij°. and v°. principal con- law.
 clusiouns. Wherefore thilk iij°. gouernaunce is a gouer-
 naunce of Goddis lawe and of the Newe Testament.

The viij°. principal conclusioun is this: It is not THE EIGHTH
 synne a man forto ensauple bi deede to othere men CONCLUSION.
 the iij°. seid principal gouernaunce. That this con- It is not a sin to
 clusioun is trewe, y proue thus: It is not synne a set an example
 man forto ensauple bi his deede to othere men¹ a to others of re-
 deede and a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe and of the taining church-
 Newe Testament. But so it is, that the iij°. seid prin- endowments.
 cipal gouernaunce is a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe This conclusion
 and of the Newe Testament, as proueth weel the next is proved by a simi-
 bifore going vj°. principal conclusioun. Wherefore it is lar process.
 not synne a man forto ensauple bi his deede to
 othere men the iij°. seid principal gouernaunce.

¹ to othere men is added by a later hand in the margin, after which a different hand (exceedingly similar to that of the original scribe, if not identical with it,) has written a deede; the whole being marked

with a red line, probably by the same hand that illuminated the MS. This tends to show that the corrections of the MS. are (in part at least) scarcely later than the original text.

xvj. CHAPITER.

Some men hold
that church-
endowments are
lawful, but that
if the clergy use
them viciously,
they may be dis-
possessed of
them, they still
remaining in
their offices.

FOR as myche as fro the bigynnyng of this present
ijj°. partie hidir to it is procedid that sufficient proof
is mad this to be trewe, that preestis and othere
clerkis mowen be endewid with temporal vnmouable
possessiouns without eny ther of wernyng founde in
Holi Scripture or in resoun, zhe, and with therto
consenting Scripture and resoun; and so weel and so
firmeli and stabili and openli it is proued and so weel
to the euydencis of the contrarie partie it is answerid,
and so cleerli the euydencis ben assoilid, that noman
al the bifore going processe reding and vndirstonding
may opene his mouth forto holde the errour, which
bifore in the bigynnyng of the firste chapiter in this
present ijj°. partie is rehercid, and is bi al the bifore
going processe hidir to vnaçenseiabili vnproued and
theryn worthili reproued;—therfore summen perceyuyng
al this consenten weel and graunten, that preestis
and othere clerkis mowen weel withoute weernyng of
Holi Scripture and of resoun, zhe, and bi Scripture
and bi resoun, be endewid with temporal and vnmou-
able godis forto do and vse and execute the better
her goostli officis; but thei holden herwith this con-
clusioun, that if bischopis or other preestis or othere
louzer clerkis so endewid lyuen not vertuoseli, as thei
schulden lyue, with thilk seid temporal godis, but
amys vsen tho godis¹ vicioseli, tho same godis mowen
iustli be take away fro hem, so that preestis and
othere clerkis mowen iustli be vnpossessyd, (that is to
seie, mowen iustli be putt out of possesioun of the
same godis,) with this that thei abide stille in her
statis and officis of bischophode or louzer preesthode
or louzer clerkhode, in which thei weren bifore,

¹ *tho temporal godis*, MS. (first hand).

whanne thei weren in possessioun of the same vn- CHAP. XVI.
movable possessiouns.

And fethermore thei holden this ij^e. conclusioun, They also hold, that if the clergy do not duly perform their duties, their tithes, &c. may justly be withdrawn by their people.
that if eny bischop, preest, or clerk do not dewli the werkis of his office anentis his peple ouer whom he is sett and putt, the same peple mowe iustli withdrawe¹ and azenholde the tithis and offringis and alle othere paymentis of rentis and dewtees, with whiche the same seid bischopis, preestis, and othere louzer clerkis ben for hem and her successouris endewid.

Wherefore it is now next to be encerchid whether this holding be trewe or not trewe. Into which eende, entent, and purpos y schal here sett forth xj. open trouthis, bi whiche it schal be knowe sureli, whethir the now rehercid conclusions and opinions ben trewe or no. These opinions shall be examined, and tested by the application of eleven manifest truths.

The firste trouthe is this: Noman ouzte be iuge in his owne cause which he hath anentis his neiȝbour, neither eny man ouzte be redresser of the wrong which his neiȝbour dooth to him, but if he him silf be the higest iuge of alle othere, and hath no iuge in erthe aboue him, bi whom his cause or wrong mai be iugid and redressid. Forwhi, if eny man or if many men schulden be iugis in her owne causis had bitwixe hem and othere men, God wolde not haue ordeyned in the temporal parti kingis and princis and dukis and othere powers vndir hem to be for to heere and iuge causis and redresse wrongis, of whom Poul spekith, Rom. xiiij^e. c̃., and i^e. Cor. vj^e. c̃., and i^e. Thim. ij^e.² c̃., and Peter spekith, i^e. Pet. ij^e. c̃. Neither God wolde haue ordeyned in the clergie to be bischopis aboue the louzer preestis, and archebischopis aboue bischopis, and the pope to be aboue alle the othere, as it is proued aftir in the iiij^e. parti of this THE FIRST TRUTH. No one should be judge in his own cause, unless he be the highest judge. Proof of this truth from Scripture and experience in regard both to laity and clergy.

¹ w^t drawe, MS. (without hyphen). | ² i^e, MS.

CHAP. XVI.

book that God so ordeyned, or at the leest he wolde it so be ordeyned, and as it is proued that in the tyme of the Apostlis it was so sett forth in vce and executing. Forwhi if eny man schulde haue had power forto be iuge in his owne cause anentis his neizbour, it hadde be waast forto haue mad bothe in the clergie and in the layfe suche now seid iugis; and alle men witen weel that neither God neither the Apostlis wolden ordeyne eny waast ordinaunce, or consente to eny waast ordinaunce bi othere to be mad. Also surist experience schewith bi this that bifallith weel nyȝ in ech day bifore iugis bitwixe parties pleding, how myche and how manye and grete innumerable wrongis schulden be doon, holden, and menteyned for riztis and vnwrongingis, and how many therbi folewingli perpetual strifis and debatis and fiztingis and othere passing grete myschefis schulden be multiplied, if men schulden be iugis in her owne causis and querelis, whiche fallen bitwixe hem and her neizboris. And therefore thei ouȝten not so be in eny wise. And so for a ful greet good and nede God willid to be ordeyned bothe in the clergijs side and in the lay parties side iugis louȝer and hiȝer up into the hiȝest, that if the louȝer iuge procede not riztli, that the parti iugid amys of him mai compleyne to the hiȝer iuge; and so eftsoone fro the hiȝer, if nede be, into tyme to come to the hiȝest; and if he there at the presence of the hiȝest iuge suffre wrong, take he it aworth in pacience as a thing irremediable bi man, and God schal therfore him quyte.

THE SECOND TRUTH. Two kinds of payment are customary among men: some are made in order to assist a man to discharge an office, which he has taken on himself, as travelling expenses are paid

The ij. trouthe is this: Among temporal godis, whiche men ben woned for to paie to othere men, summe ben to be paid as fynding or helping to the receyuers, that the receyuers, foundun and holpun bi the temporal godis of hem receyued, do and wirche and execute summe certein officis or summe certein deedis, to come into whiche thei ben sett and ordeyned,

and whiche thei han take vpon hem forto do, wirche, and execute; as it is whanne money is take and paied to a messanger forto ride or go into a fer cuntre, that he fynde to him silf and his hors the costis and expensis whiche he muste make in thilk iorney, and withoute which money he mai not make thilk iorney weel, or ellis withoute which so to be bifore paied he schal make his iorney the wors; and as it is whanne money is paied to a man forto go and fynde him silf and his hors, that he be an hayward or an ouerseer thoruz al an haruest cesoun vpon repe men, that thei repe biaili and clenli. And summe othere temporal godis ben to be paied as meede and reward to the receyuers for the doing, wirching, or executing passid of sum office or deede, in to which thei weren sett and ordeyned, and which thei token vpon hem for to do, wirche, and execute; as it is whanne money is paied to the bifore seid messanger for his traueil, which he made in the same seid iorney; and as it is whanne money is paied to a repe man for his dai labour in the haruest feeld, or to a laborer in a vyne gardein for his day labour in the same vyne gardein. This trouthe is so open that he nedith not be proued.

CHAP. XVI.

to an agent; some are given by way of remuneration, as when the same agent is paid for his trouble as agent.

The ij^e. trouthe is this: Mouable and vnmouable temporal godis mowen be ȝouun not oonli to oon persoon in the firste maner of the ij^e. trouthe, and forto not descende ferther bi the same ȝeuyng into the successouris of the same persoon; but also mouable and vnmouable temporal godis nowen be ȝouun in the first maner of the ij^e. trouthe to a man and to hise successouris perpetueli, that not oonli he but that he and alle his successouris be foundun and holpun therbi forto do, wirche, and execute sum office or deede, as withoute which thei myȝten not do, wirche, or execute the same dede, or at the leest not so weel do, wirche, or execute the same deede. This treuthe

THE THIRD TRUTH. Payments of the first kind may be instituted so as to terminate with the first person thereby assisted, or they may be continued to his successors for ever. Against either of these methods of payment no sort of just objection can be made.

CHAP. XVI.

is also so open that he nedith no proof, but if it be this: Ech gouernaunce is doable ynouȝ azens which is no lett founde, neither bi resoun, neither bi Holi Scripture, neither bi eny other allowable wey.

THE FOURTH TRUTH. Payments of the second kind may be withheld, when the work for which they are made is not performed.

The iiij^e. trouthe is this: Whanne money or other temporal good mouable or vnmovable is to be paied in the ij^e. maner of the ij^e. trouthe, it may iustli be restreyned and aȝen holde fro payyng, in caas that the deede be not do for whos performyng the same money is to be paied and ȝouun. Forwhi thilk monei is to be paied as reward and meede to the receyuer for the doing or laboring aboute the same deede, and a reward or meede folewith aftir the deede for which he is reward or meede.

THE FIFTH TRUTH. Payments of the first kind, made to any one man and terminating with him, may not be withheld, though the work which they were designed to aid be not done. For the payment must go before the work, and if the receiver admit his obligation to perform it, he cannot justly be dispossessed of the payment, even though it be morally certain that he never will perform it. The contrary doctrine would give occasion to withhold all such payments, and would introduce evils and wrongs innumerable.

The v^e. trouthe is this: Whanne eny such temporal good movable or vnmovable is ȝouun in the first maner of the ij^e. trouthe to eny oon persoon and not to hise successouris, and is to be paied in the same first maner to the same oon persoon as bi vertu and strengthe of the same now seid ȝeuynng maad in the first maner of the ij^e. trouthe, thilk good mai not iustli be restreyned and be aȝen holde fro payment to the same persoon, thouȝ the deede schal not be doon and performed into which deede to be doon the same good was to the same persoon so in the first maner of the ij^e. trouthe ȝouun; namelich if it be not vtirli certain that the receyuer schal not performe the same seid deede. Forwhi the ȝifte of the good to the receyuer gooth bifore the deede, into which deede the receyuer is therbi bounde; and in lijk maner the payment of the same good to the receyuer ouȝte go bifore the same seid deede therbi to be doon, bi as myche as thilk payment is the fynding and the helping in expensis and in othere necessities geting to the receyuer into the same deede therbi folewingli to be doon or the better to be doon. And therfore, if the receyuer wole knoueleche that he wole and schal per-

forme the deede into which he is thus bounde bi the
 gifte bfore maad and the paiement to be paied bfore
 to him as into his fynding into the same seid deede,
 thouz it be knowe that the receyuer schal not per-
 forme the deede, ther is no iust wey forto therfore
 withdrawe and withholde thilk payment fro him.
 Also open ynowz it is, that for¹ the vndoing of a
 deede, which in dew ordre and processe ouzte folewe
 a payment and be doon bi vertu and strengthe of
 the same payment, mai not be a cause wherbi the
 same payment schulde not be paied but be restreyned
 fro payment; namelich if he, to whom it schulde be
 paied, wole not knoueleche that he wole leue the same
 deede vndoon. Forwhi ellis colour myzte be take for-
 to lette and restreyne and wronge euery payment in
 the world which is to be doon in the first maner of
 the ij^e. trouthe, or in caas of the ij^e. parti of the vij^e.
 trouthe after folewing. Forwhi ech paier myzte bere
 an hond to the receyuer, that the receyuer wolde not
 performe iustly the deede into which the payment
 schulde serue. And so her of and herbi schulden in-
 numerable grete debatis and strijfis, wrongis, and mys-
 chefis rise and continue. Wherefore this v^e. trouthe is
 to be holde as firme² and stable.

The vj^e. trouthe is this: If mouable or vnmouable
 godis zouun and dew to be paied to eny oon persoon
 withoute successouris in the first maner of the ij^e.
 trouthe, (that is to seie, bfore the deede into which
 he is bounde bi strengthe of the bfore mad to him
 gift and payment,) mai not iustli be take fro and be
 azenholde fro the seid man, thouz the seid deede be of
 him left vndoon, (as it is now bfore schewid in the v^e.
 trouthe,) miche rather this is trewe,—whanne movable
 or vnmovable godis ben zouun and dew to be paied

THE SIXTH
 TRUTH. When
 payments of the
 first kind are
 made to any man
 and to his suc-
 cessors, still less
 can they be with-
 held from him
 for not discharg-
 ing his duties, if
 he continue in
 office. For in
 that case not
 only he, but they
 also, would be
 put out of right
 and possession,
 except the gift
 were renewed.

¹ Perhaps *for* should be cancelled. | ² as for *firm*, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. XVI.

to a persoon and to hise successouris perpetuali, that ech of hem therbi and ther with performe a certain assignable deede,—that, thouz this man which now lyueth performe not the deede for his while, this movable good, (as cuppe or chalice, mytir, bacul,) or vnmovable good, (as hous, feeld, wode,) mai not iustli be takun fro him and hise successouris. Forwhi not oonli he him silf mai it lette bi the reclaime now in the v^e. trouthe sett which he mai make for him silf, but also he mai it lette bi lijk reclayme which he mai and ouzte make for hise successouris and in the name and stide of alle and of ech of hise successouris. Also sithen hise successouris ben not ȝit founde in wijte or defaute, wrong were doon to hem if this good schulde be take so away fro this man that therwith to gidere and at oonis it were take away from hem. But so it is, that this man mai not oonis or at eny tyme be putt out of riȝt and of possessioun of thilk seid mouable or vnmouable good, him abiding in the same dignite, state, or office, but that bothe he and alle hise successouris ben theryn, therwith, and therbi excludid for euer, in lasse thanne the same good be ȝouun aȝen to hem of the newe. Wherefore this man mai not iustli be vnriȝtid and vnpossessid, that is to seie, be putt out of riȝt and out of possessioun of the seid mouable or vnmouable good; thouz he not performe the dede into which thilk good is¹ so ȝouun, and so to be paid is an helping meene or a fynding.

¹ Probably *is* should be cancelled.

xviij. CHAPITRE.

THE vij^e. trouthe is this: Alle bischopis and othere preestis and louzer clerkis endewid for hem and her successouris bi mouable godis, (as chalicis, vestimentis, bokis,) and bi vnmouable godis, (as housis, feeldis, and free rentis going out of feeldis or of housis) and bi riztis to aske and haue tithis and offringis, grauntid and zouun to hem and to her successouris, stonden not in caas of the ij^e. partie of the ij^e. trouthe; but thei stonden in caas of the first parti of the ij^e. trouthe, and in caas of the vj^e. trouthe. Forwhi the blisse of heuen and the thank of God and his rewarding is al that is to be abide aftir and to be awaitid after in wey of reward and meede of ech bischop, preest, and clerk for ech werk and deede of his dignite, ordre, or office doing and executing; and ther fore no good mouable or vnmouable is zouun or paied to hem as for reward and meede of her officis doing and performyng. In knoueleching of which thing, whanne a persoon is mad first clerk and takith his firste corown for to be therbi oon of the clergie, he seith and protestith openli thus: "The Lord is the part of myn heritage and of my labour and traueil into which y entre. Thou, Lord, art he which schalt zelde myn heritage to me,"¹ that is to seie, as for reward of my labour into which y now entre; and so the first party of this vij^e. trouthe is sufficientli opened for trewe. The ij^e. party of this vij^e. trouthe is witnessid bi Poul i^e. Cor. ix^e. c. bi long processe and

THE SEVENTH TRUTH. Payments made to the clergy are of the first kind; for their proper reward is to be looked for in heaven.

¹ "*Modus faciendi tonsuras vel coronas primas et ordinandi clericos genuflectentes coram episcopo hoc modo. Sit nomen Domini benedictum, &c.*" (Then follows a prayer and a psalm). "*Hic quilibet ordi-*

nandus per se dicat: Dominus pars hereditatis meae et calcei mei: tu es, qui restitues hereditatem meam mihi." Maskell's *Mon. Rit. Eccl. Anglic.*, vol. 3. pp. 147-149.

CHAP. XVII. bi an ensauple of oxen threisching or treading out corn of the strawe and chaaf in a floor, and bi Poul i°. Thim. v°. c̃.

Two texts considered, which seem to make for the contrary opinion, and to speak of the payment of the clergy as the reward of their labour. *Reward* is taken in Scripture sometimes strictly, sometimes not.

Neuertheles thouȝ this present vij°. trouthe muste needis be holden¹ for open resoun which myȝte be brouȝt therto and for textis of Scripture, (summe now bifore alleggid, and summe after soone in this present chapter to be rehersed,) ȝit it myȝte seme that aȝens this present vij°. trouthe Crist him silf spekith and meeneth, Luk x°. c̃., where he seide to hise disciplis thus: *Go ȝe: lo, y sende ȝou as lambren among wolues; therefore nile ȝe bere a sachel neither scrippe neither schoon, and grete ȝe no man bi the wey. Into what hous that ȝe entren, first seie ȝe, Pees to this hous; and if a sone of pees be there, ȝoure pees schal reste on him; but if noon, it schal turne aȝen to ȝou: and dwelle ȝe in the same hous, eting and drinking tho thingis whiche ben at hem; for a werkman² is worthi his hire.* Lo hou in these wordis, "a werkman is worthi his meede," Crist clepid it which prechouris and prelatis schulde take into her fynding to be meede or reward of her preching, which is a deede of cure doing. And in lijk maner, i°. Thim. v°. c̃., bi like and the same wordis Poul clepith the fynding of prechouris her mede or reward. Wherefore it wolde seme that the ij°. partie of this present vij°. trouthe is not to be holde as for trewe; but it wolde seme that the ȝifte of temporal godis mad to preestis is in the ij°. parti of the firste trouthe sett bifore in the xvj°. chapter; and therefore tho temporal godis mowen be withdrawe, if preestis performe not sufficientli the deedis of her cure. But ȝit notwithstanding these ij. now laste rehersed textis, (oon of Crist, Luk x°. c̃.,

¹ beholden, MS.

² Perhaps *werk man*, MS. (here and below), but ?

and the other of Poul, i°. Thim. v°. c.,) the vij°. CHAP. XVII.
trouthe is to be holde thoruz hise bothe bifore seid parties. And for dew vnderstanding of Crist and of Poul in the ij°. now laste rehercid textis it is to wite that this word *meede* or *reward* mai be take propirli in his dewist and verriest maner of significacioun and bitokenyng, and he may be take vnpropirly out of his dewist and veriest maner of signifyng and bitokenyng, as ful manye othere wordis in Holi Scripture, and eke out of Holi Scripture, ben woned to be take.

Thanne ferther, if this word *meede* or *reward* be take in his dewist and propir maner of signifyng, certis he bitokeneth a thing which is to be zounun or paid for a werk bifore doon, and is thanne first dew to be zounun or paied whanne the werk is doon and eendid, for which the same thing is to be zounun or paied, and in this maner Holi Scripture spekith of *meede*, Math. xx°. c., where the lord of the vyner in the eende of the day and of the werk doon in his vyner, seide to his procutour thus, *Clepe thou the werkmen, and zeelde to hem her meede, et cætera*; not withstanding that perauenture bifore in the dai thei hadden her sufficient fynding, as in mete and drinke, forto so wirche into the eende of the day. And also in this maner God spake of *meede* and *reward* to Abraham, Gen. xv°. c., thus: *I am thi defender and thi meede or reward, which is hugeli greet*: Also in this maner it is writun, Sapience, v°. c.: *Forsothe riztful men schulen lyue for euer and her meede or reward¹ is at the Lord*. Also, Apocalips xxij°. c., God seith thus: *Lo y come soone, and my reward or meede is with me forto zelde to ech after hise werkis, et cætera*. Certis in these iiij. now bifore going textis and in manye mo than othere xl. conteyned in Holi Scripture,

Reward properly means so much pay for so much work.

¹ *reward*, MS.

CHAP. XVII. (as a man mai se bi *The Concordaunce*¹ in this word *merces* in Latyn, *meede* in Englisch,) this word *meede* is take forto signifie and bitokene a thing zouun in the maner and for cause now seid; and this maner taking this word *meede* is his² propre and dew maner of taking, as al experience and famose vce according with so manye placis of Holi Scripture wolen conferme the same.

Sometimes it signifies maintenance, or payment of the first kind.

In an other maner this word *meede* or *reward* is takun vnpropirli and out of his dewist signifying and bitokenyng; and this word *meede* or *reward* thus takun signifieth al oon with this word *fynding*, forto speke of such fynding as is mynysting of costis and expensis and othere necessarie or profitable thingis into that a certeyn deede be doon and executid. And sotheli in this vnpropre maner of taking *reward* or *meede* it is not spokun, as y weene, in al Scripture saue in the ij. textis bifore sett in the obieccioun, of whiche textis oon is of Crist, Luk x^o. ẽ., and the other is of Poul, i^o. Thim. v^o. ẽ. In whiche bothe textis *meede* or *reward* is takun not propirli, as it is of meede spokun in the ij^o. partie of the ij^o. trouth bifore in the xvj^o. chapter of this present ij^o. partie, but vnpropirli for *fynding*, of which it is spokun bifore in the first partie of the secunde trouthe in the xvj^o. chapter of this present ij^o. partie.

This proved to be its true sense in the two texts named.

And that this answare is not feyned, but that he is trewe in this now laste partie may be proued. Forwhi ellis both Crist and Poul hadden meened azens open resoun; for open it is, that it, wherof thei speken in tho textis, is *fynding* to the precher into the deede of preching to be doon aftir the receuyng of the

¹ Several concordances were made from the Vulgate before Pecock's time, the most ancient being that of Antonio of Padua, composed in the early part of the thirteenth

century. Cardinal Hugo's performance, written about the middle of the same century, may probably be the work here intended by Pecock.

² This is added by a later hand.

same finding. Also ellis Crist in the alleggid x^e. CHAP. XVII.
 chapiter of Luk schulde haue meened azens him silf
 in the other now alleggid placis, that he with his
 blis schal be the reward and meede of ech good
 vertuose deede; and Poul also in his alleggid text, i^e.
 Thim.¹ v^e. ẽ. schulde ellis haue meened azens the now
 other seid spechis of God and of Crist; and also
 euer either of hem bothe schulden ellis haue meened
 in thilk ij. placis azens mo than l. othere placis of
 Holi Scripture, and azens the famose speche and
 meenyng of al the world fro the bigynning of the
 world hider to. And therfore myn answeare now mad
 forto thus, as now is seid, ȝeue dew meenyng to the
 text of Crist, Luk x^e. ẽ, and to the text of Poul,
 i^e. Thim.¹ v^e. ẽ, is not feyned and lacking his sufficient
 colour and ground, but is euydentli ynouȝ trewe.

The viij^e. trouthe is this: If the lay peple ȝaue at
 eny tyme to her curatis and to the successouris of
 her curatis perpetuali this riȝt forto clayme, aske, and
 haue ȝeerli certein offringis to be doon and tithis
 going out fro her wynnyngis and renewyngis, as
 fyndyngis of the same curatis and successouris into
 deedis of her cure to be doon, thilk riȝt so ȝouun to
 the seid curatis and her successouris is liȝk to the riȝt
 which myȝte be ȝouun to the same curatis or to
 othere curatis and her successouris forto cleyme, aske,
 and haue ȝeerly a free rente of money going out fro
 certeyn housis or londis, as a fyndyng to the same
 curatis forto do the deedis of her cure. And that the
 paraschens so, as is now bifore seid, ȝaue, it myȝte
 seme weel herbi. For ellis it wolde folewe that per-
 souns and vikers, lyuyng oonli bi tithis and offringis,
 hadden no benefice; sithen a benefice is no thing
 ellis than a riȝt forto cleyme, aske, and haue certein
 fruytis or sum othir avail into his sufficient fyndyng
 forto do the deedis of his cure; for the benefice mai

THE EIGHTH
 TRUTH. Tithes
 are to be regard-
 ed as a free rent
 from the lands of
 the parishioners;
 for if it were
 otherwise, vicars
 living thereby
 would have no
 benefice.

¹ Cor., MS. (twice).

CHAP. XVII. not be seid to be the hous, neither the bodili chirche, neither the peple, neither the wijde cuntre of the parisch; for ech of these soortis now rehersed, except the laste, ben chaungid happili euery 3eer; and the laste soort schulde rather be the benefice to the peple of the parisch than to him. And therfore a benefice is no thing ellis than what is now seid to be, that is to seie, a riȝt forto aske, receyue, and haue certeyn fruytis or sum othir avail into his fynding forto do summe deedis of sum certein office. Wherof folewith this present viij°. trouthe to be firme and stable for a trouthe.

Uncertain voluntary offerings to the priest were commuted into certain fixed payments, to avoid the danger of his losing his income, if by a faithful discharge of his duty he offended them.

Also thus: It is to be seid that summe temporal goodis weren ȝouun to preestis being curatis into her lijfode in the first maner of the ij°. trouthe, and that bi cause of Cristis speche, Luk x°. c., in long proces, wheryn he seith, *The werkman is worthi his fynding*, and bi cause of Poulis speche, i°. Thim. v°. c. and i°. Cor. ix°. c., bi long proces. And ferthermore, sithen it was doon so aftir ward, that the maner of vncerteyn ȝeuyng at mennys deuocioun and plesaunce to preestis was chaungid into a certeinte of tithis and of offring in certein tymes, as open deede therupon schewith, and as y haue proued in *The spreading of the iiij. tablis*, and that for avoiding of perel and yuel, which ellis myȝte and wolde haue falle, if parascens schulde haue be left in her owne fredom for to haue ȝouun or not ȝouun eny thing to her curat, or how miche or how litle to hem it schulde haue likid; it muste be trowid that for avoiding of lijk perel and lijk yuel it was doon, that the curat schulde be stabili endewid bi the seid tithis and offringis, so that it schulde be a ful riȝt ȝouun to him forto hem aske rere haue tho tithis and offringis and othere like paymentis, like to the riȝt of a free rente or a lyuerey going out of an abbey or citee or an other comunalte. Which perel and yuel wolde be this, that ellis, if such stable and fix endewing were not maad to the curat, hise

paraschenys myzten and wolden him trouble with querelis, and theryn withdrawe his fynding, as ofte as he wolde bi doing of his dew cure offende hem. And certis in such aventure it were rather to truste to the conscience and discrecion of him which is in state of a reuler, than to the conscience of hem whiche ben in the state of hem that ben to be reulid. And therfore nedis cost it was doon, that the curat was stabili endewid bi suche tithis and offringis and othere suche lijk paymentis; or it ouzte haue be so doon, if good reule hadde be seen; and therfore it is to be take now in fulfilling what was thanne left, as thouz it had be thanne so doon.

Also hou ellis schulde eny man be bold forto leue a craft to gete therbi his lijfode, and bicom a curat to othere; in lasse than he hadde a stable rizt forto aske and haue his lijfode of his paraschens, and that his lijfode schulde not hange upon her plesaunce oonli; namelich sithen persoones, whiche ben nedis to be reulid of reulers, ouzten not to be so miche trustid in so greet a cause forto not erre, neither for to be not other wise than weel avisid, that thei wolen not withdrawe vndewli what thei ouzten paie, if thei be greued? And also how ellis myzte bi eny discrecioun haue be ordeyned or haue be admittid of the laife suche statis in the chirch to be in subordinacioun of vndrers and ouerers, (as ben persoones of paraschens, and bishopis aboue hem, and archibishopis aboue hem, and patriarkis ouer hem, and thanne the pope hizest,) but if the louzest degre, in which ben persoones, curatis, upon which alle these othere statis ben bildid, schulden haue a stable fix endewing of lijfode, and but ¹ ech of these othere statis schulde haue her stable endewing ² in lijk maner? And therfore it was

If the income of one who had cure of souls depended on the mere benevolence of his parishioners, no one would undertake such cure as a profession; so that his endowment is to be regarded as secure as that of a chantry-priest.

¹ Perhaps we should read *but if*,
but see Glossary.

² *endewewing*, MS.

CHAP. XVII. so doon, or ouzte haue be so doon. And so for continuaunce of it what was doon, or for continuaunce of it which hath be so weel suffrid and allowid, as thouz it had be so ordeyned and doon, and ouzte be now so ordeyned to be doon, (ne were that alle wijse men taken it as for doon, or as thouz it had be doon,) it is to be holde that the louzer curatis, as persouns and vikers of paraschenis, ben stabili endewid in her riȝt forto aske and haue tithis and offringis and othere paymentis, how stabili a perpetual chauntry preest is endewid; so that his riȝt and benefice of lijfode hangith not upon the beneuolence of his paraschens.

Moreover it is unwise that the livelihood of rulers should depend on the caprice of those whom they rule.

And certis ferther forto seie, it were neuere wijs policie and reule, that the reulers lijfode schulden hange upon her wittis and willis, whiche schulden be bi him reulid or conceilid or detectid; and that bothe or it is to presume, that for the more parti her wittis and willis schulden be infirmer than ben hise, and also for freelnes thei wolden grucche ofter than thei schulden azens hise correpciouns and reulingis, as experience ofte in suche maters schewith. And therfore this present viij°. trouthe and it what he presupposith is to be holde for trewe, and namelich to be vsid as for trewe; thouz special writingis of eldist ordinauncis of men in the Newe Testament kun not be founde, that so it was in eny tyme doon.

THE NINTH TRUTH. Pariah-loners having cause of complaint against clerks ought to bring them before an ecclesiastical court.

The ix°. trouthe is this: Alle the peple of the lay parti, whiche wolden compleyne or holde hem wrongid of preestis or othere clerkis for the deedis not doon bi tho preestis or clerkis, into whiche deedis to be doon tho preestis and clerkis receyueden her fynding of the same peple in lay party, stoonden in caas of the firste trouthe, as it is open ynouȝ to se; and therefore thei mowe not eny punysching or eny restreyne sette to preestis or clerkis for the vndoing of

the deedis of cure, but the lay peple ouzten com-
 pleyne hem to the iugis of the preestis and clerkis
 so trespassing and wronging, and proue her complaint
 to be trewe, and the other parti ouzte be callid into
 answeere forto wite whether thei kunnen excuse hem
 or no; and if the preestis and clerkis ben founde in
 the defaut, than first tho iugis ouzten do therto dew
 and iust remedie. Forwhi, but if remedie of this
 wronging schulde be do in this wey, ellis no wey
 were forto make remedie to this wronging; sithen
 thilk remedyng muste outhir be doon bi hem that
 ben wrongid, which is azens the firste trouthe, or bi
 othere persoones ordeyned for to be ther yn iugis;
 and but if the bothe parties schulden be herd at
 fulle leysers, oon for to accuse, the other forto defende,
 ellis vnsufferable myscheuys of hasty domes wolde
 ofte falle. And therefore this ix°. trouthe is alatis to
 be holde.

The x°. trouthe is this: The remedie which is iust
 and dew to be sett upon preestis and clerkis, tres-
 pacing and wronging the lay peple in caas of the
 ix°. trouthe, muste needis be othere punyschingis than
 putting tho preestis and clerkis out of her possessioun
 had upon her endewingis and fyndingis,¹ bifore seid
 in the vj°, vij°, and viij°. trouthis, hem abiding stille
 in her afore had dignitees or officis. For whi, if these
 preestis and clerkis thus trespassing schulden or myzten
 iustli be punischid bi the seid putting out of riht and
 possessioun, hem abiding stille in her dignitees or
 officis, this deede and processe of punysching schulde
 be mad and doon azens the bifore going here v°. and
 vj°. trouthis, as folewith weel bi strengthe of the vj°.
 trouthe; and wrong schulde be doon in thilk pun-
 ysching to the successouris of tho preestis and clerkis

CHAP. XVII.

THE TENTH
 TRUTH. The
 true remedy
 against crimi-
 nous clerks is
 not to deprive
 them of their en-
 dowments, and
 to let them at the
 same time hold
 their offices.

¹ and fyndingis is added in the margin by a later hand, which has made erasures in the text.

CHAP. XVII. now lyuyng,¹ whiche successouris not zit han so trespassid, that thei schulden be punyschid or vnpossessid in her procutour or attorney occupiying now the godis and the possessioun of the godis in his and her names to gidere.

THE ELEVENTH TRUTH. The proper punishment of such persons is fine, or penance, or deposition.

And therfore folewith her of the xj°. trouthe: That the iugis of these now seid preestis and clerkis, thus trespassing and wronging, ouzte punysche the preestis and clerkis bi payment of money, or bi open schame and peyne, or bi remouyng hem fro her had dignitees and officis, so that othere persoones worthi therto be putt yn forto succede to hem and forto continue the rizt and the possessioun in her owne names and in her successouris names, that the successouris be not oonys vnpossessid for the perel and the wrong bifore sett in the vj°. trouthe; which perel and wrong schulde ellis bifalle to the seid successouris. And so bi al the processe bigunne bifore at the xvj°. chapter of this iij°. partie and continued hidir to it is open that the ij. opiniouns, conclusiouns, and holdingis there in the bigynnyng of the xvj°. chapter rehercid, ben errouris and vntreuthis, if it what is presupposid to the vj°. trouthe be trewe.

xviii. CHAPTER.

Though these eleven truths sufficiently refute the two aforesaid opinions, yet more may be added. A gift may be made in four manners.

FERTHERMORE, thouz this processe bifore mad fro the bigynnyng of the xvj°. chapter hidir to be sufficient forto schewe the ij. opiniouns there rehercid to be vntrewe, zit into the same purpos more mai be seid thus: In iiij. maners a man mai zeue to an othir man aloone, or to the othir man and to hise successouris,

¹ *lyuyng*, MS.

or to a couent or comounte and her successouris, CHAP. XVIII.
movable and vnmovable godis.

The first maner is, if a man zeueth to me oonli, or to me and my successouris,¹ or to me and mi felawis and oure successouris, freli and vtirli, that is to seie, withoute eny hope or loking after that eny thing be azen zouun, or eny other deede as therfore be doon, as bi boond and withoute eny reconuencioun or couenaunt of bond expressid or priuli vndirstonde forto zeue azen or for to do therfore eny deede and with oute eny condicioun. Certis in this firste maner fadris and modris ben woned zeue to her next children oonli, and sumtyme to her next children and to the successouris bi blood of her next children; and this gift procedith of pure free loue which the zeuer hath to the receyuer; or ellis, thouz vndir hope, trust, and entent, zit withoute meenyng that² the receyuer be bounde to fulfille and performe thilk hope, trust, and entent.

The ij^e. maner is: If a man zeueth³ to me aloone, or to me and my successouris, or to me and to my felawis and oure successouris, eny movable or vnmovable thing, with hope and trust or entent that y aloone, (if it be zouun to me aloone,) or that y and mi successouris, (if it be zouun to me and my successouris,) or that y and my felawis and oure successouris, (if it be zouun to me and hem and oure successouris,) schulen zeue azen or do sum deede as therfore or as ther with or ther bi to be don as bi boond. And in this caas of zifte, if y take not upon me and consente not for me and my successouris in my name and heris forto fulfille and performe thilk trust, entent, and hope born toward me and my successouris, as for that y am absent fro the zeuer, whanne he so

THE FIRST MANNER. When the gift is absolute, without conditions expressed or understood.

THE SECOND MANNER. When a gift is made under hope that the receiver should perform some office, yet the receiver in no way implies that he shall perform it. In that case the receiver is not bound to fulfil the trust.

¹ *successouris*, MS. (by clerical error ?).

² *that* is interlineated by a later hand.

³ *zeue*, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. XVIII. zeueth; or if y therazens reclame or proteste for me and hem, that y for me and for hem wole be fre withoute boond or couenaunt for to it fulfille and performe, as whanne that y am at the zeuer present in tyme of his zift making or in tyme of the zifte to me denouncing, and zit the zeuer reuokith not the forme of his now seid zift, y and my successouris mowen reioice the seid thing so to us zouun, and we ben not bounde for to fulfille his trust born vp on or toward us.

THE THIRD MANNER. When under the same circumstances of the giver, the receiver consents openly or by implication to fulfill the trust by way of covenant. He is then bound.

But azenward as for the iij^e. maner of zeuyng, if in the caas of the ij^e. zeuyng, as doon in the zeuers side, y in my name and in the name of my successouris bihete or proteste or consente openli bi word or bi other signe, or priueli bi interpretacioun and presumpcioun to be in this mater take bi that, that y, being present and heering the forme of this zifte to me and to mi successouris thus vndir trust and entent mad or to me denouncid, am stille in not reclaymyng azens the trust neither azens the zifte, am certis with my successouris bounde not for the putting of such trust upon us oonli, but as bi couplid to gidere couenaunt forto fulfille the seid put upon us trust and entent, if we wolen reioice the zift. Of which couenaunt the oon parti is in the zeuers side; that we schulen haue the seid thing; and the other partie is in oure side, that we schulen therfore or therbi or therwith do and performe his upon us bisett trust. For couenaunt is a double graunt or a double zeuyng couplid to gidere of ij. persoones or parties, graunting or zeuyng to gidere in the maner now expressid.

Examples of this kind of gift.

In caas of this iij^e. maner ben tho that ben feffid in othere mennys londis iointli oonli, or ioyntli and deviseli vndir expressid trust, that thei do sum what therwith. Also in caas of this iij^e. maner ben executouris of a testatour, as comoun formes of testamentis

beren open record and witnes, whanne the seid feffers and executouris expresseli or priueli bi presumpcioun of the lawe graunten and consenten as bi couenaunt making, that thei schulen performe the seid trust and entent.

CHAP. XVIII.

The iiij.^e maner of zeuyng is whanne in the forme of zeuyng and in the expressioun of the zeuyng is sett expresseli a condicioun as a parti of the zift or zeuyng, bisidis alle condiciouns, whiche ben nedis cost to be priueli vnderstonde in ech zift, in ech couenaunt, in ech vow, and ooth, of whiche condiciouns mensioun is made in the ij.^e parti of the book *Filling the iiij. tablis*. And whanne in this maner zift is maad to me and to my successouris, and y or eny of hem fulfille not the condicioun, certis as soone as the condicioun is brokun the zift is voide; and the thing so zouun vnder condicioun fallith out of his possessioun, which brekith the condicioun; and therwith the thing fallith out of the possessioun of alle hise successouris, bi as miche as the zift is oonys voide and come into nouzt, and therefore mai not come azen withoute a new deede of zeuyng.

THE FOURTH MANNER. When in the deed of gift itself conditions are expressly set down. In that case, if the receiver break them, the gift becomes void both as regards him and his successors.

Neuertheles the seide man mai not be put azen his wil out of the possessioun of the thing, eer than bi iugement of the iuge he be therto condempned, and sufficient compleint and proof is mad that the zift was so¹ as is now seid maad vnder condicioun to him and to hise successouris, and proof therwith is mad that he hath brokun witingli and wilfulli the same condicioun; thouz as bi strengthe of cleer conscience, as soone as he brekith the condicioun, he fallith fro al riht to holde and haue eny lenger the seid thing to him and hise successouris so zouun. And therefore vnder ful miche perel of soule ech such

Yet the receiver may not against his will be ousted, till proof be made before a judge that he has both actually and wilfully broken the condition.

¹ so is interlineated by a later hand.

CHAP. XVIII. man and ech of hise successouris ouzten be waar that he breke not the condicioun of the ȝift to him and to¹ hise successouris mad, lest he bi thilk breking bringe yn greet losse to hise successouris withoute her deseruyng.

Although the right to a maintenance by tithes and offerings was given to the clergy as a help to discharge the duties which they had undertaken to perform, yet the great manors, castles, &c., which were given to bishops, colleges, &c. were, with some few late exceptions, given absolutely in the first manner just mentioned.

After the descryuyng of thes iiij. maners of ȝeuynghis it is to be considerid, that, (thouȝ the riȝt and lawe forto cleyme, aske, and haue tithis and offringis and othere suche smale paymentis was mad or ȝouun to bischopis and to othere preestis and clerkis in the first maner of the ij°. trouthe, declarid bifore in the xvj°. chapitre, as mai be take herbi: It is to be seid that summe temporal godis were ȝouun to hem in thilk maner, bi cause of Cristis speche, Luk x°. c., where he seith, *The werkman is worthi his fynding*, and bi cause of Poulis lijk speche, i°. Thim. v°. c., and i°. Cor. ix°. c.; and noon othere godis kunnen be founde forto be ȝouun to bischopis and to othere preestis and clerkis in thilk first maner of the ij°. trouthe, saue tithis and offringis and suche othere smale parcellingis of paymentis; and therfore it is to be take that the riȝt forto aske and haue suche tithis and offringis and suche othere smale godis was ȝouun to bischopis and to othere preestis and clerkis in the firste maner of the ij°. trouthe, ȝhe, and therfor in hardir maner than is bifore tauȝt, proued, and concludid in the x°. and xj°. trouthis the lay peple mowen not iustli procede aȝens bischopis and othere preestis and clerkis, as forto make hem lese tho tithis and offringis,) —ȝit it is to be vndirstonde and to be take that the grete maners, castellis, and court placis, and the grete lordschipis of barunries and othere suche like, whiche weren ȝouun summe to bischopis, summe to archidekenes, summe to deenys, summe to collegis, weren

¹ to is interlineated by a later hand.

zouun in the firste of these iiij. maners now in this present xvij^e. chapter descriued: except oonli tho of whos zeuyng it is expressid in the chartour of the zeuyng, that thei were zouun in the ij^e. maner, or in the iij^e. maner, or in the iiij^e. maner. Forwhi, no man in eny thing receyuyng into zifte ouzte holde him silf and hise successouris ther yn to be more bounde than he knowith him and hise successouris to be ther yn bounde, and that bothe for eschewing of lesing and of vntrouthe, and for eschewing of grete perelis and disturbelauncis and debatis, whiche ellis azens conscience schulden bifalle, and for that iugement is euere to be zouun for fredomys parti, saue into how myche can be schewid sufficientli for bondage; and so it is, that neither bi witnessing in word of hem that herden the forme of the now seid ziftis, neither bi the¹ cartis or chartouris writun ther upon to bischopis and to othere seid persoones can be had eny sufficient euydence, that tho now laste seid grete and riche castellis and maners weren zouun vnder the iiij^e. maner, or vnder the iij^e. maner, but if it be fewe, and that in late daies, as to collegis vnder hope, trust, and entent, that the maister and the felawis kepe the statutis of the collegis, and as to summe abbeies or monasterijs forto kepe zeerli solempnytees of certeyn obitis. Wherefore it is to be take, that alle these seid endewingis to bischopis and to othere worthi statis in the chirche weren zeue to hem and to her successouris in the firste of the seid iiij. maners oonli in this present chapter bfore descriued, excepte the endewingis which now ben seid to be exceptid bi cartis or othere writingis, witnessing other forme of her zeuyng.

¹ the is interlinedated by a later (?) hand.

CHAP. XVIII.

Confirmation of
this view from
the charters and
deeds of gift con-
veying manors
and castles to
bishops and con-
vents.

Confirmacioun to this now concludid trouthe and conclusioun is this, that in the cartis or chartouris, conteynnyng the formes of zeuyng the seid greet endewing [bi] vnmovable godis (except oonli tho whiche ben now bifore seid to be exceptid) is noon other forme of zeuyng expressid, than that this man or thilk man or thilk womman zeueth this castel with the purtenauncis, thilk maner with hise feeldis, (and so forth of othere like,) to thilk bischop and hise successouris, or to thilk abbot and couent and to her successouris for euere, into pure and free and perpetual almes. And if this be trewe, (as it wole be founde trewe, if the seid cartis be schewid,) certis thanne folewith needis, that alle tho vnmouable godis so zouun weren zouun oonli in the first of the iij.¹ now here rehercid maners. Forwhi if y zeue a noble to a poor man and seie to him thus: "I zeue to thee " this into very and pure almes," y meene not in tho wordis, that he schulde do ther with myn almes or his owne almes; but y meene, that y in so zeuyng to him do myn almes, and that y make thilk deede of zeuyng myn^a owne almes, and that y comytte to his wil forto do therwith what him likith. Not with standing y hope that he wole vertuoseli ful weel spende it. Wherfore bi lijk skile, if lordis or ladies seiden and wroten in this wise: "Y zeue to this " bischop or abbot and hise successouris this town or " thilk town or this maner or thilk maner into pure " and perpetual almes," thei meeneden not that the bischop and hise successouris or abbot and couent and her successouris schulden do therwith the very and pure perpetual almes of the zeuers, neither his owne pure and perpetual almes, but that tho lordis and ladies maden thilk her seid zeuyng to be as her pure

¹ iij^r, MS.

| ^a of myn, MS. (first hand).

and perpetual almes, so that the bischop or the abbot and her successouris receyuyng the seid good vnder this forme of ȝeuyng is free to do therewith what thei wolen, as for eny bound growun to hem bi the ȝifte so mad to hem; thouȝ it were so, that the seid lordis and ladies so ȝeuyng hadden so good opinioun upon bischopis and abbotis in the daies, that thei trowiden algatis that bischopis and abbotis wolden not spende the ȝiftis other wise than vertuoseli and weel. But ȝit what is al this for to make eny bond to the abbot or bischop and her successouris forto spende weel the ȝiftis, more than if the same abbot or bischop and her successouris hadden the same ȝiftis bi heritage or bi biyng or bi wyunnyng in waicouring or bi sum other fre maner of ȝeting and receyuyng? And so thus miche more as is conteyned in this present xvij^e. chapitre hidir to y caste to ouer what is seid bifore in the xvj^e. and xvij^e. capitris forto schewe the ij. opiniouns to be vntrewe, whiche ben bifore reherd in the bigynnyng of the xvj^e. chapitre.

Furthermore, for more declaracioun to be had in this mater, it is to vnderstonde that a ȝift mad in the iij^e. maner now bifore spokun muste needis be dyuers and othir than is the ȝifte mad in the ij^e. or iij^e. maner. Forwhi, whanne a ȝifte is mad in the iij^e. maner, how euer soone the condicioun is not fulfillid, the ȝifte is voide and cesith, bi cause the condicioun is a parti of the forme of ȝeuyng; but whanne a ȝifte is maad vnder entent or hope, thilk entent or hope is not a condicion and a parti of the ȝeuyng, but it is a circumstaunce of the ȝeuyng, which is clepid eende or purpos of the ȝeuer. Forwhi, sithen euery vertuose ȝift is doon for sum eende, (for no man mai eny deede do avisidli withoute sum eende and entent and purpos therto take, as y haue proued in othere placis,) it wolde ellis folewe needis, that euery ȝifte maad bi delyberacioun were a ȝifte

A gift made under an express condition as a part of the gift, differs from a gift made under intent and intent, which is not a part of the gift.

CHAP. XVIII. vndir condicioun,¹ bi cause euery zifte mad vndir deliberacioun is mad into an eende, purpos, [or] entent, hopid and trustid to be doon; and therefore needis it muste be trewe, that a zift vnder trust and entent mad is not a zifte vnder condicioun maad; and so a zifte vndir the iiij^e. maner mad is dyuers needis fro zifte² in the firste or ij^e. or iij^e. maner mad.

A gift made under trust, if accepted as such, is a covenant, the non-fulfilment of which by the receiver does not forthwith make the gift void: but such a receiver may be punished for his neglect, or if he persist therein, may eventually be deprived by just judgment.

Also the iij^e. maner of zift, which is a couenaunt, is a double zifte of the principal zeuer and of the receyuer. Forwhi the principal zeuer zeueth a thing or a dede, and the receyuer zeueth azenward, as therto or therefore coupling an other thing or dede; and open it is, that the iiij^e. maner of zifte is not but oon symple zifte; and therefore the iiij^e. maner and the iij^e. maner needis ben dyuerse, and not oon and the same. And for as miche as the iij^e. maner of zeuyng is not oon symple zifte but ij. ziftis, of which oon passith fro the principal zeuer into the principal receyuer, and the other passith fro the seid principal receyuer into the seid principal zeuer; therefore in caas of the iij^e. zeuyng, aftir that the principal zeuer hath mad execucioun and delyuerance of the thing or dede zouun to the principal receyuer, eer than the receyuer make execucion or delyueraunce of the thing or dede bi him zouun or namelich bihizt to or for the principal zeuer, if the seid principal receyuer in eny tyme wole not performe what he so bihizte, zit he fallith not therbi fro the rizt which he hath bi the zifte of the principal zeuer mad to him, neithir in that and therbi the zifte mad to the receyuer is voide. For whi the zifte so mad to him passid into him fulli and hoolli with al the substaunce and alle the parties of the same zifte, and therefore it muste needis abide, thouz the zifte which the receyuer made or bihizte forto

¹ a condicioun, MS. (first hand. | ² Probably we should read a zifte.

make be not performed and executid; sithen this ij^e. zifte is not substaunce neither parti of the firste zifte, as it is open; for ellis thei weren not ij. ziftis, but oon zifte, thouz thei be ij. ziftis couplid and cheyned to gidere. But certis up on this receyuer compleint mai be mad, and he mai be callid into iugement, and whanne it is proued that he hath not performed what he ouzte haue performed bi strengthe of the seid ij^e. maner, he mai be therfore punischid; but he mai not of what he hath receyued be depriued, al the while he wole amende and continue what he promisid. Neuertheles if he openli knoulechith, that he wole not performe the biheest mad to the principal zeuer; or ellis, that he ofte and miche failith, after that ofte and miche he hath be iugid and comandid for to amende,¹—so the discrecioun of the iuge is that the seid receyuer can not frutefulli and conuenientli be punyschid other wise than bi the depriuynge of the zifte mad to him,—certis thanne bi sentence of the iuge he may be mad lese the thing so to him zouun, and not erst, neither other wise. And this remedie now sett here is al what mai be do azens the vntrouthe of the receiuer in caas of the ij^e. zeuyng. And skile whi al this is trewe may be perceyued weel ynowz of a diligent considerer, waiting weel to ech word which is now bifore here seid.

¹ *amende* is added in the margin, in a later hand.

XIX. CHAPTER.

In the earliest times church-endowments usually belonged to a bishop and his clergy in common, the churches of his diocese being regarded as chapels of the mother church. They were soon afterwards divided by the bishop and clergy themselves into four parts, for the bishop his clergy, a building-fund, and the poor respectively; such division to continue so long as they thought fit. Some variations from this division obtained in some places.

ALSO in this mater of the alergiea endewing bi vnmovable godis it is to wite, that in sum tyme¹ and in summe cuntreia, namelich in the eeldist tyme of such now seid endewing, vnmouable godis weren zounn to the bischop and his clergie and to her successouris in comoun to gidere, euen as lijk zeuyng hath be mad aithen to an abbot and his couent and her successouris. For in the oold tyme the bischop and hise preestis with hise othere alerkis helden residence in the medir chirghe, and alle othere chirchis of the diocise weren chapellis oonli therto; and thanne alle tho godis and alle othere movable godis of thilk chirche or someunte weren reulid and expended bi the bondis or namelich bi the ouer sizt² and wil and disposicioun of the bischop. Neuertheles, soone aftir such endewing receyued in this seid maner bi greeate plente of riches, the bischop and his heol chirghe of the clergie accordiden to gidere not bi beond but bi freenes of deuocioun forto contynue oonli so long as to hem it schulde like, that her seid so greet and large endewing, whilis it abode in so greet sufficiencie, schulde be departid into iiij. parties; of which the oon the bischop schulde haue forto supporte his honour and hise chargis of gistis and suche othere; an other parti the preestis and othere clerkis schulden haue for her fynding and sustentacioun; and the iiij^e. schulde be bisett vpon reparacion and sustentacion of the bodili chirche and of liztis and ournamentis and of suche othere thingis; and the iiij^e. partie schulde be delid to poor men into almes;

¹ sumtyme, MS.| ² bi ouer sizt, MS. (first hand).

thouȝ in eoh of these parties al schulde go and passe bi disposicioun of the bischop, and thouȝ in summe cuntreis the departing was mad other wise and¹ into lij. parties, as a man mai fynde in oold writingis.²

CHAP. XIX.

Ferthermore, in othere tymes and in othere cuntrees, or in the same now bifore spokun cuntrees, but in tyme succeding to the now bifore spokun tyme, suche chirchis thus endewid, (that is to seie, considering that tho godis weren ȝouun to hem in the firste or ij^e. maner bifore seid in the xvj^e. chapter, and not in the lij^e. or iijj^e. maner there spokun, and therefore thei myȝten bi her comoun asent aliene these same godis fro hem silf, and myȝten make hem to be verrili the propre godis of this man or of thilk man,) tooken avise to gidere and departiden these godis, and ȝauen oon parti to the bischop forto be as in propre his good and hise successouris with oute eny other ther yn partyners; and in lijk maner thei ȝauen an othir parti to the deen and hise successouris in propirte of lordschip; and an other parti to the archideken and hise successouris in propirte of lordschip; and so forth to othere. And thus tho godis, which weren bifore comoun, weren mad propre bi hem which hadden therto sufficient auctorite and power; thouȝ after in othere tymes summe lordis ȝauen certain possessiouns to the bischop and to hise successouris oonli, and sum othere ȝauen to the clerkis and preestis of the queer and to her successouris oonli, as the writingis of tho ȝeuynge beren open witnes. Certis this consideracioun now seid in this present chapter schal do greet eese to reders in the *Summe* of Gracian, or in the oold book maad of popis *Decretalis*, and of decrees mad in general councellis and in prouincial

Afterwards the bishop and clergy agreed permanently to affix certain portions of the fund to the bishop, dean, archdeacon, &c., and their successors, so that the common property was by just authority converted into private property. In after times some possessions were given to the bishop only, or to the dean and chapter only. Knowledge of these facts essential to the understanding of the Canon Law.

¹ and is interlineated in a later hand.

² For the ancient authorities on

this subject, see Bingham's *Antiq. Chr. Ch.*, book v. c. 6.

CHAP. XIX.

counceilis of dyuerse cuntrees. Forwhi summe chapitris, whiche a man schal rede in tho bokis, speken of the maner had in oon and for oon of the now bifore discryued tymes; and summe othere chapitrees speken of the maner had in an other and for the same othir of the now bifore discryued tymes; summe speken of the maner had in oon and for oon prouynce or cuntre; and sum speken of the maner had in an other and for the other of the now bifore descriued prouyncis or cuntrees. And therefore tho chapitres ben not betwixe hem silf repugnant, thouȝ thei schulen so seme to be, if this which is now bifore [seid] in this present chapter be not considerid; riȝt as othere chapitres in Gracianys *Summe* and in *The book of Decretalis*, (of whiche chapitres summe speken that "clerkis schulden" not make testament of her chirchis godis," and summe speken that "thei mowen make testament of the "chirches godis,") ben to be vndirstonde aftir the tymes and cuntrees, in whiche and for whiche thei weren made; and thei alle ben not to be take for ech tyme and ech cuntre. And, if this be considerid, tho chapitres schulen be seen forto not repugne bitwixe hem silf. And therefore, riȝt as whanne and where it was ordeyned that clerkis schulden not make testament of the chirchis godis, thanne and there it was not leeful hem forto make eny such testament; so whanne and where the contrarie was ordeyned, or the other now seid ordinaunce was reuokid, or bi eny iust wey he ceesid, clerkis myȝten weel ynouȝ saafi in conscience make testament of her chirchis godis, whiche camen to hem bi riȝt of her tyme.¹

A man may have
property in two
ways, either by

Ferthermore it is to wite, that in ij. maners of vndirstonding it mai be seid that godis ben of man;

¹ See Gratian. *Decret.* pars. ii. caus. x. and caus. xii. throughout; also Greg. *Decretal.* lib. iii. tit. xxvi.

oon is, for that thei ben hise bi rizt which he hath in hem, or bi rizt which he hath into hem; an other is, for that it is semeli and conuenient that the godis be zouun to him. Ensaumple of these ij. maners is this: If y be riche and haue wunne more good than is necessarie to me my silf and to myne, al this good is neuer the lasse myn, and no parti of this good is eny other mannys good in the first now seid maner, which is very and propre. Neuertheles, bi cause it is conuenient and semeli and a counseil or a bidding of God that my good, being ouerplus to the nede of me and of myne, y schulde zeue to poor men into almes, therfore in an vnpropre maner of speche, which is the ij. now seid maner, these godis of myne being so ouer plus mowen be seid the godis of poor men, eer thei be zouun to poor men, and eer thei be mad verili and propirli to speke the godis of poor men in the firste maner now here bifore sett and seid. And so in this secunde maner of vnpropre speking is the long processe of Seint Bernard to be vndirstonde, which is sett in *The iiij. book of flouris*, the iiij. chapitre in the eende, and in the v. chapitre there in the bigynnyng, where he seith thus: *What euer thing comyng to thee bi rizt of the auctir thou takist ouer thi necessarie feding and thi symple clothing, it is not thin, it is rauelyn, it is sacrilegi,*¹ that is to seie theft of holi good.—*For to not zeue to poor men the godis of poor men is euen synne with sacrilegie. Certeinli the ricchessis of chirchis ben patrimonyes of poor men, and therfore what euer thing the mynysters ther of, (whiche ben despensatours ther of, and not lordis or possessouris ther of,) taken to hem silf ouer lijfode and clothing, thei taken fro poor men with*

CHAP. XIX.

right, or because it is fit that he should receive it. Thus a rich man's whole property is strictly his, but it is God's will that the poor should receive of his abundance, so that it may be called in a manner the property of the poor. St. Bernard terms the riches of the church the patrimony of the poor in this sense.

¹ "Denique quicquid præter necessarium victum ac simplicem vestitum de altario retines, tuum non est; rapina est, sacrilegium est." S. Bernard. *Epist.* 2. (Op. tom. 1. p. 120. Ed. Par. 1839.).

CHAP. XIX.

*a sacrilegious cruelle.*¹ Thus miche and more of this mater Bernard seith there. But y seie, Certis if Bernard in these wordis there writun be not vndirstonde in this now seid secunde maner or in sum other lijk maner dyuers fro the firste seid maner, which is propre maner of speche in this mater, ellis it is to be seid that Bernard in thilk seiying failid.

Other ancient church-writers to be understood similarly. Caution in reading them necessary. For lack of this Henricus Gandavensis has fallen into the absurdity of maintaining that prelates have no right of lordship in church property. His notions are confuted by the charters of donation.

Also manye processis of holi men, whiche thei writun in this mater, ben to be take thus, that thei so wroten in wey of counseiling and in wey of exorting, as thei wolden that it were and as thei wolden that men wolde do, and not that thei wroten in wey of diffynnyng that it ouzte needis be so doon. And therfore riȝt weel waar ouzte reders be, whanne thei reden in oold mennys writingis, that thei cleue not ouer soone therto, into tyme thei han reducid, resolued, and brouȝt the conclusiouns whiche thei there reden, in to the propre principlis and groundis of the conclusiouns, of whiche and bi whiche principlis and groundis the same conclusiouns muste take her trouthis, if the conclusiouns eny trouthe haue in hem. For certis noon of the conclusions, whiche euer holi men wroten, takith his trouthe herbi and herfore, for that thei wroten thilk conclusioun; but ech conclusioun takith his trouthe of and fro and bi his ground and principil, fro and out of which he descendith in formal argument, thouȝ no writer in the world hadde euer ther of write eny word, or schulde in tyme to come

¹ "Res pauperum non pauperibus dare, par sacrilegio crimen esse dignoscitur. Sane patrimonia sunt pauperum facultates ecclesiarum: et sacrilega eis crudelitate surripitur quicquid sibi ministri et dispensatores, non utique domini vel possessores, ultra viatum accipiunt et vestitum." Gausfrid. Abb. *Doolan*.

as Bernard. (inter S. Bernard. Op. tom. ii. p. 612.) The *Flora Bernardi*, to which Pecoek refers, are merely collections of extracts from his works, genuine and spurious, first made apparently by William of Tournay. See the Benedictine editor's remarks.

write eny word; as that ech conclusioun of holi feith, (that is to seie, into whos fynding and leernyng mannys resoun [mai come] withoute therto mad reuelacioun or assercioun fro God) be founde groundid in Holi Scripture; and ech conclusioun, in to whos fynding and leernyng mannys resoun withoute the seid reuelacioun and assercioun and withoute assercioun of eny other creature (as oonli therof teller, asserer, or witnesser,) may come to, is to be founde groundid in philosophie, and in therof principiis so open that no resoun mai azens hem seie nay. And ferthermore, that it is noon inconuenience forto holde that oolde writers and holi writers and writers clepid "Holi Doctouris" faileden sum while in her writingis, schal be open ynow; in the book clepid *The iust apprising of Doctouris*, and sum what in the book clepid *The iust apprising of Holi Scripture*. And if thilk doctor Henric, which is clepid "The Solempne Doctor,"¹ hadde blessid him silf fro this now seid perel, he and hise felowers² hadden not falle into this dotage, forto seie and holde stifly, that prelati of the chirche in the clergie ben not very lordis of the vnmouable goodis whiche ben zouun or bitake to hem, but thei ben fruyte vsers of tho godis hauyng therwith power to dispense in almes al that is ouer it that is to be take into her nede.³ Certis y mai wel seie that this opinioun is a dotage. For y woet not where yn a man schulde be seid more to dote than to holde azens the playn

¹ Henricus Goethals taught theology in the Sorbonne, in the latter part of the thirteenth century, "tanta cum laude, ut totius academise Parisiensis suffragio Doctor Solemnis appellari meruit." Cave, *Hist. Lit. s. v.*

² *felowis* (?), MS. (first hand).

³ "Primo modo habere bona in communi non diminuit de perfec-

tionis ratione, quia habentur etiam à ministris ecclesie, ut eis debita ratione seruitii et ordinis quem habent in ecclesia, et hoc quo ad id quod pro hora convertunt in usum necessarium. Quo ad realdum enim habent ea, ut aliis, qui nullum jus habent in eis, dispensanda." Henr. Gandav. *Aur. Quodl.* (n. vii.) p. 441. Ed. Venet. 1613.

CHAP. XIX.

forme of tho charters, bi whiche the possessiouns of the chirche ben zouun to prelatis and to clerkis and to her successouris forto be her owne in very lordschip; and so whether thei in so holding doten, or ellis that y in my now zouun doctrine erre, lete the writingis and the chartours of the donatouris or of the zeuers be iugis, for in this mater noon othere thingis or per-soones mowen be so sure theryn iugis.

Yet although the clergy have real lordship over their property ecclesiastical, as much as over any other, they have no moral right to spend it amys; as neither have laymen; indeed clergy, who should be patterns to others, are doubly in-exculpable, if they do so.

Neuertheles thouz y feele thus, that the clergie hath very lordschip upon the vnmovable godis zouun to hem, and also upon the offringis and tithis zouun to hem, so ferforth that as with thingis being verili heris thei mowen ther with do what thei wolen, as for eny lak or default of power and of lordschip hauyng ther upon, as ferforth as thei myzten if thei hadden wonne the same godis with labour of hond or with craft, or hadden had tho godis bi successioun of heritage; (forwhi in euer either caas thei ben like very lordis of the godis;) zit y feele not thus, that the clerkis ben free therbi forto expende tho godis in eny point azens rizt doom of resoun in pride or in glotenye or in leccherie or in waast, and ben not worthi blame of God; forwhi no temporal lord or louzer man, hauyng more plente of good than is necessarie to the nede of him silf and of hise, is so fre; sithen al, what euer is doon azens resoun, is more¹ moral vice and synne; and therefore in caas of such vnreasonable expensis doon bi clerkis and bi the laife, y holde and feele that miche more the clerkis synnen in so expending than the lay persoones in lijk maner expending synnen, and that for circumstance of the kunnyng in clerkis, and for this circumstance that thei ouzten be ensaumplers of moral vertues to the lay partie. And this is the hardist point of greet perel, which y can bringe azens clerkis spending amys the goodis zouun to hem, if y

¹ Probably more should be cancelled.

schal seie and speke aftir sure fundamental encerche, and not be recheles forto faile bi moving of greet deuocioun with oute sufficient bfore had groundly consideracioun, as manye deuoute writers ben founde to do.

CHAP. XIX.

Ferthermore it is to wite, that oon clerk, (but verili to seie oon heretik.) tempereth the firste opinioun rehersed bfore in the bigynnyng of the xvj. chapter, and seith in this maner, that if the clergie mys vse habituali or customabili his vnmovable endewing, the clergie may leefulli and ouzte be dispoilid of thilk endewing bi the temporal lordis, and ellis not.¹ But that this seiying is vnskilful may be schewid thus: How euer habituali or customabili y trespase azens the king, what schal this hurte myn heir which no thing trespacith to the king, but is a ful louyng and a trewe servaunt to the king? Or how euer habituali or customabili I trespase now to the king or to God bi myn vnmovable or movable godis, whi schulen mi children not zit bigeten suffre therbi eny losse of good to hem dew, whiche not zit trespacen neither habituali neither actuali? Or in caas that certeyn godis be zouen to me and to othere iiij.² felawis in comoun, if y trespase to the king or to God habituali or customabili, what resoun were it that thei not zit so trespassing schulden be dispoilid of thilk hool same good? Wherefore if y be a bischop and mys vse habituali or customabili myn vnmovable possessiouns,

Wiclif's opinion that, if the clergy misuse their endowments, they may be deprived of them, confuted. The evil acts of one clerk ought not to deprive his successor of his rights.

¹ Peacock here refers to Wiclif, who affirms that in "many caas suiets may lefully withstond tithes by God's law and man's also:" (*Of Clerks possessioners*, MS. c. 25): and that "the curates ben more cursed of God for withdrawing of teeching in word and deed in good ensample, than the suiets or people in

withdrawing tithes and offerings, when they don not well their gostly office." (*Of the Office of Curates*, MS. c. 5.) Both these citations are taken from Lewis' *Life of Wicliffe*, p. 121.

² Perhaps an error of the copyist for mi.

CHAP. XIX.

and thouz an hundrid of my predecessouris han mys vaid like wise, what riȝt were this that an ynnocent, zhe, many innocentis comyng aftir me, to whom these godis ben zounn as weel as to me, and whishe schulden weel vse the same godis, schulden be depriued of the same godis ?

Neither ought it to be said that a man's successors will misuse goods, because he and his predecessors have done so. Whoever takes on himself to say this, usurps an attribute of God.

If thou seie the now rehercid opynyoun of the seid clerk to be groundid here on [this,] that sufficient mark and eydence may be take, that al my successouris schulen be viciouse mys vsers of the godis, bi cause that y and so manye of my predecessouris han be in habit and in custom mys vsers of the same godis, certis this ground is vntrewe. Forwhi a man forto take such a mark or eydence were him forto iuge of thingis pureli and vtirli to come, and so forto take upon him the iugement which oonli longith to God, after sentence of Crist rehercid, Acts 1^o. 3., where it is writun that Crist seide, *It is not of you forto wite tymes and momentis, which the Fadir hath putt in his power*; and so such a iuger schulde iuge ouer presumptuosell, sithen he stieth so hiz that he takith upon him the iugement which is according oonli to God, and in that he makith him as God, which mai not be withoute synne and vice. And therefore this grounding is nauȝt, for it is aȝens resoun now formed.

The history of the Jews confutes this notion. Thus, among other instances, the good king Hezekiah came after a succession of bad kings.

It is also aȝens the witnes of Holi Scripture. Forwhi not withstonding that King Saul was a wickid customable synner, ȝit God prouidid that Dauid a iust king succedid next to him; and not withstonding that fro King Roboam in Israel bi long successioun into Ezechie ech king was habituali an ydolatrer and mys vsing habituali the godis of his state and degre and office, ȝit a ful noble and holi king Ezechie and an other good king Iosie succediden. And therefore bi lijk skile, thouz y bischop and many of my predecessouris weren habituali and customabili mys vsing godis of the chirche, no sufficient mark and eydence

mai be take therbi that alle my successouris schulen be in lijk maner habituali or customabili mys vsers. CHAP. XIX.

Also azens the seid opinioun may be argued thus : If the seid opinioun be trewe, thanne sithen the endewing of princis is mad to hem for that thei schulden weel vse hem in spending hem vertuoseli aboute the good temporal reuling of her peplis, (namelich where that princis ben endewid bi the comounte,) it wolde folewe, if princis weren customabili mys vsers of the godis, that the comoun peple schulden take fro hem the godis hem abiding in her statis of princehode. And if this schulde be doon, manye myscheefis wolden therof folewe. Wherfore the seid opinioun is not to be holde no more for the seid habituacioun and custom, than if the mys vse be withoute the seid habituacioun or custom; for in euer either caas lijk wrong schulde be doon to the successouris. And open it is, that of what euer gouernaunce or deede folewith and cometh bi his strengthe vnriht or wrong, thilk deede or gouernaunce in him silf is vnriht and wrong; and so thilk opinioun taken upon the seid habituacioun was take childeli and lewidli.

Moreover if the opinion were true, evil kings might with equal reason be deprived of their possessions, from which much mischief and wrong would follow. Such an opinion is therefore false and absurd.

Thus y make an ende of the iiij. parti of this present book.

Here bigynneth the iiij^e. parti.

THE FIRST CHAPITRE.

The various degrees and ranks among the clergy is the third point complained of. The complainers would have no other ranks in the clergy except those of priests and deacons; and they think government by bishops, archbishops, patriarchs, and a pope antichristian.

THE iiij^e. principal gouernaunce or point to be tretid in this iiij^e. principal partie, for which gouernaunce summe of the lay peple vniustli and vnworthili blamen and vndirnymen the clergie, is this: In the clergie ben dyuerse statis and degrees of ouerte and netherte; as that aboue manye preestis soortid to gidere in to oon cuntre or diocise is oon bishop forto ouer se and attende that alle tho preestis lyue and do as it longith to hem bi her preesthode, and forto iuge querelis and pleintis and causis and stryues, if eny such rise among summe of tho preestis, and forto redresse the wrongis whiche preestis doon to her parischenys or ministris, if thei eny such doon; and aboue manie bishopis of a larger cuntre or of a prouynce is oon archbishop for to in lijk maner ouer se and attende that tho bishopis lyue and do as it longith to hem bi her bishophode, and for to iuge querelis and pleintis and debatis, if eny suche arise among tho bishopis, and forto redresse the wrongis whiche tho bishopis doon to her preestis, if thei eny such doon; and in lijk maner aboue manye archbishopis is oon patriarch forto ouer se and reule and amende the gouernancis of tho archbishopis; and aboue manie and alle patriarchis is oon pope forto ouerse and reule and amende the gouernauncis of patriarchis, and forto redresse wrongis doon to eny persoon in the clergie bi eny other persoon in the clergie, if ther upon to him be mad complaint that the netherer iugis wolen not do to him riȝt. Al this now rehercid gouernaunce and policie in the clergie summe

of the lay peple deemen and seien to be nauzt, and that it is brouzt yn bi the deuel and anticrist; so that thei wolen alle preestis to be in oon degre, and noon of hem be aboue other of hem, and thei wolen that vndir preestis be dekenys, and no mo ordris, statis, or degrees in the clergie at al.¹ And bi cause that suche bifore rehercid statis and degrees aboue preestis hen in the clergie, thei bachiten and detracten the clergie, cleping the hize pope anticrist and cleping alle the othere louzer rehercid statis aboue preestis the anticristis lymes or membris.²

But that this bering an hond upon the clergie and that this blamyng doon to the clergie is vniust and vntrewe, y schal proue in this present iiijth. parti bi fyue conclusiouns, of which the first is this: Holi Scripture weerneth not and lettith not the now rehercid iiijth. principal gouernaunce. That this conclusioun is trewe y proue thus: If eny text of Scripture schulde lette and weerne the seid iiijth. principal gouernaunce, it schulde be oon of these textis whiche schulen now suyngli be tretid in this present chapitre. But so it is, that noon of hem so werneth and lettith, as anoon suyngli schal be schewid. Wherefore Holi Scripture lettith not and werneth not the seid iiijth. principal gouernaunce.

Five conclusions shall be adduced in favour of this institution. THE FIRST CONCLUSION. It is not forbidden by Scripture. Certain texts shall be discussed.

Azens the seid iiijth. gouernaunce mai be argued bi textis of Holi Scripture in the Newe Testament, whiche sownen sumwhat (thouȝ litle) azens the seid iiijth. go-

Those texts which forbid our calling any one on earth master considered.

¹ Wiclif is the fountain-head of this opinion: "Unum audacter assero, quod in primitiva ecclesia vel tempore Pauli suffecerunt duo ordines clericorum, scilicet sacerdos atque diaconus. Similiter dico quod tempore Pauli fuit idem presbyter atque episcopus Tunc enim adinventa non fuit dis-

tinctio papæ et cardinalium, patriarcharum et archiepiscoporum, episcoporum," &c. *Dial. lib. iv. c. 15.*

² Thus Oldcastle, according to Capgrave, (*Chron. p. 306.*) said. "The pope is antechrist; bischoppis be his membris, and freres be his tayl."

CEAP. I.

uernaunce, of whiche textis tweyne ben these. It is writun, Math. xxij. c., thus: *Nile ze be clepid maister, for oon is zoure maystir, and alle ze ben britheren; and nyle ze clepe to zou a fader on erthe, for oon is zoure Fader in heuens.* Also Iames, iij. c.: *Nile ze manye be mad maistris, witing that ze taken the more doom, for alle we offendin in manye thingis: if eny man not offendith in word, this is a perfit man.* Wher of semeth folewe this, that it is forbodun bi these textis eny man wilne or suffre him silf be clepid maister. But open it is, that noman can take upon him to be in eny state or degre of the seid politik iiij. gouernaunce, but if he theryn and therbi take upon him a thing wherbi he is verili and trewli maister to hise netherers; and therfore mai verili, truli, and iustli be clepid maister of hem. Wherfore it is not leeful eny such state, dignite, or degre be in the clergie, sithen it is not leeful eny man be clepid maister.

These texts prove too much, if they prove anything at all. A priest is as much master of a deacon, as an archbishop is of bishops.

Answers herto is this: Certis if the arguyng fourmed vpon these ij. now rehercid textis were worth, therbi wolde folewe that it were not leeful eny preesthode to be. Forwhi ech preest is ouer and aboue a deken, as it is open, Acts vj. c.; and ech deken is ouer and aboue a lay persoon, euen as a bischop is aboue a preest and an archibischop aboue an other bischop, as it is here aftir open in the next chapter by Dynys in his epistle to the monk Demophil.¹ Wherfore ech man, whanne he takith preesthode, takith a ground and a foundement wherbi he is verili and iustli a maister, and mai therbi, if he wole, be clepid verili and iustli a maister, sithen ech man mai iustli take and vse his riȝt or that that bifallith to him bi riȝt. And so if it be not leeful a man be clepid maister, it

¹ *Domophil*, MS. See below, p. 425.

is vnleeful eny man be preest; which is azens Scripture plein ynouȝ bi textis alleggid aftir in the [ij^e.]¹ chapter of this iiij^e. partie. And therefore this arguyng now maad is nauȝt, proceding vpon the mys vndirstonding of tho ij. textis.

If the first of tho ij. textis were so streitli to be vndirstonde, that it were vnleeful eny man be clepid maister, thanne for the ij^e. parti of thilk same hool text sownyng in lijk wise it schulde be vnleeful eny man to² be clepid fadir, sithen in the ij^e. party of the same text it is writun, Math. xxij^e. c̃., thus: *Nile ze calle to ȝou fadris vpon erthe, for oon is ȝoure Fader which is in heuen.* And ȝit therazens meetith the wordis of Crist in an other place, Mark, x^e. c̃., where he seith thus: *Worschipe thou thi fader and thi modir;* and Effecies, vj^e. c̃., Poul seith thus: *Honoure thou thi fadir and thi modir.* How ener wolden Crist and Poul calle persoones fadir and modir to me, but if tho persoones weren verrili fader and modir to me, and but if it were also leeful to me forto calle hem fadir and modir to me, as thei ben verili fadir and modir to me? And so open it is herbi, that the firste parti of the first text, which i^e. parti is this, *Nile ze be clepid maistris*, is not to be vnderstonde so streitly as he sowneth, no more³ than the ij^e. partie of the same first text, *Nile ze calle to ȝou fadris vpon erthe*, is to be take and vndirstonde so stritli⁴ as he sowneth. And sithen the iiij^e. parti of the hool rehercid text declarith how the ij^e. partie is to be vndirstonde, that is to seie thus: "*Nile ze calle to ȝou ȝoure principal fadir vpon erthe;*" (for whi so meeneth the iiij^e. partie of the same text, whanne it

If it were unlawful in any sense to call a man our master, by like reasoning from the same text we might call no one father, which is contrary to Christ's words elsewhere. The true meaning of this text explained, and shown to be consistent with our having other masters under one principal master.

¹ A space left in the MS. for the number.

² to is interlineated by a later hand.

³ *nomore*, MS. (accidentally?).

⁴ Perhaps a clerical error for *streitli*.

CHAP. I.

is seid thus: *Oon is 3oure Fader in heuen*, that is to seie, oon is 3oure principal fader in heuen; and ellis thilk seiying were fals, for as miche as Crist him silf meeneth that we han fadir and moder on erthe in that that he biddith us worschipe fadir and moder on erthe,) therefore so is the first parti of the same hool text to be ari3t vndirstonde thus: "Nile 3e be callid " principal maistris, for oon is 3oure principal maister " in heuen." And herwith al it mai ful weel stonde that we mowen haue othere maistris in this world vndir thilk principal maistir. Forwhi aftir the wordis of Seint Poul, Rom. xiiij. c., in the bigynnyng,¹ we mowen and ou3ten haue lordis to us in this world vndir God principal Lord aboue; and therfore miche rather we mowen and ou3ten haue to us maistris vnder God the principal mayster aboue. And that we mowen and ou3ten haue lordis aboue us witnessith Seint Peter, i^c. Peter ij^c. c., thus: *Honoure 3e the king: seruauntis, be 3e suget in al drede to lordis, not oonli to gode and to milde, but also to tirantis.* And Poul witnessith the same, Effes. vj^c. c., seiying thus: *Seruauntis, obeische 3e to fleischli lordis with drede and trembling in symplenes of 3oure herte as to Crist, not seruyng at the ize as plesing to men, but as seruauntis of Crist doing the will of God by discrecioun, with good wil seruyng as to the Lord, and not as to men.* And in lijk maner Poul witnessith, i^c. Thim. vj^c. c., thus: *What euer seruauntis ben vndir 3ok, deeme thei her lordis worthi al honour.* Also hem that made hem silf seme wijse forto condempne mennis lawe mad and forto iustifie that to such lawe

¹ "Let every soul be subject to the higher powers, for there is no power but of God." Rom. xiii. 1. The actual word *lords*, which Pecock's

argument almost requires, does not occur either in the original or in Wiclif's version.

it were not to obeie, Poul reproueth, i^e. Thim. i^e. ẽ, CHAP. I.
 bi a fair processe. And thus miche is ynouz for the
 dew vnderstanding of the first text takun into ob-
 ieccion.

The dew vnderstanding of the ij^e. text takun into The text of St.
James explained.
 the same obieccioun, whanne it is seid, *Nile ze manye
 be mad maistris*, is this: Iames sei yng and knowing
 weel that it is hard forto execute perfitti and dewli
 eny office or state or degre of ouerte, and therfore
 perilose it is to ful manye that eny of hem be take
 into such office, state, or degre, (namelich sithen Scrip-
 ture ther upon, Sapience vj^e. ẽ, seith ful gastfulli thus:
Men of power schulen myztily suffre tormentis; and
 sithen also "ech of us alle offendin in ful manye
 "thingis" of lasse hardnes to performe than ben the
 deedis dew to suche statis or officis, in so myche that
 no man kan kepe him fro yuel speche and "reule his
 "owne tunge," as Iames seith, and experience it schew-
 ith, and therfore miche hardir it schulde be¹ him to
 reule othere mennys tungis and othere mennys membris
 and deedis to gidere and his owne,) therfore Seint
 Iame was moued for to counseile not to ech man but
 to manye of alle men, that thei take not vpon hem
 to be maistris, that is to seie, state and dignite and
 degre of ouerte; so that he leeueth to ech mannys
 owne doom and conscience, whether he be of thilk ouer
 freel manye or of thilk ouer freel multitude or no.
 And therfore it is to be markid weel how Iames spek-
 ith in hise wordis as in sentence thus: *Manie ze, ny le
 be callid maistris*; as thouz he seide thus, "O manye
 "of zou, awaite ze that ze be not mad maistris."²
 And the perel anoon forthwith aftir he settith ther-
 to thus: *Witing that ze taken the more doom; for*

¹ *be* is interlineated in a later
 hand. Perhaps *to* should be added.

² St. James' words are: μή πολλοί
 διδάσκαλοι γίνεσθε.

CHAP. I.

*alle*¹ we offenden in manye thingis. If eny man not offendith in word, this is a perfit man. And ferthermore Iames schewith there in processe next folewing how hard it is a man to reule his tunge, that he not therbi synne. And bi this setting forth of this processe, conteynnyng the cause and the perel for which he seide, *Nile ze manye be clepid maistris*, is schewid weel that Iames meeneth ther yn as he is now expowned to meene. And this meenyng of Iames is in no thing azens the seid iij^o. politik gouernaunce had and vsid in the clergie of the chirche.

ij. CHAPITER.

Another objection derived from three texts of the New Testament. The first text. (1 Pet. v.)

AN other obieccioun mai be mad, thouz with no greet colour, bi iij. othere textis of the Newe Testament. Of which thre oon is writun i^o. Pet. v^o. c̄., thus, where Peter spekith to suche preestis as he was him self, seiying to hem thus: *Feede ze the flock of God that is among zou, et cætera, not as hauyng lordschip in the clergie, but that ze be mad ensaumple of the flock of wil.*

The second text. (1 Cor. iii.)

The ij^o. text is writun i^o. Cor. iij. c̄., thus: *Summe of zou seith, 'I am of Poul,' an other seith, 'But I am of Apollos.'*² *Whether ze ben not men? What therfore is Apollos,*³ *and what Poul? Thei ben ministris*⁴ *to him, to whom ze han bileeued.*

From these texts it might seem that no priest

By these ij. textis, oon of Peter, the other of Poul, it myȝte seme euereither of hem wille⁴ that no preest

¹ It deserves notice that the original reading was *all*, (a form hardly occurring elsewhere in the MS.), but the change into *alle* seems due to the original scribe.

² *Appollo*, MS. (twice).

³ *the ministris*, MS. (first hand).

⁴ *willed*, MS. (first hand), apparently.

schulde holde him silf to be eny ouerer to the lay peple bi his preesthode which he berith to ward hem; but schulde rather in that be a mynystre to the peple, as he is in that a mynystre of God.

CHAP. II.

should rule, but rather serve his flock.

The iij^e. text is writun, Math. xx^e. 5., where Crist seide to hise disciplis thus: *Ze witen that princis of hethen men ben lordis of hem, and thei that ben gretter vsen power on hem; it schal not be so among you, but who euer wole be mad gretter among¹ you, be he youre mynystre, and who euer wole among you be the firste, he schal be youre seruaunt; as Mannys Sone came not to be serued but to serue, and forto zeue his lijf redempcioun for manie.* Lijk processe thoruz out is wrytun, Mark x^e. 5. Out of this processe semeth to folewe, that preestis ouzten not haue ouerte among hem silf, oon of hem vpon an other of hem, neither eny preest ouzte haue ouerte vpon eny lay persoon of hise neiȝboris.

The third text. (Matt. xx.) This text seems to forbid any lordship of priests over each other, or over the laity.

To this obieccioun it mai by summe men be seid, that he procedith not azens the present purpos. Forwhi tho textis sownen oonli into this, that no preest in that and for that, that he is preest to the lay peple, ouzte be to hem an ouerer, but rather to hem a mynystre, as in that he is a mynystre of God: and neuerneither of tho textis lettith preestis to be to the lay peple, but rather euereither of hem inplieth² in him silf that preestis ouzten be to the peple. And if this be trewe, certis thanne bi lijk skile neuerneither of tho ij. textis lettith eny bischop be to preestis, or eny archibischop be to bischopis, or eny pope be to alle archibischopis. Wherefore these ij. textis proceden not azens the seid iij^e. principal politik gouernaunce as in this, that a bischop be to preestis,

some may be inclined to say that this text does not forbid that there should be priests, bishops, archbishops, and a pope at all, but only that they should not be lords over the flock or over each other.

¹ Perhaps a clerical error for among.

² So written at full length in the MS.

CHAP. II.

and an archibischop be to bischopis, neither¹ a pope be to archibischopis; but conli azens the seid politik gouernaunce in this, that a preest be ouerer to the lay peple, and a bischop be ouerer to preestis, and an archibischop be ouerer to bischopis, and the pope be ouerer to archibischopis.

But this reply is unsound; for it appears from St. Paul and St. Dionysius that the clergy had lordship over their flocks and punished them, when occasion required.

Azens this answer mai be argued sufficientli thus: Sithen a bischop, in that² he is bischop to a preest, is not euen with the preest; (forwhi thanne the preest were a very bischop to the bischop, as he is bischop to the preest; and the bischop, in that that he is bischop to a preest, is not ouerer³ to the preest, as now it is supposid these ij. textis so wole;) it muste needis folewe bi the seid answer the meenyng of these ij. textis to be this, that a bischop in that that he is bischop and the⁴ preest in that that he is preest to the lay peple ben the netherers to hem; and sithen these textis weernen not bischopis be to preestis, and archibischopis be to bischopis, folewith bi lijk skile these ij. textis forto wilne that if bischopis be, thei as in that ouzten be netherers to preestis, and archibischopis, if thei be, ouzten be netherers to bischopis. But this is vntrewe, forwhi Poul bare him sif so anentis the Corinthies, that he punyschid hem; and also in an other tyme he comaundid hem to be punyschid⁵ of othere; and in an othir tyme he thretened hem that he wolde come to hem in zerde, that is to seie, in payne. And so it is, that these deedis ben not deedis of a netherer to his ouerer. Wherefore Poul bi his preesthode or bischophode bering to the lay peple vsid in that ouerte upon hem, and not

¹ The construction requires *and*.

² Probably we should read in *that that*.

³ *ouere*, MS. (but words have been erased and transposed).

⁴ *the* is interlineated by a later hand: a might seem a more probable correction.

⁵ *punyhid*, MS.

netherte as being vndir hem. Also Dynys, which, as he witnessith him silf,¹ size the conuersacioun and gouernaunce of Poul and of Iohun Euangelist and of othere Apostlis, seith in his epistle to the monk Demophil² thus: *Dekenys ben ouerers to the monk Demophil³, and preestis ben ouerers to dekenys, and bischopis ben ouerers to preestis, and the apostilis and her successouris ben ouerers to bischopis*;⁴ and, as he wole in the other place alleggid, Petir and his successour be⁴ ouerers to archibischopis,⁵ and that forto punysche bi payne and correcte hem to whom thei ben ouerers, as is open bi the processe of the now alleggid epistle of Dynys. Wherefore or Dynys muste be a wrong vndirstondir of Poulis conuersacioun and of Petris conuersacioun and a wrong vndirstonder of her writingis, but if thei meeneden hem in that that thei weren preestis forto be ouerers to hem to whom thei weren preestis. And so herbi open it is, that the now bifore zouun answere to the textis of the ij^c. obieccioun is not trewe.

It is therfore to be seid to tho textis in these maners. To the firste text of hem iij.,⁶ which is of

The true reply to these three texts. of St. Peter's mean-

¹ See the remarks of Corderius in the note below.

² *Domophil*, MS. (twice).

³ "αὐτὸς μὲν οὖν ἐπιστομὴ καὶ θυμῷ καὶ λόγῳ τὰ κατ' ἀξίαν ἀφόρισε, σοὶ δὲ οἱ θεῖοι λειτουργοί, καὶ τοῦτοις οἱ ἱερεῖς, ἱεράρχαι δὲ τοῖς ἱερεῦσι, καὶ τοῖς ἱεράρχαις οἱ ἀπόστολοι καὶ οἱ τῶν ἀποστόλων διδάσχοι." Pseudo-Dionys. Areop. *Epist.* viii. (ad *Demoph.* Mon. Op. tom. ii. p. 113. Ed. Cord.)

⁴ *ben*, MS. (first band).

⁵ "καὶ ἡμεῖς, ὡς οἶσθα, . . . συναληθέμεν, παρὴν δὲ καὶ ὁ ἀδελφός τοις Ἰδκουβος, καὶ Πέτρος ἡ κορυφαία καὶ πρεσβυτάτη τῶν θεολόγων ἀκρότης."

Id. De Divin. Nomin. c. 2. (Op. tom. i. pp. 538, 539.) There is no doubt that this is the place intended by Pecock; how far it answers his purpose the reader must judge. Corderius quite similarly argues: "Nota hinc firmissimum a S. Dionysii auctoritate argumentum pro primatu Petri, et consequenter pontificum Romanorum ejusdem successorum. Describit autem hic, quomodo apostoli cum aliis discipulis, inter quos ipse erat cum Hierotheo, interfuerint exequiis B. Virginis Mariæ." *Id.* p. 542.

⁶ *ij*, MS.

CHAP. II.

ing is that the clergy should use their lordship not for their own profit, but for that of their flocks.

Petir, it¹ is to be seid that sithen bi the same text folewith that preesthode is to be had, as is open ynouȝ bi the letter in the processe there, and sithen the same text weerneth not bischophode and archibischophode and popehode to be had, as is now bifore schewid, and sithen it is now bifore proued that preesthode and bischophode, in that that thei ben preesthode and bischophode, ben ouerteas to hem for which thei ben had and vsid, it muste folewe needis that the dew vndirstonding of this text, i^e. Pet. v^e. c̃, is the vndirstonding which is ȝouun bifore in the iij^e. parti of this book, the iiij^e. chapitre, vpon the iij^e. principal processe,² which vndirstonding is this: that thouȝ bischopis and archibischopis han ouerte vpon her nethereris, ȝit thei schulden vse her ouerte not at her owne plesaunce oonli or not at her owne glorie or her owne avauntage oonli or principali, but in to the profit and avail of her netherers, as fer forth as the lawe seruyng to thilk ouerte wole; and in that thei be not holding lordschip in the clergie, that is to seie, not such lordschip as worldli princis and worldli vndir hem dukis and othere statis ben woned to holde and vse bi tyranny vpon her netherers. And sithen this muste needis be the meenyng of Peter there, it is seid ynouȝ here for dew vndirstonding ther of, that it gooth not azens the seid iiij^e. principal politik gouernaunce vsid in the clergie of the chirche.

St. Paul means that no one ought to glory for having been taught by one priest rather than by another, since God is the principal agent and man only his minister.

To the ij^e. text, which is of Poul, i^e. Cor. iij^e. c̃, it is to be seid that his dew vndirstonding is this: that noman baptisid or cathezized, that is to seie, tauȝt the feith and the lawe of Crist, ouȝte holde him the holier for that he is baptisid or is so tauȝt and leerid of an holi man, than if he had be so

¹ it is interlineated by a later hand.

² See p. 300.

baptisid¹ or tauzt of an vnholi man; neither he ouzte holde him the better or holier for that he is so baptisid or tauzt of the holier man, than if he hadde be so baptisid and tauzt of the lasse holi man; and that bi cause that in these deedis God is the cheef and principal and veri worcher of the principal effect, and the baptiser and cathezizer is a mynystre oonli vndir God forto sette water on the persoon and forto performe a certein entent: (but how and in which wise the preest is mynystre schal be tauzte more in *The book of baptym* in Latyn and in *The book of penaunce* in Latyn and in *The book of preesthode*;) and more than this can not be had of the proces of Poul there. Wherefore thilk processe of Poul there gooth not azens the present purpos had here.

Answer to the ij^e. text is sufficientli maad and sett bfore in the ij^e. partie of this present book, the iiij^e. chapitre, and is lijk to the answer now bfore mad to the firste text in this present chapitre; and therefore who so wole se thilk answer in lengthe, turne he thider.² And thus miche now for proof of the firste principal conclusioun in this present iiij^e. partie.

Christ's meaning in the third text has been explained already.

ijj. CHAPTER.

THE ij^e. principal conclusion concernyng and bihold- ing the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce is this: Doom of cleerli disposid resoun in kinde weerneth not and lettith not the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce sett bfore in the bigynnyng of this present iiij^e. partie. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: If eny doom of kindeli cleer resoun schulde weerne and lette

THE SECOND PRINCIPAL CONCLUSION. Reason does not forbid different ranks of the clergy. Two arguments drawn against them from reason considered, and refuted.

¹ *baptisid*, MS.

| ² See pp. 298-302.

CHAP. III.

the seid iiij^e. gouernaunce, thilk doom of resoun schulde be oon of these ij. whiche now next suynгли schulen be here rehercid. But so it is, that noon of these ij. doomes of resoun weerneth and lettith. Wherefore no doom of cleer resoun it lettith and warneth.

The first argument. Much sin comes from this variety of ranks. Refutation of the argument. Much sin comes equally from the double order of the ministry, which the objectors hold to be lawful.

Moche synne and harme cometh into the clergie and into the layfe fro and bi the seid iiij^e. politik gouernaunce had and vsid in the clergie: wherfore it is not worthi neither leeful it to be had and vsid. Certis this skile and argument is not worth, as ech man mai soone wite, but if he take withinne him and meene openli or priueli that ech gouernaunce and al thing, fro and bi whiche greet synne and harme comen, is¹ vnleeful and not worthi be had and vsid: for out of this now rehercid sentence or proposicioun the argument muste take his strengthe and proof, if he eny such strengthe schulde haue. But so it is, that this now last rehercid sentence or proposicioun is not trewe. Wherefore the now mad skile and argument is not worth. Forwhi if the argument were worth, thanne bi lijk argument and skile ech gouernaunce and ech thing fro which and bi which synne and harme comen weren vnleeful and vnworthi to be had and vsid; and so therbi wolde folwe, that forto haue dekenes ouer the lay peple and forto haue preestis ouere dekenys and ouer the lay peple were vnleeful and not worthi be had and vsid; sithen open ynouȝ it is, that in the maner in which synne and yuel cometh fro and bi bischophode and popehode synne and yuel cometh fro and bi bischophode and dekenhode, as pride and extorcioun² and coueitise and ambicioun and symonie and suche othere. And ȝit, who euere wole or nyle, Holi Scripture wole that preesthode and

¹ See p. 337, note.

² *synne . . . extorcioun* are added

in the margin by a later hand, which has made erasures in the text.

dekenhode be had and vsid; and therefore the skile assigned for riȝt doom of resoun, that bischophode and archibischopode and popehode schulden not be, is not riȝt doom of resoun.

CHAP. III.

Also if thilk doom were a riȝt doom of resoun and thilk assigned argument were good, certis bi like skile and bi liȝk doom it wolde folewe that it is vnleeful princehode and ducheode and othere statis vnder hem to be, sithen ful myche synne of pride of coueitise, of ravein, of manslauȝter, of leccherie, of glotenie, of periurie, and manie suche othere synnes comen therbi and therfro, in the maner in which this seid skile and doom takith synne and harme come¹ bi and fro the seid iiij^e. principal politik gouernaunce had and vsid in the clergie. And ȝit, who euer wole the contrarie, Holi Scripture approueth weel princehode and ducheode and othere officis vnder hem to be ouer and aboue the comoun peple, as it is open bi what is bifore alleggid in the i^e. chapiter of this present iiij^e. partie. Wherefore needis it is open, that the seid pretendid skile and doom of resoun is no² riȝt doom of resoun.

This argument would also overthrow the variety of ranks of civil government, which Scripture undoubtedly sanctions.

Also of and out and bi this, that God made Lucifer so fair an aungel; and of this, that God ȝaue to him knouwing of his owne fairnes, came ful miche synne and other harme of greet payne and losse of good in the now supposid maner of speche; also fro and bi this, that God ordeynede Adam and Eue to not ete of a certain tre in Paradise, came in like maner of speche ful myche synne and othir yuel of payne and losse of good. And of this, that God ȝaue a lawe to the³ Iewis, came myche synne, as Poul witnessith, Rom. v^e. ȝ., seiying thus: *The lawe entrid that gilt schulde*

Also it would accuse God himself, who formed and appointed many things out of which sin arose.

¹ came, MS.

² not, MS. (first hand).

³ the is interlineated by a later (?) hand.

CHAP. III.

be plenteuous; and more plainli her of Poul spekith, Rom. vij^e. c., bi long processe, that bi occasioun of the oold lawe myche synne came forth, not withstanding that the lawe in it silf was holi and good, as Poul seith there. And of this, that Crist chase Iudas to be his disciple came miche synne. And if alle thes deedis and ordinauncis of God weren therfore vnleeful and vnworthi to be doon, God schulde ther yn be accusid of ful greet defaut, 3he, of¹ ful greet wickidnes. Wherefore the bifore pretendid skile for to distroie the seid iiij^e. principal politik gouernaunce in the clergie is no² riȝt doom of resoun.

There is nothing in the world, out of which sin does not spring by reason of human frailty.

What thing or deede is ther in this world tretid and vaid bi men, but that ther of mai come, 3he, and cometh synne and yuel? Certis noon, as experience schewith and as Scripture witnessith, Sapience xiiij^e. c., where it is seid thus: *Creaturis of God be made into haterede and into temptacioun to the soule of men, and into a trappe³ to the feet of vnwise men.* And therfore God forbode that ech dede and ech gouernaunce schulde be holde nauȝt and badde, if therof and therfro bi mannis freelnes, (forto seie the sothe,) and not bi the thing synne and yuel comen. And thus miche is ynow³ for vnprouyng of the seid skile pretendid to be good and riȝt doom of resoun.

Evil may come out of a thing in two ways, either as the thing is a cause or an occasion thereof.

Neuertheles here it is vndirstonde, that out and fro and bi a thing or a gouernaunce yuel mai come in ij. wisis. In oon wise, that thilk thing or gouernaunce be cause of the yuel, for as miche as thilk thing or gouernaunce wirchith bi his kinde into the seid yuel: and thanne the yuel cometh out, fro, and bi the seid thing as bi a cause of the same yuel. In an othir wise out, fro, and bi a thing or a gouernaunce yuel mai come, not so that the thing or gouernaunce⁴

¹ 3he and of, MS. (first hand).

² not, MS. (first hand).

³ into trappe, MS. (first hand).

⁴ the gouernaunce, MS. (first hand).

wirchith or makith bi his kinde eny strecching into the yuel, but that sum othir thing, as the freelnes of a mannys wil vsing and entirmeting with the seid gouernaunce, is the wircher and causer of the yuel whilis he entirmetith with the seid gouernaunce. And for as miche as the mannys freel wil schulde not cause the seid yuel, saue whilis and but if he entermetith with the seid gouernaunce, therfore, thouz the seid gouernaunce be not cause of the seid yuel, zit he is clepid the occasioun of the seid yuel. And al herfore, for the thing which is the cause of the verry yuel schulde not cause thilk yuel, saue whanne and but if he entermete with the seid gouernaunce. So that the cause of a thing is it that wirchith into the thing, that the thing be mad or doon; and the occasioun of a thing is a thing withoute which the cause of the thing wirchith not into the thing, thouz it in it self wirchith not into the same thing.

Thanne ferther thus: Thouz in the ij. now bifore seid dyuerse wisis out, fro, and bi euereither of hem, that is to seie, cause and occasioun, yuel mai be seid come; zit verili and in propirist and in trewist maner of speking forto speke in this mater, which maner is the first maner now rehersed, the synne and the yuel cometh not fro and bi the seid politik iiij^e. gouernaunce had and vsid in the clergie, but fro and bi mannys natural passiouns and freelnesis and fre wil, azens which is not mad sufficient firt and bateil: and fro and bi this as cause, that men for like passiouns and freelnesis not dewli azenstondun setten into the state of preesthode, of bischophode, of archibischophode, and of popehode, suche persoones whiche ben not weel proued to be worthi therto, and setten suche persoones as ben vnkunnyng and vnvsid in vertues and suche as ben ouer zonge, and that for fleischli loue born toward suche persoones and for worldli mede zouun for the avauncing of suche persoones. Certis out of

Evil springs from the ordinance objected against only in the second manner. The true cause of it is the frailty of men, who for unworthy motives promote unworthy persons to church dignities.

CHAP. III.

these now seid pointis and bi strengthe of hem comen the bifore rehercid synnes in the first maner, and not out of and bi¹ the seid politik iiij°. gouernance stabilid bi Scripture and bi reson. And therfore thes now rehercid pointis and causis, out of whiche wallen the seid yuelis, ben bi riȝt doom of resoun vnleeful and not worthi to be had and vsid. And so miche proueth resoun.

If any one object to a thing as being the occasion of much sin, he must consider whether the evil or the good of which it is an occasion preponderates. The ordinance objected against is both the cause and the occasion of much good; and no one can securely affirm that the evil, of which it is an occasion only, preponderates.

Also thus: If eny man is aboute forto proue a certain gouernaunce to be vnleeful and not to be had and vsid, by cause that therof in the ij°. maner cometh synne and other harme, he muste therwith se whether of and bi the same gouernaunce cometh in the first or ij°. maner eny vertuose good and other good or no; and whethir al thilk good so comyng fro and bi the seid gouernaunce be more or lasse than is al the yuel comyng bi the same gouernaunce: and but if he can schewe sureli or miche likeli, that al the now seid good so comyng fro and bi the seid gouernaunce, is lasse than is al the now seid yuel comyng oonli in the ij°. maner fro and bi the same gouernaunce, ellis his proof can haue no colur.² But so it is, that out, fro, and bi the bifore seid politik gouernaunce of ouerte and netherte had and vsid in the clergie cometh in the firste maner and also in the ij°. maner miche good of vertu, of pees, and of grace, and of blisse, and myche forbarring of synnes, which ellis wolde come forth; as it is open ynow to ech mannys resoun: and no man can make him sure and siker, that fro and bi the seid politik gouernaunce cometh oonli in the ij°. maner more yuel than is the good comyng bi the same gouernaunce, and than is the yuel which schulde come fro and bi the noun hauyng of the same seid gouernaunce. Wherefore no

¹ out and bi of, MS.

² Probably a clerical error for colour.

man mai by this ouer baarli taken meene proue that the seid iiij^e. gouernaunce is vnleeful bi this cause oonli, that fro and bi it cometh yuel in the ij^e. seid maner oonli. CHAP. III.

Not withstonding that aftir the trewe speche which in propriist wise ouzte be here in this mater spokun, that is to seie, in the firste maner, no synne or yuel cometh fro and bi the seid politik iiij^e. gouernaunce, but fro and bi mennys freelnessis, as is now bifore sumwhat declarid; and ful myche good cometh fro and bi the seid politik gouernaunce in trewist and propriist maner of speche bi these wordis "comyng fro " and bi:" certis if out, fro, and bi eny gouernaunce cometh nedis synne in the firste maner, that is to seie, if thilk gouernaunce schal needis be cause of synne whanne he is had and vsid, sotheli y can not se but that thilk gouernaunce is vnleeful and not to be had and vsid, how euer miche goostli or worldli good schal come in the first or ij^e. maner bi the same gouernaunce. Forwhi more is ech synne to be fled that it bi his verry cause be not doon, than eny good goostli or worldli is to be souzt aftir that it bi his cause or occasioun¹ be doon or bifalle,² as it is in othere placis of my writingis cleerli schewid. More declaracioun longing to this mater is sett bifore in the iiij^e. partie of this present book, the vij^e. chapitre.

An other doom of reson is, bi which myzte to manie seme that the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce ouzte not be had in the clergie. Forwhi, if the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce hade³ be profitable to the clergie and to al the hool chirche of God, Crist him silf bi his owne persoon immediatli and at the next hadde putt in hise daies this iiij^e. gouernaunce into the clergie,

At the same time, if any institution can be shown to be the proper cause of any evil, it should be abolished, whatever amount of good it may either cause or occasion.

The second fallacious argument from reason. If the variety of ranks in the clergy had been profitable to the church, Christ its greatest friend would have appointed them, which he did not do.

¹ *accasioun*, MS.

² *bi falle* MS., (without hyphen).

³ This word is written in a later hand on an erasure: *hadde* is the usual orthography of the MS.

CHAP. III.

or hadde bede expresseli to men that thei schulden rere vp the seid *iiij^e*. gouernaunce into the clergie and into the chirche; namelich sithen Crist loued the clergie and the chirche more than eny othere men euere loueden the clergie, for which loue thei reriden up the seid *iiij^e*. principal gouernaunce in the chirche. But so it is, that we mowen not seie and holde that Crist in his owne persoon and in hise daies in this world immediatli puttid into the chirche the seid *iiij^e*. principal gouernaunce, neither that he expresseli bade it to be putt into the chirche. Forwhi neuerneither of these *ij*. thingis ben writun in the Newe Testament. Wherefore the seid *iiij^e*. principal gouernaunce is not to be had in the chirche.

Although this argument has been already answered as applied to another matter, yet it may be denied that Christ did not appoint the ranks objected against; for he constituted Peter the head of the Apostles, and the rock of the church.

Answeres herto ful good and sufficient is sett bifore in the *ij^e*. partie of this book, the *ix^e*.¹ chapter, thorow-out al it what is seid there for answer to the *ij^e*. semyng skile bifore sett there in the same *ix^e*.¹ chapter. Neuertheles another answer mai be sett to this *ij^e*. semyng doom of resoun here now bifore formed, which answer is this: That Crist willid the seid *iiij^e*. gouernaunce to be rerid up bi prudence of men in the chirche aftir his passing fro this world, and that he allowith and approueth the seid rering up and setting up of the *iiij^e*. gouernaunce bi mennys prudence into the clergie and into the chirche, as if he had so do it immediatli bi his owne persoon. And herto sufficient euidence expresseli is had in the Newe Testament, Iohun the first chapter, whanne Crist seide to Peter that "he schulde be clepid Cephas," or heed,² and Math. xvj^e. ̄, whanne Crist seid to Petir thus: *And y seie to thee thou art Peter, and upon this stoon y schal bilde my chirche*; as who euere wole se that these textis prouen and grounden this *ij^e*. answer, go

¹ *vij^e*., MS. (twice). See p. 381, seq.

² Pecoock imagines that Cephas is connected with κεφαλῆ; see below.

he into the iiij^e. chapter of this present iiij^e. partie ; for there this is openli schewid, wherbi it is open that the ij^e. premysse in this now mad ij^e. argument is vntrewe and is to be denyed. And thus myche as here for answeare and assoiling to the ij^e. semyng doom of resoun azens the iiij^e. principal gouernaunce.

CHAP. III.

The iiij^e. principal conclusioun concernyng and biholding the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce is this : The seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce spokun in the bigynnyng of this present iiij^e. parti is leeful. That this present conclusioun is trewe y proue this : Ech gouernaunce or conuersacioun or policie, which Holi Scripture werneth not and forbedith not, doom of cleer and weel disposid natural resoun weerneth not and forbedith not, mannys lawe weerneth not and forbedith not, is leeful and not worthi be vndirnome and blamed. But so it is, that the now bifore rehercid iiij^e. gouernaunce, conuersacioun, and policie vsid in the clergie is not weerned and forbodun bi Holi Scripture, neither bi doom of resoun, neither bi mannys lawe. Wherefore needis folewith, that the now bifore rehercid iiij^e. politik gouernaunce had and vsid in the clergie of Goddis chirche in erthe is leeful ynouz, and is not worthi be vndirnome and blamed. The firste premysse of this argument muste needis be grauntid. Forwhi al forbodun thing is forbodun bi Holy Scripture, or by doom of resoun, or bi mannys lawe ; for as myche as we kunnen fynde no mo autentik forbeders. But so it is, that al vnleeful thing is forbodun. Wherefore al vnleeful thing is forbodun bi Holi Scripture, or bi doom of resoun, or bi mannys lawe. And thanne ferther thus, al vnleeful thing is forbodun of Holi Scripture, or bi doom of resoun, or by mannys lawe. Wherefore al not forbodun bi Holi Scripture, bi resoun, or bi mannys lawe, is not vnleeful. And so the firste premysse of the principal argument is weel and sufficientli proued. That the ij^e. premysse of the

THE THIRD
CONCLUSION.
Variety of ranks
among the clergy
is lawful. Proof
of the conclusion.
It is neither for-
bidden by Scrip-
ture, reason, nor
man's law.

CHAP. III.

same principal argument is trewe, it is open bi al what is bfore going in this present iiij^e. partie for proofis of the first and ij^e. principal conclusions concernyng and biholding the iiij^e. seid gouernaunce. Wherefore this present ij^e. principal conclusioun thus folewing out and bi these ij. premyssis is needis trewe.

iiij. CHAPTER.

THE FOURTH CONCLUSION. Scripture allows the polity in question. One high-priest governed the whole Jewish church, as the pope now rules the whole Christian church.

THE iiij^e. principal conclusioun concernyng and biholding the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce is this: Holi Scripture bothe in the Oold Testament and in the Newe allowith¹ the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce. That this conclusioun is trewe, y may proue bi ij. principal argumentis, of which oon is this: In the Oold Testament God ordeyned oon bischop to be aboue in reule and iurisdiccioin to alle the preestis and dekenis, and so to alle the clergie in Goddis chirche being thanne; euen as the pope is now oon persoon aboue in reule and² in iurisdiccioin to alle preestis and dekenys and to al the clergie in the chirche of God being now, as it is open. And so, thouz bicause al the cuntre in which the Iewis in tho daies dwelliden was not but lital, (for it was not so large as is the rewme of pure Englund,) and preestis and dekenis weren fewe thanne in noumbre, it was no nede that manie bischopis schulden be thanne upon dyuerse multitudis of preestis, and that manie archibischopis schulden be thanne upon dyuerse multitudis of bischopis; and nede askith now among Cristen men forto so be, bi cause that Cristen men occupien now manie rewmes and bizende grete sees and a this side grete sees, and therfore as ther

¹ allowith and approueth, MS. first hand).

² and is interlineated in a later hand.

yn the now seid dyuersitie of thilk¹ oold politik gouernaunce werneth not neither contrarieth this newe politik gouernaunce ;—ȝit the politik gouernaunce being thanne in the oold clergie and the politik² gouernaunce being now in the newe clergie accorden in this, that aboute preestis and dekenys be a bischop, and aboute the al hool clergie be oon heed, being oon persoon and hizest of al the clergie ; and so thilk oold politik gouernaunce ordeyned bi God him silf allowith and approueth and helpith to conferme this newe iij^e. politik gouernaunce vsid and had in the clergie of the chirche now being. Certis no text or processe of the old lawe can be founde forto in eny worth sowne aȝens this bifore rehercid politik gouernaunce of ouerte and netherte in the clergie of the Cristen chirche ; and if eny such text or processe be pretendid to so sowne, lete him come forth and schewe him self, that to him be maad answeare.

That Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament allowith³ this same now seid gouernaunce, y mai proue thus : Holi Writt of the Newe Testament makith mensioun, Iohun firste chapter, that Crist seide to Symount Petir thus : *Thou art Symount the sone of Iohanna, thou shalt be clepid Cephas*, or heed ; and thanne Iohun settith to this, “ which is interpretid, Petir ; ” and i^e. Cor. ix. c. in the bigynnyng, and i^e. Cor. xv. c. in the bigynnyng, and Galat. ij. c. toward the myddis, Poul clepid Peter Cephas ; and as Ierom witnessith,⁵

³ Christ appointed Peter to be head of the Christian clergy.

¹ *tho thilk*, MS.

² *the oold politik*, MS.

³ *allowith and approueth*, MS. (first hand).

⁴ *ȝt.*, MS.

⁵ Pecock's blunders are really unpardonable : what St. Jerome does say is this :—“ In evangelio et in aliis Pauli epistolis et in hac

quoque ipsa (ad Galatas) modo *Cephas*, modo *Petrus* scribitur. Non quo aliud significet Petrus, aliud Cephas : sed quod quam nos Latine et Græce *petram* vocemus, hanc Hebræi et Syri propter linguæ inter se viciniam *Cephan* nuncupent.” S. Hieron. in Ep. ad Gal. lib. i. c. 2. (Op. tom. vii. p. 409. Ed. Vall.)

CHAP. IV.

Cephas is no word of Hebrew, but it is a word of Grew, in which langage it¹ is as myche to seie as *heed*; and it is also a word of Sire tunge, in which it is as miche to seie as *fundament*, or *ground*, or *stable*. Thanne her vpon y argue thus: Peter was heed, in the maner in which noon of the othere Apostlis was heed: for ellis cause hadde be noon good, whi Crist schulde haue seid so singulerli to him and not to othere thus: *Thou schalt be callid heed*; and herwith it is trewe, that no thing is an heed but of sum certeyn bodi; wherfore of sum bodi Petir was heed, of which bodi noon of the othere apostlis was heed. And ferther thus: This bodi was not other than peple; wherfore of peple Peter was heed, in maner in which noon other Apostle was heed. And sithen ech Apostle was heed of oon certeyn parcel of peple, or ellis of alle the lay peple of the world iointli with hise felawis, it folewith nedis that Petir was heed of al the clergie, and so of alle preestis and of al the lay partie; for in noon other wise it can be ȝouun that he was heed in a dyuers and different maner fro ech other Apostle, and in which maner noon other Apostle was heed.

Whether Peter was made head of the church during Christ's life on earth, or after his ascension by appointment of the Apostles, or after his own death in the persons of his successors in the Roman see, in any case this headship was ordained by divine providence.

Which thing thus concludid and proued had and grauntid, it is to be argued ferther therof thus: Peter was heed of the chirche of God in erthe, for ellis the bfore sett wordis of Crist seid to Peter, Iohun i^c. ȓ., hadden not be trewe. Wherfore Peter was thus heed, whilis Crist lyued here in erthe; or ellis aftir Cristis ascencioun, whilis Petir in his owne persoon lyued; or ellis he was thus heed in hise successouris, after that Peter was deed. If thou graunte the firste, that Peter was heed of the Apostlis and of the chirche, whilis Crist lyued, thanne thou grauntist that Crist him silf and bi him silf ordeyned and made

¹ it is interlineated in a later hand.

Peter to be so heed. And skile was ther noon, whi Peter in his owne persoon was so mad to be heed in his lijf, but that lijk good skile or more nede was, that aftir his deeth he schulde haue summe successouris in to the same cure and office. Wherefore it is also therbi to be grauntid. If thou graunte not the firste, but the ij^e. or the iij^e., that Peter was maad to be so heed aftir Cristis ascencioun, and that bi the eleccioun and ordinaunce of the Apostlis and of the clergie; or ellis that al the while Petir him silf was bischop of Rome, he was not thus¹ heed ouer al the chirche of God, but that the successouris of Petir in the chirche of Rome weren heedis to al the chirche of God, and that bi eleccioun² and ordinaunce of men:—ȝit certis thou maist not seie nay, but this was doon bi Goddis puryaunce and prouydence, and bi Goddis welwilling that it³ schulde be doon; in as myche as he denouncid bifore and bihiȝte bifore in maner of laud to Peter that it schulde be doon, whanne he seide to Peter, Iohun i^e. ẽ., *Thou shalt be clepid heed*; and ellis also Poul wolde not as in remembring of this promys maad to³ Peter have clepid him so ofte “heed.” And so folewith that this, that oon persoon successour to Petir was bi processe of tyme heed of al the chiroche, as the pope is now heed, was of the wil and prouydence of God: and thus it may not be ascapid, but that Scripture of Cristis bifore denouncing and of Cristis bifore biheting groundith that popehode⁴ is of the wil of Crist to be had in sum persoon to be chose as the successour of Petir.

And thanne ferther thus: If Crist wolde Petir or hisse successouris to stonde in heedhode of al the chirche in erthe, that is to seie, in popehode of al the

The diuinely appointed primacy of Peter involves the idea of lower headships in the

¹ *this* is added in the margin by a later hand.

² *the eleccioun*, MS. (first hand).

³ *it* is interlineated in a later hand; and similarly to below.

⁴ *the popehode*, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. IV.

church, as patriarchs, archbishops, &c.

chirche in erthe, (and this Crist wolde not ordeyne or purueie to be ordeyned saue for sum skile and resoun,) it folewith that in the same now seid weelwilling of Crist is includid and vndirstonde, that he wolde in the same or in lijk weelwilling that as the chirche of God encrecid in erthe in noumbre and multitude of persoones, so othere louzer heedis vndir nethe Petir or his successour schuden be in the chirche in erthe, mo or fewer, aftir that the noumbre of hem schulde suffice into the good reule of the chirche. And so folewith that in this, that Crist seide to¹ Peter, *Thou shalt be clepid heed*, is includid not oonli this, that Peter and hise successouris schulden be heed of al the chirche in erthe or that hise successouris schulden so be, but also that vndirnethe the hizest heed schulden be louzer heedis, as patriarkis, primatis, archibischopis, and bischopis, seruyng and laboring into lijk eende for which Peter or hise successouris weren ordeyned for to be the heed, that is to seie, the hizest reuler in the chirche of God in erthe.

Christ declared Peter to be the rock on which the church should be built. No other interpretation of his words is admissible, as appears from the general tenour of Christ's declaration and from the immediate context.

The ij^e. argument into the proof of this present iiij^e. principal conclusioun is this: Math. xvj^e. c̄., whanne Peter hadde seid to Crist thus: *Thou art the Sone of lyuyng God*, Crist seide to Peter thus: *Blessid art thou, Symount Bariona, for fleisch and blood schewid not this to thee, but my Fader which is in heuene. And y seie to thee, for thou art Petir, and upon this stoon y schal bilde my chirche, and the zatis of helle schulen not haue the maistrie azens hir. And to thee y schal zeue the keies of the kingdom of heuene; and what euer thing thou schalt binde vpon erthe schal be bounde in heuene, and what eni² thing thou*

¹ to is interlineated in a later and.

² Written on an erasure, and apparently a clerical error for *euer*,

which occurs in both forms of Wiclif's version; but Pecoek has here deviated from it more than he commonly does.

schalt louce vpon erthe schal be lousid in heuene. And thouz summe men vndirstonden in this processe bi this stoon the persoon of Crist and not the persoon of ¹Petir,² whanne it is seid thus: *And y seie to thee, thou art Petir, and vpon this stoon y schal bilde my chirche, and the gatis of helle, et cætera;* and summe othere vndirstonden bi this stoon the feith which Peter thanne knouelehid to Crist,³ certis it is miche⁴ more likeli that bi the stoon the persoon of Peter schulde be vndirstonde, rather than the persoon of Crist or eny other thing than the persoon of Peter. Forwhi in the clausul going next bifore the hool clausul, in which it is spokun of the stoon, Crist spak to Petir and of Petir, seiying thus, *And y seie to thee, for thou art Petir;* also in the tweyne clausulis, next folewing the hool clausul conteyning the speche of the stoon, Crist spake to Peter and of Petir, seiying thus, *And to thee y schal zeue the keies of the kingdom of heuene;* and eftsoone next thus, *And what euer thing thou schalt binde, et cætera.* Wherefore it is at moost⁵ likeli to be trewe, that the myddil clausul, closid bitwixe these now rehersed clausulis, was seid to Petir and of Petris persoon; zhe, and zit miche the more herfore, for ellis this clausul, *And y seie to thee, for thou art Peter,* hadde be seid in waast and in veyn to Petir and of Petris persoon, and hadde be seid vnpertynently and vn hangingli fro the materis of the

¹ of is interlineated in a later hand.

² "Super hanc, inquit, petram quam confessus es, ædificabo ecclesiam meam." S. August. in Job. Tract. 124. "Super hanc petram, id est, super me ædificabo ecclesiam meam." S. Anselm. in loco.

³ "τῇ πέτρᾳ . . . τυνάστω τῇ πύλῃ τῆς βασιλείας." S. Chrysost.

in loco. For more information respecting the patristic interpretations of this text, see Barrow, *On the Pope's Suprem.*, pp. 59, 60, Lond. 1687, from whom these passages are taken.

⁴ miche is interlineated in a later hand.

⁵ the moost, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. IV.

clausulis folewing and afore going, and as a thing seid not to purpos, but if the clausulis ioyned therto weren also seid of Petiris persoon. And so therfore the hool clausul, in which is mensioun of the stoon, was seid of Petiris persoon.

Confirmation of this interpretation. Any other view of the text would make Christ speak to no purpose, and as no wise man would speak.

Confirmacioun into this same is this: If y were to seie to my felawe, that y wolde do eny thing to myn owne persoon; (as that y wolde drinke or ete or slepe), wherto schulde y seie next bifore to him thus: "Thou art in this place, or thou art there, or thou art Iohun or William, y schal do this thing or that thing, as that y schal dyne or drinke or slepe?" Certis it schulde not bicomme me or eny man, having ful smal witt and discrecioun, forto so in-pertynentli¹ speke, and forto sette to gidere in speche maters not hanging to gidere. Wherefore sithen miche rathir we ouzten not bere an honde that Crist spake impertinentli, and in such maner which bisemeth not eny man other than a fool forto speke, (namelich, withoute eny nede of the better therto dryuynge or more sownyng than to the contrarie,) it muste needis folewe that the seid hool myddil clausul (speking of the stoon) Crist spak to Peter and of Petiris persoon, and not of his owne persoon or of eny othir thing dyuers fro Petiris persoon; euen as in the clausul next bifore going and in the ij. clausulis next folewing aftir the seid hool clausul Crist spake of Petris persoon.

This interpretation being admitted, it follows that the papal polity, with its subordinate patriarchs, archbishops, &c., is of divine appointment.

Vpon which thing thus concludid and proued y argue ferther in lijk maner, as y haue argued bifore in the next bifore going principal argument thus: If Crist bihihte that he wolde upon Peter bilde his chirche, y aske whether Crist meened that he wolde bilde his chirche upon the persoon of Peter, whilis that Crist lyued here, or aftir Cristis ascencioun; or ellis that

¹ So written at length in the MS.

Crist wolde bilde his chirche not upon the persoon of Peter, but upon hise successouris? Oon of these thre thou muste needis graunte; and which euer of these iij. thou wolte graunte, therof folewith weel that it is the wil of God, that upon tho, whiche ben chose in the chirche to be the successouris of Peter, Crist bildid his chirche in erthe. And therof folewith, as it is in lijk maner dryue and concludid in the next bifore going argument, that it is and was the wil of Crist and his prouydence and puruyaunce, that with this hizest heed of the chirche schulden be louzer heedis oon aboue an other, and in the multitude which the good reule of the chirche bi resoun wolde aske. And bi these now bifore mad argumentis the iiij^e. principal conclusioun of this iiij^e. partie is sufficientli proued.

The iij^e. argument into the same iiij^e. principal conclusioun is this: Holi Writt of the Newe Testament wole that in the lay partie of Cristen peple be ouerers and netherers fro the louzest ordre into the hizest aboue the comoun peple, as is open i^e. Pet. ij^e. c., where Peter seith thus: *Be ze suget to ech creature for God, either to the king, as to him that is hizer in state; either to dukis, as to thilk that ben sent of him to the vengeaunce of mys doers and to the preising of gode men; for so it is the wille of God, et cætera.* And in like maner it is writun, Rom. xij^e. c., where Poul seith thus: *Euery soule be suget to the hizer powers, for ther is no power but of God, et cætera. Therefore he that azenstondith power azenstondith the ordinaunce of God, et cætera. For princis ben not to the drede¹ of good werk, but of yuel, et cætera, for he is the mynystre of God, et cætera.* And Crist him silf accordauntli therto in the Gospel, Math. xxij^e. c., seith thus: *Zelde ze tho thingis whiche ben of Cesar to Cesar, and whiche ben of God to God; and in an*

Also the New Testament expressly sanctions a monarchical form of government among the Christian laity, and as the same need or utility of such government exists among clergy and laity, it sanctions by implication a monarchical, i.e., a papal polity among the clergy.

¹ to drede, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. IV.

other place, Iohun xix^e. c̄., Crist seide to Pilat thus: *Thou schuldist not have power into me, but if it were zourun to thee from aboue, that is to seie, fro God; accordngli to it that Poul seith, Rom. xiiij^e. c̄., thus: Ther is no power, but of God, et cætera.* But so it is, that Holi Writt wole not such ouerte and netherte in dyuerse statis be so as is now rehercid, saue for sum special cause and nede founde in the lay peple, and asking that thilk ouerte and netherte be; and thilk same or lijk miche cause and nede forto lijk wise aske is founde in the clergie, which or how miche is founde in the layfe, as schal be schewid anon afir in the next chapter. Wherefore folewith that ther yn and in that, that Holi Scripture wole openli such dyuersite of statis and degrees be in the lay parti, and for a cause afir in the next chapter to be rehercid, he wole lijk weel priueili lijk dyuersite of statis and degrees be in the clergie for lijk cause there founde, namelich sithen who euer biddith openli ouzwhere eny thing to be doon for a cause or nede wole priueili and menyngli in the same bidding lijk thing be¹ doon in othere placis of his reuling, where is the same cause and nede or lijk cause and nede. These iij. argumentis sufficien for prouyng of this present iiij^e. principal conclusioun.

Other arguments might be adduced, on which however little stress can be laid. One is that Timothy and Titus were by the authority of Paul ordained bishops, having priests under them, as appears by his epiistles; and that such ordinations are to be regarded examples of a general apostolical constitution.

Othere argumentis myzten be mad in to the prouyng of the same iiij^e. conclusioun; but bi cause thei mowen esili and liztli be assoilid bi rizt likely colour, therfore y sette not miche bi hem. Neuertheles y schal sette forth hem heere, that men mowen se how tho argumentis mowen colorabili ynouȝ be assoilid. The Apostilis of Crist maden suche preestis, whiche schulden vnder hem make othere preestis vpon the lay peple. Forwhi Thymothe, a disciple of Poul, was mad a preest of Poul, as it is open i^e. Thim. iiij^e. c̄., where it

¹ to be, MS. (first hand).

is seid to him thus : *Nile thou litil charge the grace which is in thee, that is zounn to thee bi prophecie with putting on of the hondis of a preest; and also* ij^c. Thim. i^c. ē., Poul seide to Thymothie thus : *I moneste thee, that thou reise azen the grace of God that is in thee bi the setting of myn hondis.* And Tite, an other disciple of Poul, was maad preest, as it is open Tite i^c. ē., where Poul seide to Tite thus : *For cause of this thing y lefte thee at Crete, that thou amende tho thingis that failen, and that thou ordeyne preestis bi citees, as also y disposid to¹ thee.* Certis, sithen Tite had power forto make preestis, he was at the leest a preest him silf. Neuertheless ferther thus : Sithen Tite was such a preest, that Poul bade him for to make and ordeyne othere preestis and forto correcte defaultis as weel as forto moneste, as is open bi the now alleggid text, and noon persoon hath power to comaunde or correcte an other being in euen and in like state and degre with him, (forwhi whi schulde he thanne more correcte the other, than he schulde be correctid of the other?) it folewith that Tite was such a preest, that he was aboue othere preestis vndir him. And sithen ech preest being bi his preesthode aboue othere preestis is a bischop, it folewith that Tite was a bischop aboue othere louzer preestis being vndir him, and that bi the entent and purpos of Seint Poul there. And sithen which oon in preesthode Tite was, such oon Tymothie was, for as² miche as Thymothie was as reuerent a persoon as was Tite, and as myche conuersaunt with Poul as was Tite, and was myche comendid of Poul, and to whom Poul wrote more in quantite and more solempneli and oftir than to Tite; it folewith that also Thymothie was a bischop aboue hise preestis being vndir him. And ferther, sithen as

¹ to is interlineated in a later hand.

² for as as, MS.

CHAP. IV.

Poul dide and ordeyned and bade to Tite¹ and to Thymothie, in lijk maner the othere Apostilis diden, ordeyneden, and baden to othere persoonen in her side and in her cuntre, it folewith that not oonli Seint Poul but also the othere Apostilis entendiden, meeneden, ordeyneden, and baden that bischopis schulden be making to hem and vndir hem louzer preestis.

Further proof from the writings of Dionysius the Areopagite that Timothy and Titus were bishops having priests under them.

Also this, that Tite and Thymothie weren bischopis aboue othere louzer to hem preestis, is open ynouȝ bi the epistle which Dynys writith to Tite, and bi his book *Of the Chirchis Ierarchie* which he writith to Thymothie. Forwhi in the v^e. chapitre of the now seid book Dynys declarith openli a bischop to be aboue othere louzer preestis;² and ferthermore in the same book, the firste chapitre in the eende,³ and in othere of hise bookis also he clepith and seith Thymothie to be such a bischop as is now seid to be aboue othere preestis. And ȝit ferthermore in his epistle to Tite⁴ he wole that Tyte receyue of Thymothie certein doctrine writun, which⁵ Dynys in his book *Of the Chirchis Ierarchie*⁶ wole⁷ be learned and knowun in hise daies of bischopis oonli, and be priuey to hem oonli; and therfore ther yn he muste needis meene that Tite was such a bischop as was Thymothie.

But it may fairly be replied that St. Paul's acts are only to be regarded as a

Certis, to al this hool argument, with alle hise enforcingis, it may be seid with sufficient colour and likelihode, that al what this argument concludith and

¹ bade Tite, MS. (first hand).

² "ἀλλ' οὐδὲ αὐτὸς ἱερεὺς ἔσται, μὴ πρὸς τῶν ἱεραρχικῶν τελειώσεων εἰς τοῦτο κεκληρωμένος." Pseudo-Dionys. Areop. *De Ecol. Hierarch.* c. 5., (Op. tom. 1. p. 360. Ed. Cord.), where is much more to the same purpose.

³ Id. c. 1. pp. 235, 236.

⁴ "ὁ μὲν ἱερεὺς Τιμόθεος, ὃ καλὲ Τίτε, οὐκ οἶδα εἰ τινας τῶν διεγνωσμένων

μοι θεολογικῶν συμβάλλων ἀπελήλυθεν ἀνήκοος, κ. τ. λ." Pseudo-Dionys. Areop. *Ep. ad Tit.* (Op. tom. ii. p. 141).

⁵ in which, MS. (first hand).

⁶ "ὁ μεταδώσεις (speaking to Timothy) ἐτέρῃ παρὰ τοῦς ὁμοταγεῖς σοι θεοειδῆς ἱεροτελεστάς, κ. τ. λ." Id. *Eccl. Hier.* c. 1. p. 236.

⁷ he wole, MS.

proueth was doon in the tyme of the Apostlis, aftir that the cisme, of which it is spokun, i^e. Cor. i^e. and iij^e. chapitris in the bigynnyngis, bifille; for remediynge of which cisme, as Ierom conceyueth,¹ bischophode was founde and ordeyned to be aboue preesthode; and bi lijk skile othere statis of ouerte aboue bischophode, and not eer neithir bi Cristis owne deede; neuertheles bi Cristis weelwilling, as it is bifore schewid in this present chapter.

CHAP. IV.
means to remedy a particular schism, and not as a pattern of church-government.

Thanne ferther it myȝte be argued, that aboue these now seid bischopis, wilned and ordeyned by the Apostlis to be, the Apostlis willeden and meeneden an othir degree and state in preesthode to be aboue bischopis; ȝhe, and that thei maden² and ordeyneden a persoon into thilk same degree and state, bifore the cisme had i^e. Cor. ij^e. and iij^e. chapitris, y proue thus: The Apostlis helden and meeneden hem silf being of the noumbre of xij. to haue state and degree in preesthode aboue tho othere now seid bischopis, which thei made aftirward out of the noumbre of xij., as therto sowneth miche the processe, Acts i^e. 5., bi manie therto markable wordis. And also wherto ellis wolden the xj. Apostlis in thilk

It might also be contended that in the solemn election of Matthias the Apostles intimated their office to have a special character, or that they were superior to other bishops having priests under them; i. e. that they were themselves archbishops.

¹ "Diligenter Apostoli verba attendamus dicentis: *Ut constituas per civitates presbyteros . . . postea intulit, Oportet enim episcopum sine crimine esse. . . . Idem est ergo presbyter qui et episcopus, et antequam diaboli instinctu studia in religione fierent et diceretur in populis: Ego sum Pauli, ego Apollo, ego autem Cepha*, communi presbyterorum consilio ecclesie gubernabantur. Postquam vero unusquisque eos quos baptizaverat suos putabat, non Christi, in toto orbe decretum est, ut unus de presbyteris

electus superponeretur ceteris, ad quem omnis ecclesie cura pertineret et schismatum semina tollerentur. . . . Sicut ergo presbyteri sciunt se ex ecclesie consuetudine ei, qui sibi prepositus fuerit, esse subjectos; ita episcopi noverint se magis consuetudine, quam dispositionis Dominice veritate presbyteris esse majores, et in commune debere ecclesiam regere, &c. S. Hieron. in Ep. ad Tit. c. 1. (Op. tom. vii. pp. 694-696. Ed. Vall.)

² maiden, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. IV.

tyme chese oon and make oon syngulerli with hem oonli and no mo, (that is to seie, Mathie,) but if thei hadden feelid and meened that thei xij. hadden a synguler prerogatif and dignite, state, and degree, and ouerte, more than othere persoones schulden haue, whiche thei wolden aftirward chese and assigne into preesthode? And also whi ellis wolden thei make this choise of Mathie into the noubre of xij. with so greet solempnite and bi preier going afore and with lott and token askid of God, but if thei hadden holde and meened, as now is seid that thei helden and meeneden? And in this meenyng and holding the Apostlis chosen Mathie forto be euene to hem in the dignite, degree, and state of the xij. Wherefore folewith that the Apostlis feleden hem silf to haue state and degree in preesthode aboue othere bischopis, whiche thei aftirward maden and ordeyneden bisidis the noubre of xij.; and also thei maden and ordeyned such a persoon lijk to hem forto be aboue the othere bischopis aftir comyng. And so folewith that the Apostlis helden and meeneden hem silf to be as archibischopis.

But it may fairly be replied that Peter was only moved by devotion to complete the number of authoritative eye-witnesses of Christ's miracles, and that he did not imply that Matthias was elected into a higher rank than that of priest.

To this argument it mai be answerid colorabli and likeli ynouȝ, that Peter, Acts, i. c. ̃, whanne he fille into deuocioun forto haue a special and a singuler successour to Iudas, was not moued therto bi nede of resoun or of feith, but bi a deuocioun which was honest and ȝit myȝt be lackid; and that he entendid forto chese Mathie into this, that he myȝte make the same hool noubre of homeli and experimental witnessers of Cristis deedis, and not into this that Mathie schulde be chose therwith in to eny hizer state than into preesthode: and to this deuocioun of Peter, for that it was honest, God condescendid, as he dooth ful ofte in performyng the desiris of hise louers, though thei ben not needis necessarie. And thus the ij. argument next bfore mad is bi sufficient likelihode assoillid. And therefore y stonde to the iij. firste to gidere going

argumentis in this present chapter forto proue this CHAP. IV.
present iiij^e. principal conclusioun.

Also this present iiij^e. conclusioun may be proued bi a processe of iij. supposiciouns and of an argument formed vpon hem toward the eende of the first partie in this present book. Se he there the argument, who hath¹ desijr forto it se; namelich for that the argument there mad proueth this iiij^e. principal gouernaunce vnsoilabili.²

The fourth conclusion may also be proved in the same way as another conclusion has already been proved.

V. CHAPTER.

THE v^e. principal conclusion concernyng and bihold-
ing the seid³ iiij^e. principal gouernaunce is this: Doom
of cleerli in kinde disposid resoun iugith, allowith, and
approueth the iiij^e. principal gouernaunce sett bifore
in the bigynnyng of this present iiij^e. partie. That
this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: Resoun in
his cleer doom iugith, allowith, and approueth that
ouer a certain multitude⁴ of the louzest peple in the
layfe be oon certain lord or iuge or officer forto iuge
her causis; and that ouer a certain noubre of suche
now seid lordis or officers be oon hizer officer forto
iuge the causis rising bitwixe tho now seid louzer
lordis or officers and forto heere the compleintis of
her vndirlyngis, if thei be wrongid of the now seid
louzer lordis or officers; and in lijk maner, that ouer
and aboue manye to gidere of these laste seid hizer
lordis and officers be oon other to ouer waite hem and
her reule and gouernaunce; and so forth, til we come
vnto oon highest emperour, bi whos hizest oonheed
schal reste and pees be mad thoruz alle peple hizer

THE FIFTH
CONCLUSION.
Reason approves
the ecclesiastical
polity com-
plained of.
Proof of the con-
clusion. Since
clergy and laity
have a common
nature, different
ranks are equally
necessary for the
government of
both. Further
discussion of
this matter in
Pecock's *Book
of Priesthood*.

¹ who that hath, MS. (first hand).

³ seid is added in the margin by
a later hand.

² See Part 1. c. xix.

⁴ of multitude, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. V.

and louzer lyuyng vnder him, whanne thei wolen compleyne to him. And ellis, but if such an ordre of degrees and statis were sette in the layfe, and that oon were hizest in auctorite and power aboue alle other, resoun seeth openli that ther were no sure wey forto haue pees and reste and ritzwisnesse kept by twixe persoon and persoon, and bitwixe cuntre and cuntre, rewme and rewme: and that for the natural freelte, which bi surest experience is knowun to be in al mankinde. But so it is, that thouz of the al hool noumbre of Adamys children summe ben ordeyned to be preestis, and summe to be dekenys, and summe ben ordeyned to be craftiose¹ men and marchaundis, and summe to be othere laborers; 3it alle thei, bothe preestis and dekenis and alle othere lay persoonys, ben mad of oon lumpe of mater descending from Adam; and preestis ben born vndir coniuncciouns and constellacciouns stiring and moving into as greet freelnes and badde maners as othere lay men ben born, and also preestis ben of as badde kindeli complexiouns moving into badde and scharpe passiouns as ben lay men; and so al freelnes, which is naturali and strongli and fersly in lay men, ben lijk miche in preestis. Wherefore, sithen for this freelnes thus founde in the lay peple resoun iugith and deemth that such now seid dyuersite of statis and degrees in ouerte and netherte ben to be had in the lay parti of Goddis peple, and lijk euen and lijk myche freelte is founde naturali in the prestial parti of Goddis peple; it muste needis folewe that resoun ouzte lijk weel deeme, that lijk dyuersite of statis and degrees in ouerte and netherte ben to be had and vsid among preestis and othere clerkis in the chirche of God, as among lay persoones of the world. If preestis and bischopis

¹ *craftiose*, MS.

mowen be exempt that thei be not the children of Adam, thei mowen be excusid that thei han noon ouerer ouer hem; and if thei mowen not be ther of exemptid, sotheli thei musten needis haue ouer hem reulers. More of this mater is pleinli seid and tauzt in *The book of preesthode*, and therfore the lasse is sett here.

CHAP. V.

The vij^e. principal conclusioun concernyng and biholding the iiij^e. seid principal gouernaunce is this: The iiij^e. bfore spokun principal gouernaunce is leeful in proprist maner forto speke of leefulnes. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: What euer gouernaunce Holi Scripture and doom of cleerli disposid resoun allowen and approuen is leeful in proprist maner of speche forto speke of leefulnes. But so it is, that¹ Holi Scripture and cleer doom of resoun allowen and approuen the iiij^e. bfore spokun principal gouernaunce, as the next bfore going iiij^e. and v^e. principal conclusiouns schewen and prouen. Wherefore the same seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce is in proprist maner of leefulnes leeful.

THE SIXTH
CONCLUSION.
This polity is
strictly lawful.
Proof of the
conclusion.

The vij^e. principal conclusioun concernyng and biholding the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce is this: The iiij^e. principal gouernaunce sett bfore in the bi-gynnyng of this present iiij^e. partie is a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: What euer gouernaunce Holi Scripture and doom of kindeli weel disposid resoun allowen and approuen is a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe, as y haue ofte tauzt and proued in my writingis, namelich in the firste parti of the book clepid *The iust apprisyng of Holi Scripture*. But so it is, that Holi Scripture and doom of kindeli weel disposid resoun allowen and approuen the iiij^e. seid principal gouernaunce, as the

THE SEVENTH
CONCLUSION.
This polity is an
ordinance of
God's law. Proof
of the conclusion.

¹ that bothe, MS. (first hand.)

CHAP. V.

next bifore going iiij^e. and v^e. principal conclusiouns schewen and prouen. Wherefore the same seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce is a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe.

THE EIGHTH
CONCLUSION.
It is no sin to set
an example to
other men of
maintaining this
polity. Proof of
the conclusion.

The viij^e. principal conclusion concernyng and biholding the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce is this: It is not synne as in that and for that a man forto exauple bi hise dedis to othere men the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: It is not synne a man forto ensauple bi hise deedis to othere men eny deede or gouernaunce, which is the lawe of God. But so it is, that the iiij^e. seid principal gouernaunce is a gouernaunce of the lawe of God. Wherefore it is not synne as in that and for that a man forto ensauple bi hise deedis to othere men the seid iiij^e. principal gouernaunce. And in this y eende the mater of the ofte spokun iiij^e. principal gouernaunce.

vj.¹ CHAPTER.

The fifth
ordynance com-
plained of. The
pope and his
bisshope impose
many statutes,
some of which
are contrary to
the law of God.

THE v^e. principal gouernaunce to be tretid in this present iiij^e. partie, for which gouernaunce summe of the lay peple vndirnenen and blamen vniustli and vntreuli the clergie, is this: The pope and other louzer bischopis maken lawis of statutis and ordynauncis in greet noumbre and multitude, and chargen the louzer persoones of the clergie and the lay persoones forto kepe tho statutis and ordynauncis; and ferthermore these vndirnymers and blamers beren an hond to the clergie, that summe of tho now seid statutis, ordynauncis, and lawis ben azens the lawe and comaundement of God.

¹ The vj., MS.

Azens this now rehercid blamyng and vndirnemyng y may procede thus: If these blamers in so blamyng meenen, that no lawe of mannys ordinaunce ouzte be sett to and with the comoun Cristen lawe of God maad of lawe of kinde and of sacramentis, as manye suche blamers ben, azens her blamyng and chalenging so mad proceden and goon forth in grettist strengthe and in openest eydence alle tho conclusiouns of Scripture and of resoun, whiche bifore in this present iiij^e. partie ben mad upon bischophode and othere statis aboue preesthode and othere ordris binethe preesthode fro the bigynnyng of this present iiij^e. partie hidir to; and also alle tho conclusiouns of Scripture and of resoun, which aftir in the v^e. parti of this book prouen that religiosite of mannys ordinaunce is leeful, and may weel be sett to the comoun lawe of God mad of lawe of kinde and of sacramentis. For whi ech such seid ordre or dignite and ech such seid religiosite mad bi man is a law and ordinaunce mad bi man and sett to and with the seid comoun lawe of God; and therefore how weel such bischophode or religiose mannys lawis mowen be mad and sett to and with the lawe of God, so weel bi al resoun othere politik mennys lawis mowen be mad and sett to and with the same lawe of God; sithen bothe bischophode and archibischophode, dekenhode and religiose mannys lawis, and othere politik mennys lawis ben noon othere than mennys ordinauncis and mennys tradiciouns reuling men forto do this or that, to which as bi Goddis pleyn lawe tho men weren not bifore bounde. And therfore if it be leeful and profitable statis or ordris in the chirche aboue preesthode and binethe preesthode and religiouns be maad bi men and be sett to Goddis comoun lawe, as it is proued bifore in this iiij^e. partie and aftir proued in the v^e. party of this book; certis no man may thanne avoide, but that it is leeful ynouȝ and

CHAP. VI.

By what has been already proved, it appears that it is lawful for the clergy to make politic ordinances in addition to the divine law.

CHAP. VI.

speedful the clergie for to make othere politik lawis and ordinauncis, and forto sette hem to the comoun pley n lawe of God maad of lawe of kinde and of hise posityue sacramentis.

Again, since it is lawful for princes to make civil laws for the good government of their people, it must be equally lawful for the rulers of the church to make laws for the good government of its members.

Also it is leeful to princis with hir comounalte forto make politik and cyuyl lawis and ordinauncis for the better reule of the peple in temporal and cyuyl gouernauncis, longing into worldli pees and prosperite and worldli welthe, to be the better therbi kept and contynued. Forwhi ful weel this purpos witnessith open resoun and experience, and therto ful weel consentith Poul, i^c. Thim. i^c. 3., where he blameth men whiche maden hem curiose forto holde that suche lawis mad bi worldli princis schulde not be leeful; and the same he muste needis meene, as ofte as he weel approueth and wole in dyuerse placis of hise epistlis that boonde men schulden obeie to her temporal lordis, sithen boundage cometh yn bi mennys ordynauncis. Wherefore, bi lijk skile, it is leeful and expedient to the greet congregacioun of preestis and clerkis in the other side of the layfe lyuyng, that to the preestis and clerkis be mad bi her ouerers and with the consent of the netherers summe politik ordinauncis and lawis, for to pointe in the better and in the clerer maner to hem what and how and whanne thei schulen do this or that thing or deede; and forto pointe and lymyte and thretene peynes, but if tho deedis in the assigned maner, place, and tyme, and persoones be doon; and forto ordeyne that tho peynes be¹ zouun to the trespassers. And therefore vtterli it is plein ynou3 bi strengthe of al the processe going azens the blamyng of the iiij^c. gouernaunce sett bfore in this present iiij^c. partie and bi al the processe mad for iustifyng of the vj^c. principal gouernaunce aftir in the v^c. principal partie, that no man may iustli blame mennys

¹ *ben*, MS. (first hand).

ordinauncis and statutis and tradiciouns to be maad of the clergie and to be had and vsid as for this, that thei ben mennys lawis and mennys ordynanncis sett to the comoun lawe of God, as thouz it were vnleeful eny mennys ordynauncis to be mad and to be sett to and with the comoun lawe of God.

And if these blamers wolen pretende that thei not blamen for cause now rehercid the seid lawis had and vsid in the clergie, but for this cause that the lawis conteynen in hem contrarite to the comoun lawe of God, certes thanne these blamers musten expresseli marke, assigne, telle out, and bringe forth whiohe lawis mad bi the pope or othere bischopis and the clergie ben azens eny comaundid lawe of God. And what euere lawe of the clergie thei kunnen into this purpos point, allegge forth, and assigne, y trowe that riȝt liztli thilk lawe mai of such dif-fame and defaut be excusid and be defendid. Forwhi al that is aftir seid in the v^e. parti of this present book, the [x^e.]¹ chapter, to be priueli vndirstonde in making of eny religioun founde of man is in lijk maner thoruz out to be vndirstonde in ech positijf lawe mad bi the pope or eny other bischop or bi eny worldli prince; ȝhe, and in ech vow or ooth maad bi eny man; and therefore her chaleng and blamyng, mad in fourme and for cause rehercid in the bigynnyng of this present chapter, muste needis be had as for vniust and vntrewe.

But if any ordinance be objected against, not as being simply an human law, but as being contrary to the divine law, it must be distinctly proved to be so.

vij. CHAPTER.

If to suche bifore spokun blamers this processe now mad fro the bigynnyng of the next bifore going chapter hidir to be not sufficientli acceptid, but that

Certain formal arguments in favour of ecclesiastical laws made by human

¹ A space left in the MS. for the number.

CHAP. VII.

authority. The first argument. Whatever is not forbidden by Scripture, reason, and human law is lawful; but none of these forbid such laws: consequently they are lawful.

thei desiren to heere and haue¹ argumentis mad in fourme azens the blamyng of this v^c. gouernaunce, as argumentis ben maad bifore in fourme azens the blamyngis of the i^c., ij^c., iij^c., and iiij^c. gouernauncis; lo, (thouȝ for causis in the next chapter bifore expressid that alle the principal conclusiouns bifore going in this present iiij^c. partie and alle the conclusiouns principal aftir comyng in the v^c. partie of this book maken in her fourmes for iustifyng of the v^c. principal conclusioun;² ȝit) argumentis in sum fourme schulen therto be mad alredi thus: Ech gouernaunce, which Holi Scripture werneth not and forbedith not, doom of cleer and weel disposid natural resoun weerneth not and forbedith not, mannys lawe werneth not and forbedith not, is leeful and not worthi be vndirnome and blamed. But so it is, that forto haue lawis and tradiciouns of mennys ordinauncis is a gouernaunce, which Holi Scripture werneth not and forbedith not, doom of weel disposid resoun werneth not and forbedith not, mannys lawe weerneth not and forbedith not. Wherefore thilk gouernaunce is leeful and not worthi be blamed and be reproofed.

The first premiss proved already.

The firste premyssse of this argument is sumwhat clerid in the iij^c. partie of this present book the xj^c.³ chapter, but miche better in this present iiij^c. partie of this same present book the iij^c. chapter; and therefore no thing for proof of him here.

The second premiss proved. Neither Scripture nor reason forbid any ordi-

For proof of the ij^c. premyssse, that neither Holi Scripture, neither doom of cleer resoun werneth or forbedith⁴ the now⁵ v^c. principal bifore spokun gouer-

¹ to haue, MS. (first hand).

² Probably we should read *gouernaunce*.

³ xij^c., MS.

⁴ for bedith, MS. (without hyphen).

⁵ The words seem to be disarranged. Probably we should read: *the now bifore spokun v^c., &c.*

naunce, y proue thus: What euer thing weerneth or forbedith eny gouernaunce, he weerneth and forbedith¹ in that ech other gouernaunce being of lijk condicioun and of lijk state or nature, namelich whanne the thing weernyng or forbeking weerneth not and forbedith not in mannys moral conuersacioun aftir pure uolunte, but aftir the meryt of the gouernancis which he fyndith to be weerned and forbodun. But so it is, that neither Holi Scripture, neither doom of cleer resoun weerneth and forbedith eny gouernaunce, which thei forbeden, for and bi eny other cause than for the state and the merit and the condicioun of the gouernaunce bi hem forbodun. Wherefore it folewith that if Holi Scripture or cleer resoun forbedun the now spokun v°. principal gouernaunce of mennys lawis to be maad and be vsid in the clergie and layfe, Holi Scripture and doom of cleer resoun schulden forbede lijk weel and lijk myche and lijk soone the iiij°. principal gouernaunce bifore spoken in this present iiij°. partie, [and] the vj°. principal gouernaunce spokun aftir in the v°. partie of this book; sithen thilk iiij°. and vj°. and this v°. gouernauncis ben of lijk condicioun, state, cause, and merit for to be forbodun and weerned, if eny of hem schulde bi Holi Writt or resoun be weerned, as bifore in the next chapter of this iiij°. partie it is schewid. But so it is, that neither Holi Scripture neither cleer resoun weerneth or forbedith the iiij°. seid principal gouernaunce, as it is openli proued bifore fro the bigynnyng of this present iiij°. partie hidirto in this present book; neither forbedith the vj°. gouernaunce, as it is open after thoruz the v°. parti of this book. Wherefore nedis folewith, that neither Holi Scripture, neither doom of cleer resoun weerneth or forbedith this v°. principal gouernaunce to be had and be vsid.

CHAP. VII.

naunce except on its own merits; and as they forbid not divers ranks among the clergy, neither the religious orders, as this book proves, so they forbid not ecclesiastical laws generally made by human authority, since all these are of a like nature and merit.

¹ *forbedith*, MS.

CHAP. VII.

Another formal argument. Scripture and reason by like reasoning approve of such ecclesiastical laws.

An other argument to be maad in fourme for this present purpos, that¹ Holy Scripture and doom of cleer resoun allowen and approuen and witnessen the now seid v°. principal gouernaunce, mai be this: What euer thing allowith and approueth eny gouernaunce, he in that same allowing and approuyng allowith and approueth ech other gouernaunce being of lijk condicioun, state, and nature; if the thing so approuyng and allowing approue and allowe not in mannys moral conuersacioun aftir pure wantown volunte, but aftir that the merit of [the] thing to be allowid and approved askith. Wherfore, sithen² Holi Scripture and doom of cleer resoun approuen and allowen not eny gouernaunce in mannys moral lyuyng, other wise than thilk gouernaunce is worthi bi his state and his condicioun to be approued and allowid, and the iiij°. and the vj°. seid principal gouernauncis ben of lijk state, condicioun, nature, and merit with this present v°. principal gouernaunce for to be approued or reprobud, (for as myche as noon of hem is more worth than mannys ordinauncis ben, for ech of hem is mannys ordynaunce;) —it folewith needis, (sithen³ Holi Scripture and doom of cleer resoun approuen and allowen the iiij°. and vj°. seid principal gouernauncis,) that theryn and therbi priueli Holi Scripture and doom of cleer resoun approuen and allowen the v°. seid principal gouernaunce.

Nothing need here be said of human laws, for these fully sanction church laws.

Of mannys lawe, what it doith upon the firste, ij°, iiij°, v°, and vj°. principal gouernauncis, it is no neede make⁴ eny mensioun; for open ynow it is,⁴ that mannys lawe hem alle fauorith at the fulle.

Also the present ordinance may be proved by a method already employed for another purpose.

Also this present v°. principal gouernaunce mai be proued bi a processe of iij. supposiciouns and of an argument formed vpon hem toward the eende of the

¹ that bothe, MS. (first hand).

² sithen bothe, MS. (first hand) twice.

³ to make, MS. (first hand).

⁴ is seid, MS. (first hand).

i°. parti in this present book; which argument y wolde reders in this place forto thidir turne and it se, by cause thilk argument is vnsoilable.¹ CHAP. VII

Also into the same purpos y may argue thus: What euer gouernaunce was brouzt into the chirche the Apostlis therto consenting, or at the leest the Apostlis it witing and azens it not reclaymyng, is leefful and worthi be had and vsid. But so it is, that the iiij°. and the v°. and the vj°. principal gouernauncis of this book entriden into the chirche the Apostlis therto consenting, or at the leest the Apostlis it witing and it not weernyng and not forbiding. Wherefore the iiij°, v°, and vj°. seid gouernauncis be leefful and worthi to be had and vsid.

The firste premysse of this argument is openli ynouȝ trewe; and as for treuthe of the ij°. premysse y make this proof: Neither Seint Dynys neither eny other worthi bischop and reuler, which was maad in the chirche of God bi eny Apostle, wolde haue mad or ordeyned, whilis the Apostlis lyueden, eny gouernaunce to be had in the chirche of God, but if the Apostlis hadden therto consentid; neither aftir the deeth of the Apostlis, but if thilk makers and ordyners hadden bfore knowe that the Apostlis consentiden it in tyme aftir to be mad and ordeyned,² or that the Apostlis ȝauun sum wey or ground wherbi tho makers myȝten weel knowe and knewen, that forto so make and ordeyne it accordid weel³ with the Apostlis witt and wil. But so it is, that Dynys in his book of *The Chirchis Ierarchie*,⁴ the vj°.⁵ chapter, makith mensioun that the grete dukis of the chirche, whiche lyueden with the Apostlis, maden and ordeyneden the

Again, whatever ordinance came into the church by consent of the Apostles is lawful. But the three above-named ordinances did so come in, and are consequently lawful.

The second premiss proved from the (spurious) writings of Dionysius the Areopagite.

¹ See Part 1. c. xix.

² *ordeynedē*, MS., the stroke above being in a later (?) hand. The participle is manifestly required.

³ *weel* is added in the margin by a later hand.

⁴ *ierarchie*, MS.

⁵ *v°*, MS.

CHAP. VII.

religioun of monkehode to be had and vsid in the chirche;¹ which religioun is of the vj^e. to be seid principal gouernaunce. And also Dynys in the same book thorowout weelny; ech chapiter of the book makith mensioun of ful manye posytyue lawis mad bi the same now seid dukis and reulers of the chirche, whiche lyuyden in the tyme of the Apostlis; of which now seid mannys lawis and tradiciouns manye ben how and in which maners baptym schal be don aboute and upon him which is to be baptyside;² and manye othere suche mennys lawis ben how the sacrament of the auter schulde be mad, and how the masse schal be seid, and how the mynystres schulen be araied, and what officis thei schulen do;³ and manye othere suche lawis ther ben tauzt what and how manie thingis schulen be doon aboute a man, whanne he schal be mad bischop;⁴ what and how manie thingis schulen be doon aboute a man, whanne he schal be mad preest;⁴ what and how manye thingis schulen be doon aboute him if he be mad deken;⁴ what and how manie thingis schulen be doon aboute a man, if he be mad a monk;⁵ and that to a bischop ben reserued these powers, that is to seie, for to halewe creme, for to halewe chirchis and auteris, and for to zeue orderis of preesthode and of dekenhode;⁶ and so forth of othere posytyue lawis maad bi tho now seid worthi men ouerlong to be here rehercid. Wherefore folewith that the religioun of monkehode, which is of the vj^e. principal gouer-

¹ "ή δὲ τῶν τελουμένων ἀπασῶν ὑψηλοτέρα τάξις, ἡ τῶν μοναχῶν ἐστὶν ἐν τῇ διακόσμησις . . . ἔθεν οἱ θεῖοι καθηγεμόνες ἡμῶν ἐπιστομῶν αὐτοὺς ἱερῶν ἡξίωσαν, οἱ μὲν θεραπεύτας, οἱ δὲ μοναχοὺς ὀνομάζοντες, κ. τ. λ." Pseudo-Dionys. Areop.

De Eccl. Hierach. c. 6. (Op. tom. 1. p. 386. Ed. Cord.)

² Id. c. 2.

³ Id. c. 3.

⁴ Id. c. 5.

⁵ Id. c. 6.

⁶ Id. c. 5.

naunce, and also these now rehercid mennys lawis and tradiciouns, whiche ben of the v^e. now seid gouernaunce, weren mad bi consent of the Apostlis zouun therto, or at the leest bi sum ground bi which the makers knewen sufficientli that forto so make and ordeyne it accordid with the witt and the wil of the Apostlis.

But ȝit ouer al what in this¹ wise goith bifore, y sette therto this now to be fourmed argument into stable confirmacioun of al it which is now bifore argued bi Scripture into this present purpos: Holi Scripture, i^e. Cor. xj^e. c̃., makith open mensioun that Poul made an ordynaunce to the men of Corinthe, that thei schulde not take her hosil, (that is to seie, the holi eukarist,) at nyȝt tyme affir her soper, (or in sum other special maner thanne vsid, not now sureli knowen,) forto therbi contirfete Cristis doing at his soper and forto remembre therbi his soper, not withstanding thei hadden vsid thilk maner bi long tyme afore. Ferthermore in the eende of the same xj^e. chapter Poul warneth hem, that ouer this, which he so ordeyneth and stabilith to hem in the fourme of lawe now rehercid and bi him silf maad, he wole ordeyne mo gouernauncis to hem, and so make mo suche lawis to hem, in the next tyme whanne he schulde come to hem. And so herbi it is cleer bi Holi Scripture in the now alleggid place, i^e. Cor. xj^e. c̃., that it is leeful lawis be mad bi man and be sett for to be in vce with the comoun Cristen lawe zouun and mad immediatli bi God. Forwhi ellis Seint Poul hadde do amys, which made this now rehercid lawe and settide it to be had in vce with the comoun lawe of God thanne had and bifore vsid. Also Poul made bi hise owne power this lawe, as

And from the
writings of St.
Paul.

¹ this is interlineated by a later hand.

CHAP. VII.

it is open i°. Thim. iij°. c., and Tite i°. c., that no man schulde be a bishop neither deken, (and therefore in the same he meened therwith, that neither he schulde be preest,) if he hadde be twies weddid; that is to seie, if he hadde had oon wijf and sche hadde be deed and he hadde eftsoone take an other wijf, he schulde not be mad a bishop neither a preest neizthir¹ a deken louzer than a preest, for cause which schal in other place of my writing be tauzt. And this ordynaunse so mad bi Poul was a mannys ordinaunce, for it was his ordinaunce mad bi his witt and his wil and power; and ellis ther myzte no dispensacioun be mad bi man, that eny man tweies weddid schulde be a preest; not withstonding that the pope takith upon him forto mowe so dispense, and resoun weerneth him not. Wherefore bi Holi Writt it is open and cleer, that mannys lawis mowen be maad and be sett into vse for to renne with Goddis lawe.

Thus it is proved that ecclesiastical laws may not be blamed, merely because they are of human authority. If they are contrary to some command of Christ, the case is altered, but this has yet to be proved.

And so fynali and eendli y mai conclude as weel proued, that religiouns and mannys lawis and tradiciouns to be mad and be vsid and be set to the comoun lawe of Crist, which is mad of lawe of kinde and of hise sacramentis, is not blameable and reprouable as for this oonli that thei ben religiouns or mennys lawis and mennys tradiciouns. Also azens this pretencioun to be mad azens religiouns, it is seid sufficientli aftir thoruzout the v°. parti of this book. And azens lijk pretencioun mad azens othere lawis of men schal be seid anon next aftir in answeris to be mad to apparent and semyng skilis azens the now seid v°. principal gouernaunce. If eny man can seie that eny of hem is blameable and reprouable, not for that thilk religioun is a religioun of mannys making,

¹ Perhaps a clerical error for *neithir*.

neither for that thilk lawe is a lawe of mannys making, but for that he is aȝens sum commaundement of Cristis lawe, (that is to seie, aȝens sum point of lawe of kinde or of Cristis sacramentis,) he must allegge forth which thilk religioun or thilk mannys lawe is; and ther upon he schal be herd and his pretensioun schal be examyned. And if he can proue what he pretendith, he schal be suffrid to reioice his opinioun, and othere men schulen ther yn holde with him. But forto crie and diffame and bacbite in this wise; "The pope makith lawis contrarie to Cristis lawis, and therefore he makith lawis of anticrist;" and ȝit this diffamer can not assigne and bringe forth eny of thilk lawis which he is, and whi he is aȝens Goddis lawe, is a beestly gouernaunce, and such a gouernaunce as y dar weel avowe¹ is aȝens the lawe of God. And therefore to suche ypocritis, pretending hem to loue the lawe of God, y seie thus: *Take out the beam which is in thin owne ize, et cætera*, Math. vii.² c.

viij. CHAPITER.

FOR to semyngli iustifie the blamyng and the re-proving of the v^c. principal gouernaunce rehersed and sett bifore in the vj^c. chapiter of this present iiij^c. partie summe semyng skilis mowen be mad, of which the firste takun bi textis of Holi Scripture is this: What euer gouernaunce God in his Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament blameth and reproueth is not worthi be had and vsid rennyngli with his comon Cristen lawe. But so it is, that God in his Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament blameth and reproueth generali withoute eny excepcioun mennys lawis

Certain arguments against ecclesiastical laws made by human authority considered and refuted. THE FIRST ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS. Human traditions generally are forbidden in the New Testament.

¹ a vowe, MS.| ² viij^c, MS.

CHAP. VIII.

and mennys comaundementis and mennys tradiciouns. Wherefore, generali to speke and withoute eny exceptioun, thei ben vnleeful and not to be void concurrentli with his comoun lawe of Cristenhode. And so this argument gooth not oonli azens politik lawis maad bi men, but also azens statis aboue preesthode and azens religiose lawis maad bi men.

Texts which seem to bear out the second premiss quoted.

The firste premiss of this argument is sure ynouz, and that the ij^e. premysse is trewe y argue thus: It is writun Math. xv^e. 2., in the bigynnyng thus: *Thanne the¹ scribis and the Pharisees camen to him fro Ierusalem and seiden, Whi breken thi discipulis the tradiciouns of eldre men, for thei waischen not her hondis whanne thei eten breed? He answerid and seide to hem, Whi breken ze the comaundement of God for zoure tradicioun? For God seide, 'Honoure thou thi fadir and thi modir,' and, 'He that cursith fadir or modir die he bi deeth,' but ze seien, 'Who euer seith to fadir or modir, What euer zift is of me, it schal profite to thee,' and he hath not worschipid his fadir or his modir;—and ze han mad the comaundement of God voide for zoure tradicioun. Ipocritis, Isaie the prophet prophecied weel of zou and seide, 'This peple honourith me with lippis, but her herte is fer fro me; and thei worschipen me with oute cause, teching the doctrynys and maundementis of men.' And whanne the peplis weren clepid to gidre to him, he seide to hem, Heere ze and vnderstonde ze; that thing that entrith into the mouth defoulith not a man, but that thing that cometh out of the mouth defoulith a man. And sumwhat after there thus: Vnderstonde ze not*

¹ the is wrongly cancelled by a later hand, which perhaps intended to cancel it before *Pharisees*, where it is wanting in some MSS. (but not

in Forshall and Madden's text) of Wiclif's later version, from which this citation is taken.

that al thing that entrith into the mouth gooth into the wombe, and is sent out into going away; but tho thingis that comen forth fro the mouth goon out of the¹ herte, and tho thingis defoulen a man? for of the herte goon out yuel thouztis, mansleyngis, avoutries, fornicaciouns, theftis, false witnessyngis, blasphemyes: these thingis it ben that defoulen a man, but to ete with hondis not wayschen defoulith not a man. Lijk sentence of this same storie and mater is write Mark vij^e. c., thus: *And the Pharisees and summe of the scribis camen fro Ierusalem togidere to him, and whanne thei hadden seen summe of hise disciplis ete breed with vnwaischen hondis, thei blameden; [for]² the Pharisees and alle the Iewis eten not, but if thei waischen ofte her hondis, holding the tradicions of eldre men; and whanne thei turnen azen fro cheping, thei eten not, but thei ben waischen: and manye othere thingis ben that ben takes to hem to kepe, waischingis of cuppis and of water vessels and of vessels of bras and of beddis. And Pharisees³ and scribis askiden him and seiden, Whi goon not thi disciplis aftir the tradicioun of eldre men, but with vnwaischen hondis thei eten breed? And he answerid and seide to hem, Isuie prophecied weel of zou ypocritis, as it is writun, 'This peple 'worschipith me with lippis, but her herte is fer 'fro me; and in vein thei worschipe me, teching 'the doctrines and the heestis of men:' for ze leuen the maundementis of God and holden the tradiciouns of men, waischingis of water vessels and of cuppis,*

¹ *the* is added in a later hand; it occurs in Wiclif's version.

² This word, though absent from most (but not all) MSS. of Wiclif's later version, is quite necessary to complete the sense.

³ The article seems also to be absent from all the MSS. of Wiclif's later version: a little below Pecoock's text omits it before *Pharisees*, (p. 473.)

CHAP. VIII.

and manye othere thingis lijk to these ze doon. And he seide to hem, Wel ze han maad the maundement of God voide to kepe zoure tradicioun : for Moyees seide, ' Worschepe thi fadir and thi modir,' and, ' He, ' that curseith fadir or modir, die he bi deeth,' but ze seien, ' If a man seie to fadir or modir, Corban,' that is to seie, ' What euer zifte is of me, it schal ' profite to thee ;'—and ouer ze suffren not him do¹ eny thing to fader or modir; and ze breken the word of God by zoure tradicioun, that ze han zounn; and ze doon manie suche thingis. And he eftsoone clepid the peple and seide to hem: Ze alle heere me and vndirstonde; no thing that is withouten a man that entrieth into him may defoule him, but tho thingis that comen forth of a man, tho it ben that defoulen a man; if eny man haue eeris of heering, heere he. And sumwhat aftir there he spekith more of this goostli defouling in the maner which is bifore spokun in Matheu the xv^e. chapiter. Bi these ij. longe processis now rehersed, oon writun Math. xv^e. c., and the other writun Mark vij^e. c., it semeth to manye of the comoun peple that Crist blamed there the tradiciouns of whiche he spekith there, for that thei weren tradiciouns of men; so that sufficient cause were forto blame hem, that thei weren mennis tradiciouns sett to the comoun lawe of God. And therbi thei wolen conlude folewingli, that alle mennys tradiciouns ben nauzt, and noon such ouzten be;² but Goddis tradiciouns oonli ouzten be; which is azens the Apostle, i^e. Cor. xj^e. c., as it is schewid bifore in this present iiij^e. partie, the vij^e. chapiter. And thus, as thei weenen, the ij^e. premysse of the argument

¹ to do, MS. (first hand). No MS. of Wiclif's later version, collated by Forshall and Madden, has to.

² This and the four preceding words are written in the margin in a later hand.

mad in the bigynnyng of this present chapter is CHAP. VIII.
proued.

The secunde semyng skile into the same purpos is this: Thilk thing or gouernaunce not being necessarie into oure saluacioun, as for that it is the comaundement of God, what euer he be, is to be kutt away and to be leid aside and to be not had and vsid, of which miche goostli harme and synne comen; for that that he is the occasioun that thilk goostly harme [and synne] comen; forwhi into the meenyng of this now rehercið proposicioun or sentence the Gospel seith thus: *If thi riȝt iȝe or thi riȝt hond¹ or thi riȝt foot sclaundre thee, pulle him out or kutte him away and caste him fro thee:*² but so it is, that of ech of the now spokun mannys lawis had and vsid myche goostli harm and synne comen, so that ech of hem is the occasioun wherbi and wherfro the goostli harme and synne comen: wherfore folewith that ech of the now spokun religiouns ouȝte be pullid out of the chirche and ouȝte be kutte away and be not had and vsid.

The iij^e. semyng skile is this: If suche now spokun lawis and tradiciouns ben gode and profitable to Cristen men, as it is pretendid hem to be, whi ordeyned not Crist the same lawis and tradiciouns to be had and vsid; sithen he couthe haue ordeyned tho lawis and tradiciouns, as weel as men couthen fynde hem and deuise hem; and sithen he loueth us and wilneth oure goostli profit more than we us silf willen, forwhi for oure goostli good and profite he sore laborid, suffrid, and died? Wher upon it myȝt be argued in forme thus: Crist, which was oure grettist loue and oure beest prower, ordeyned al that was best for us to haue and al that is notabili better to be had than to not be had, for ellis he hadde not be anentis us

THE SECOND
ARGUMENT OF
THE LOLLARDS
Whatever is the
cause of much
evil is, by Christ's
command, to be
cut away; and
the aforesaid
laws ecclesiastical do cause
much evil, and
should therefore
be abolished.

THE THIRD
ARGUMENT OF
THE LOLLARDS.
If these laws had
been profitable,
Christ himself
would have
ordained them.

¹ *riȝthond*, MS. (conjunctim), accidentally?

² See Matt. v. 29; Mark ix. 45.

CHAP. VIII.

to gidere wijsist purueier and tendirist louer. But so it is, that Crist not ordeyned these spokun mennys lawis and tradiciouns; forwhi it is open ynouȝ that men founden hem and devisiden hem, and that now late sum and manye of hem. Wherfore thei be not necessarie, neither thei ben in no notable degree better to be had than to be not had.

ix. CHAPTER.

THE FIRST ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS ANSWERED. It is not true that the New Testament blames human traditions and laws without exception. The passages quoted from the Gospels prove only the four following points.

The first point. Christ blamed two Jewish traditions: one which ordained that a man might make the Corban; the other which ordered washing before dinner as a means of removing moral uncleanness.

FOR answer to the first semyng skile mad bifore in the bigynnyng of the next chapter aȝens the v^c.¹ principal gouernaunce, the ij^o. premysses in the first argument mad there is to be denyed; and thanne next, whanne ij. longe processis, (oon of Math. xv^e. c. and an other of Mark vij^o. c.) ben alleggid forth forto proue the same ij^o. premysses, it is to be seid that bi tho ij. longe processis mai not be had more as to this present purpos than these iiij. pointis.

Oon is: That Crist blamed ij. tradicions of the Iewis there rehercid; oon bi which it was ordeyned, that a man schulde rather offre vp his money in the temple, than he schulde with the same money releue his fadir or modir hauyng nede to be releued therbi, and whiche myȝten not be releued saue therbi: an other tradicioun was, bi which it was ordeyned that no man schulde take mete, but that he anon bifore waischid him, and as soone as eny man were come and turned hoom fro the market or the cheping, that he waische him silf; wherby it is open that the opinioun of the Iewis was this, that the bodili waisching with water schulde clense the soule fro moral vnclennesis drawun and takun in biyng and silling. Forwhi it nedith not neither folewith, that bi biyng and sil-

¹ iiij^o. MS.

ling eny bodili vncleennes bifalle to the bier and siller; and, bi lijk skile,¹ bodili waisching schulde clense the soule fro alle² maners of moral vncleennesis, aftir her opinioun; and that moral vncleennesis comen yn into the soule bi outward vncleennesis of vessels or of eny other outward vncleene thing.

The ij^o. point is: That Crist blamed there the firste now rehercid tradicioun, for that he was euen azens the commaundement of God, which is the comaundement of lawe of kinde; and he blamed there the ij^o. now rehercid tradicioun, for that he was vein and waast and conteyned an vntrouthe of opinioun, thou; he were not contrarie to eny comaundement of God.

The second point. Christ blamed the first tradition as being contrary to the divine command, the second as a vain and false opinion.

The iij^o. point is this: That of and bi thilk ij. long processis of Matheu and of Mark kunne not be had that Crist blamed alle the tradiciouns which Iewis³ maden; forwhi in special he blamed no mo there than these ij. tradiciouns now rehercid, and as in general he blamed⁴ no mo neither othere tradiciouns than tho whiche weren contrarie and azens the comaundement of God.

The third point. Christ did not blame all Jewish traditions without exception.

The iiij^o. point is this: That Crist blamed not tho ij. tradiciouns now rehercid for that⁵ thei weren mennis tradiciouns, but for that thei weren yuel; so that this was not the caus of the blamyng, for that men made tho tradiciouns; but this was al the cause and ground of the blamyng, for that thei weren yuel and badde: and therbi folewith not, that alle othere mennys tradiciouns not being yuel schulden be worthi be blamed.

The fourth point. Christ did not blame the two traditions named because they were human, but because they were bad.

Now ferther for answere in special to be mad it is to be seid thus: If Crist hadde there blamed alle tra-

On the whole, then, these texts fall to prove that

¹ The sense and construction require either *it folerith that* to be inserted; or *that* in the clause following to be cancelled; yet it is possible that Pecock may have left the text as the scribe first wrote it

² *othere* is added after *alle* in the margin by a later hand, but wrongly, as it seems.

³ *the Iewis*, MS. (first hand).

⁴ *blaned*, MS.

⁵ *forthat*, MS. (accidentally ?)

CHAP. IX.
which they were
brought forward
to prove. And
this shall appear
further from the
three following
observations.

diciouns of Iewis mad bi hem, or if he hadde blamed the seid ij. tradiciouns for that that thei weren mennys tradiciouns, sotheli thilk ij. long processis, (oon of Matheu, an other of Mark) hadden proued weel the ij^e. premysse of the principal argument sett bifore in the bigynnyng of the next chapter. But for as miche as it can not be had bi the ij. processis of Matheu and of Mark, that Crist blamed there alle tradiciouns mad bi the Iewis, saue oonli tho tradiciouns whiche weren azens Goddis comaundement or in eny other wise yuel, neither that he blamed there the ij. there spokun tradiciouns, for that thei weren mennys tradiciouns oonli, saue for that thei weren badde tradiciouns, (as it is open ynouz, if the wordis of Mark be weel markid and set forto expowne the wordis of Matheu upon the firste there spokun tradicioun)—therfore it is open ynow, that tho ij. long processis of Matheu and of Mark prouen not it what that thei ben brouzt forth to proue, that is, the seid ij^e. premysse. And therfore the seid argument hath not wherbi he mai haue his entent proued. Ferthermore, alle Cristen peple (namelich, al tho lay persoonys which wolen nedis entermete with reding in the Newe Testament) y biseche for to attende into these thingis or notabilittees,¹ whiche y schal now reherce as into thingis ful miche profitable to hem, and whos vnattendaunce hath causid ful myche yuel, namelich in tho lay persoones whiche entermeten miche with reding in the Newe Testament.

The first obser-
vation. Christ
often forbids in
general termes
that which he
intends to forbid
in a special sense
only; for exam-
ple, he bids us to
call no man our
father on earth.

The firste ys: That ful ofte oure Lord Iesus forbedith or weerneth certeyn gouernauncis, and ȝit he expressith tho gouernauncis not oonli in the maners and circumstauncis in whiche he hem forbedith and weerneth and in which thei ben forbedable or weernable, but he expressith hem in a forme comoun to the maners and circumstauncis in whiche thei ben

¹ notabilittees, MS.

weernable and to the maners and circumstauncis in whiche thei ben not weernable; and therefore tho deedis so in comoun or in general and large fourme bi him expressid ben to be vnderstonde and ben to be specified¹ and ben to be restreyned into the maners and circumstauncis in which oonli thei ben weernable or worthi be werned² bi resoun, and ben of him weerned, and thei ben not to be vndirstonde in the general forme in which thei ben expressid. Ensawmple herof is this: Crist weerneth men to clepe to hem a fader upon erthe in sum certeyn maner and forme oonli which is worthi to be³ weerned, and 3it this thing so as now is seid weerned Crist expressith and outrith in a larger and generaler fourme comoun to the maner and circumstauncis in which it is weernable and to the maner and circumstauncis in which it is not worthi be weerned. For whi he seith in this large and general fourme, *Nile 3e clepe to 3ou a fadir on erthe*;⁴ and therefore this thing so weerned as in general maner of the wordis is to be specified and to be restreyned [and] to be narowid and to be vndirstonde and drawe as it accordith oonli with the maner and circumstauncis in which it is worthi the same thing bi resoun to be forbodun or weerned. And so this that vndir so large and so general a fourme is weerned, *Nile 3e clepe to 3ou a fadir on erthe*, is to be take and vndirstonde in this wise: "Nile 3e clepe " to 3ou a principal or a cheef fadir on erthe, for " thilk cheef fadir is in heuen."

And that this notabilite is trewe, it mai be proued thus: For ellis God schulde weerne in oure doable conuersacioun other thing or other wise than resoun

Proof of the truth of this observation. The contrary view would make God

¹ *specied*, MS. (first hand).

² *or worthi to be werned* is added in the margin by a later hand; a still later corrector having erased to.

³ *be* is interlineated in a later hand. Perhaps we should read *worthi be weerned*.

Matt. xxlii. 9.

CHAP. IX.
contradict reason, and would
make Scripture
contradict itself.

wolde it schulde be weerned, and so God ther yn were vnresonable; which is not to be grauntid, sithen he comaundith us to be resonable and to be not vnresonable thoruz al oure moral conuersacioun.¹ For if it myzte be allowid us to bere us vnresonabili, y woot not what lawe schulde lette us fro eny synne. Also but if this notabilite were trewe, ellis God were contrarie to him silf. Forwhi in other place of Scripture, as Mark [vij. ̄.],² he wole that we be aknowe us to haue fadir and modir on erthe, in that that he there biddith us worschipe oure fadir and modir on erthe. And therefore this notabilite is trewe. And bi this notabilite is a wey zouun forto vndirstonde in rȳt and iust maner this, that Crist in so general fourme vttrith and expressith, *Nile ȳe swere alwise*;³ and so forth of manye othere forbodis and weernyngis doon toward us vpon oure moral conuersacioun, whiche alle schulen be drawe to be vndirstonde as doom of resoun iugith hem to be vnderstonde, as herof ful rial processis and proofs ben mad in the book clepid *Iust apprising of Holi Scripture* in ther of the firste partie, and in the firste party of *Cristen religioun*, the iiij. trety, bi dyuerse chapitres.

The second observation. Christ often blames certain things without specifying the circumstances under which alone they are blameworthy; for example, he blames the Pharisees for walking in long robes.

The ij. notabilite is this: That in lijk maner Crist ofte blameth and rehercith as blamable certeyn gouernauncis, and ȳit he expressith tho gouernauncis not oonli in the maners and circumstauncis in whiche thei ben worthi be blamed, but he expressith hem in a fourme comoun to the maners and circumstauncis in which thei ben blame worthi and to the maners and circumstauncis in whiche thei ben not blame worthi; and therefore tho deedis or gouernancis so in general

¹ Perhaps Pecoock may have Rom. xii. 1-2 in his eye.

² A space left in the MS. for the number. Pecoock may either refer

to Mark vii. 9-13, or to Mark x. 17-19.

³ Matth. v. 34.

or in a comoun and large fourme bi him expressid ben to be vndirstonde and ben to be specified and to be drawe into the maners and circumstauncis in which oonli thei ben bi doom of resoun worthi be blamed. In this maner Crist blamed Pharisees vndir this forme, that thei "louen forto walke in stolis, and forto " be clepid of men maistris, and forto haue the firste " seetis in feestis;"¹ and so forth of manye othere deedis like into this purpos, whiche deedis as so rehercid of Crist in thilk generalte mowen be leeful and gode and desirid of scribis and of Pharisees and of othere men; but for as myche as vndir summe maners and circumstauncis thei mowen be morali yuel bi dom of resoun, therefore it is to vndirstonde² that Crist in his blamyng of hem blamed in³ the maner and circumstauncis vndir whiche thei ben bi doom of resoun morali yuel. And that it ouzte so be vndirstonde, the skile is now bfore seid in mater of Cristis weernyngis.

And zit ferther the iij^o. notabilite is this: That in lijk maner it is that Crist biddith and counseilith ofte certein deedis and gouernauncis, and zit he expressith tho deedis and gouernauncis in maners and circumstauncis oonli in whiche tho deedis and gouernauncis ben comoun and general to be gode and to be badde morali; and therfore tho deedis and gouernauncis ben to be vndirstonde, that Crist biddith or counseilith or willith hem to be doon in the maners and circumstauncis in which thei ben bi doom of resoun gode oonli. In this maner Crist bade, counseilid, or willed, Luk xij^o. ẽ. thus: *Sille ze the thingis whiche ze han in possessioun, and zeue ze almes.* Whether not this is trewe, that summan ouzte bi doom of resoun and bi the wil of God for to not sille enything which he

The third obseruation. Christ often bids certain deeds in general terms, without expressing the special circumstances under which alone reason judges them to be profitable; for example, he bids men to sell their possessions and give alms.

¹ Mark xii. 38, 39.

² to be vndirstonde, MS. (first hand).

³ Probably in should be cancelled, or hem inserted after blamed.

CHAP. IX.

hath in possessioun, that he ther with do almes? And
 3it Crist biddith there generali withoute excepcioun.
 And therefore it is seen to be trewe, what y haue now
 seid to be the iij^e. notabilite.

Lack of bearing
 in mind these
 three most valu-
 able observations
 has been the
 cause of much
 unjust prejudice
 against the
 clergy.

Sotheli and withoute doute these iij. notabilitees
 weel considerid and attendid of thilke persoones, name-
 lich of the lay party whiche wolen needis entirmete
 with the Newe Testament, is worth to hem a buyschel
 ful of gold; and that bothe forto purge hem of wrong
 opiniouns gaderid to hem bi occasioun of textis in the
 Newe Testament, and also for to preserue hem that
 thei falle not into suche vntrewe opiniouns takun bi
 occasioun of textis in the Newe Testament. And
 verili and sotheli to seie, the vnconsideracioun and
 the vnknowing and the¹ vnremembraunce of these
 thre now bifore sett notabilitees hath be a ful greet
 cause or occasioun of ful greet presumptuose iuge-
 mentis in summe of the lay partie, and of greet cisme
 and of greet horroure and of abhominacioun born
 anentis the clergie bi summe of the lay partie; of
 whiche thei wolden be schamed, if thei consideriden
 weel these thre bifore sett notabilitees, namelich if
 ther with thei wolden ouer reede the first parti of
 the book clepid *The iust apprising of Holi Scripture*.

At the same time
 too many positive
 laws, whether
 civil or ecclesiastical,
 are to be
 avoided, as being
 the cause of
 much evil.

Neuertheles, not withstanding al what fro the bi-
 gynnyng of the vj^e. chapter in this present iiij^e.
 partie hidir [to] is seid for to iustifie the v^e. seid prin-
 cipal gouernance, 3it y holde this, that ouer greet mul-
 titude of mennys posytyue lawis ouzten not be mad;
 but prelati and princis ouzten be weel waar that ouer
 manye posytyue lawis be not² 3ouun to her peplis.
 For sotheli ther of cometh causeli nedis ful myche
 yuel, more than y se men considere it so to come. Of

¹ the is wrongly (?) cancelled by
 a later hand.

² not is interlineated in a later (?)
 hand.

whiche yuelis y desire in myn herte for to haue leiser and space to write my conseite; (which God graunte to be don!) but certis forto holde that it is vnleeful or vnexpedient eny suche posytyue lawis be maad and be zouun to peple¹ is fer fro my witt and my resoun.

CHAP. IX.

To the ij°. semyng skile and to² the iij°. semyng skile bfore sett in the next chapiter it is to be answerid euen lijk as it is answerid to the v°. and vj°. semyng skilis sett aftir in the v°. parti of this book the iiij°. chapiter, whos answeris ben sett in the same v°. partie in the vj°. and seuenthe chapitres; and therefore it is no nede forto fourme answeris in lengthe of the newe here.

THE SECOND
AND THIRD AR-
GUMENTS OF
THE LOLLARDS
ANSWERED. The
same answers
apply here that
will shortly be
applied to other
arguments.

*And in this y eende here this fourthe partie of
this book.*

¹ the peple, MS. (first hand), per-
haps rightly.

² to is interlineated in a later
hand.

Here bigynneth the v. partie of this book.

THE FIRSTE CHAPTRE.

The religious orders are the sixth institution objected to. Many blame them as eccentric, unscriptural, anti-christian, and devilish.

THE vj^e. principal gouernaunce or point to be tretid in this present v^e. partie, for which gouernaunce summe of the lay peple blamen and vndirnymen vniustli and vnworthili the clergie is this: That bothe of preestis and of lay persooones ben sectis clepid religiouns, maad to men and also to wommen forto be streizter to hem in eting and drinking, in speking, in wering, in going, in sleping, and in aboute walking, and in othere deedis of worldlihode and fleischlihode, than is the fredom of lawe of kinde with the settingis to of Cristis sacramentis. Al this summe of the lay peple blamen bothe for the dyuersite and nouelte so takun to be in other wise than is the comoun maner of othere men and wommen; and also thei beren an honde that the religiouns, whiche now ben had and vsid, han summe statutis and ordynauncis being azens charite, and therfore azens the lawe of God. And ferthermore, these blamers not oonli maken hem blamers, but also diffamers; for thei ascriuen and zeuen the fynding and the mentenaunce of alle such sectis or relegiouns to the feend and anticrist, and thei callen it to be werk of the feend; and manye mo reproues thei zeuen to religiouns and to therof the religiose persooones, which schame is for to reherce.

Five conclusions in favour of the monastic orders shall now be made. THE FIRST CONCLUSION. Scripture forbids them not. Certain texts which seem to forbid them considered and explained.

That this now rehercid blamyng and vndirnymyng is vniust and bering an hond vntreuli, for that the now rehercid vj^e. principal gouernaunce is leeful and iust, good and expedient, y schal proue bi v. principal conclusiouns, of whiche the firste is this: Holi Scripture weerneth not and lettith not the now rehercid vj^e. principal gouernaunce to be take and vsid with

the comoun lawe of Crist ȝouun to Cristen men. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: If eny text or processe of Holi Scripture schulde lette and weerne the now seid vj°. principal gouernaunce, thilk text or proces schulde be oon of these whiche schulen be spoken in the iiij. argumentis now next aftir to be mad. But so it is that noon of tho lettith and weerneth the seid vj°. principal gouernaunce, as it schal be open bi the answeris to thilk same iiij. argumentis. Wherefore folewith that Holi Scripture weerneth not and lettith not the seid vj°. principal gouernaunce.

The firste of these iiij. argumentis is this: It is writun, Iames the i°. c̃., thus: *A cleene religioun and an vnwemmed anentis God and the Fadir is this; to visite fadirles and modirles children and widowis in her tribulacioun, and to kepe him silf vndefilid fro this world.* Out of this text a man may argue in twei maners. In oon maner thus: Iames assigneth this gouernaunce now rehercid in his text to be a cleene religioun and an vnwemmed anentis God and the Fadir; wherefore noon other gouernaunce saue this same, as bi the entent and meenyng of Iames in his now rehercid text, is a cleene religioun and vnwemmed anentis God and the Fadir; and so the religiouns now had¹ and vsid in the chirche ben not cleene and vnwemmed anentis God and the Fadir. In an other maner thus: What euer religion lettith and biforbarrith, ȝhe, and forbedith the religioun to be doon and vsid, which is a clene and an vnwemmed religioun anentis God and the Fadir, is an vnleeful religioun, and not worthi be² had and vsid. But so it is, that alle the religiouns now had and vsid in the chirche, in which is vow of wilful and expropriat

A text of St. James considered. The Lollard arguments derived from it adduced, to prove that the institution of the religious orders is not a pure religion before God. In the first place it is not the same with St. James's 'pure religion,' and in the next place it hinders it.

¹ had is added in a later hand. | ² to be, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. I.

pouerte with the vow of obedience to the comaundementis of certein devisid statutis and reulis, letten and biforebarren, 3he, and forbeden thilk religioun be doon and vsid, which is cleen and vnwemmed anentis God and the Fadir. Forwhi thei letten and biforebarren, 3he, and forbeden to her religiose per-soones forto visite fadirles and moderles children and widowis in her tribulacioun, as is open ynow3 to ech considerer. And 3it this visiting is a cleene religioun and vnwemmed anentis God and the Fadir bi the text of Iames now alleggid. Wherfore alle tho othere now seid religious had and vsid in the chirche ben vn-leeful and not worthi be had and vsid.

Another argu-
ment is derived
from the pro-
phesies made by
the Apostles
respecting false
teachers that
should arise.

The ij. argument is take of the wordis and textis of Seint Poul, Coloc. ij. c. 3., i. c. Thim. iiij. c. 3., ij. c. Thim. iiij. c. 3., Tite i. c. 3., and of the wordis and text of Peter, ij. c. Pet. ij. c. 3., and in manye othere placis, whiche textis y schal reherce here next bi and bi. First, ij. c. Pet. ij. c. 3. in the bigynnyng, Petir writith thus: *False prophetis weren in the peple, as in 3ou schulen be maistris liers, that schulen bringe yn sectis of perdicoun, and thei denyen thilk Lord that bouzte hem, and bringen on hem silf hasti perdicoun; and manye schulen sue her leccheries, bi which the wey of treuthe schal be blasphemed: and thei schulen make marchaundie of 3ou in coueitise bi feyned wordis, to whiche doom now awhile ago cesith not, and the perdicoun of hem nappith not.* Also i. c. Thim. iiij. c. 3. in the bigynnyng, Poul seith to Bischop Thimothie thus: *The Spirit seith openli, that in the laste tymes summen schulen departs fro the feith, 3euynge tent to spiritis of errour and to techingis of deuelis, that spoken leeing in ypocrisie, and han her conscience corrupt, forbeding to be weddid, to abstene fro metis whiche God made to take with doing of thankngis to feithful men and hem that han knowe the trouthe: (for ech crea-*

ture of God is good, and no thing is to be cast away, which is taken with doing of thankings, for it is halowid bi the word of God and bi preier;) thou, putting forth these thingis to britheren, schalt be a good mynystre of Iesus Crist, nurischid with wordis of feith and of good doctrine, which thou hast gete; but eschewe thou vncouenable fablis and eeld wommenys fablis. Also ij^e. Thim. iij^e. c., in the bigynnyng, Poul seith to Bischop Thimothie thus: Wite thou this thing, that in the laste daies perilose tymes schulen neize, and men schulen be louyng hem silf, coueitose, hize of bering, proude, blasphemers, not obedient to fader and modir, vnkinde, cursid, withoute affeccoun, withoute pees, false blamers, vncontynent, vnmylde, withoute benignite, traitouris, ouerthwert, bollun with proude thouztis, blynde louers of lustis more than of God, hauyng the liknes, of pitee, but denying the vertu of it; and eschewe thou these men. Of these thei ben that persen housis and leden wommen caitifis chargid with synnes, whiche ben led with dyuerse desiris, euermore leernyng and neuermore perfilli comynge to the science of treuth. And as Iannes and Mambres¹ azenstoden Moyses, so these azenstonden treuth, men corruptid in vndirstonding, reprovod aboute the feith; but further thei schulen not profite, for the vnwisdom of hem schal be knowe to alle men, as hern was. But thou hast geten my teching, et cætera. Also Tite i^e. c., in the myddil, Poul seith to Thimothie Bischop of Crete thus: Ther ben manye vnobedient and vein spekeris and desseuyaris, moost thei that ben of circumcisioun, which it bihoueth to be reprovod, whiche subuerten alle housis, teching whiche thingis it bihoueth not, and that for the loue of foul wynnyng. And von

¹ *Mambres* is the Vulgate reading, whence the early English translations were made.

CHAP. I.

of hem her propre profete seide, 'Men of Crete ben 'euermore lieris, yuel beestis, of slowe wombe:' this witnessing is trewe. For what cause blame hem sore, that thei be hool in feith, not zeuyng tent to fablis of Iewis and to maundementis of men, which turnen away hem fro truthe.¹ Also ij^c. Pet. iij^c. ē., soone aftir the bigynnyng, Peter seith thus: *First wite ze this thing, that in the laste daies disseyueris schulen come, in disseit going after her owne coucitingis, seiying, 'Where is the biheest or the 'comying of him? for sithen the fadris dieden, alle 'thingis lasten fro the bigynnyng of creature.'* But it is hid fro hem willing this thing, that heuens weren bifore, et cætera. Also Iude ij^c.² ē., in the bigynnyng, the Apostle Iudas writith thus: *Wo to hem that wenten the wey of Cayn, and that ben sched out by errour of Balaam for mede, and perischiden in the azenseiying of Chore! These ben in her metis feesting to gidere to filthe, withoute drede feding hem silf; these ben cloudis withoute watir, that ben born aboute of the wyindis, heruest trees with oute fruyt, tweies deede, drawen up bi the roote, wawis of the wood see fomyng out her confusiouns, erring sterris, to whiche the tempest of derknesses is kept withoute eende. These ben grucchers, ful of pleintis, wandring aftir her desiris; and the mouth of hem spekith pride, worschipping per-soones bi cause of wynnmyng. And ze, moost dere britheren, be myndeful of these wordis, whiche ben bifore seid of Apostlis of oure Lord Iesus Crist, whiche seiden to zou that in the laste tymes ther schulen come gilouris, wandring after her owne de-*

¹ Written on an erasure by a later hand; the orthography is against the usage of the MS.

² In almost all the MSS. of Wic-

lif's version, (from which this and the other quotations in this paragraph are made, almost verbatim,) Jude is divided into two chapters.

siris, not in pitee. These ben whiche departen hem silf, beestli men, not hauyng spi[rit]; but ze, moost dere brither[en], aboue bilde you silf on zoure moost holy feith, and preie ze in the Holi Goost, and kepe zou silf in the loue of God, and abide ze the merci of oure Lord Iesus Crist into lijf euerlasting. And repreue ze these men that ben deemed, but saue ze hem, and take ze hem fro the fier. Also Coloc. ij^e. c̃., Poul writith thus: Se ze that no man disseyue zou bi philophie and vein fallace, aftir the tradicioun of men, aftir the elementis of the world, and not aftir Crist. And sumwhat aftir there thus: Therefore no man iuge zou in mete or in drinke or in part of feest dai or of neomenye or of Sabbatis, whiche ben schadewis of thingis to comyng; for the bodi is of Crist. Noman disseyue zou, willing to teche in mekenes and religioun of aungelis tho thingis whiche he hath not seen, walking veinli, bolned with witt of his fleisch, and not holding the heed, of which al the bodi bi bondis of ioinyng to gidere vndir mynystid and mad wexith into encresing of God. For if ze ben dede with Crist fro the elementis of this world, what zit as men lyuing to the world deemen ze that ze touche not, neither taaste, neither trete with hondis tho thingis whiche alle¹ ben into deeth bi the ilk vce, after the comaundementis and the techingis of men? Whiche han a resoun of wijsdom in vein religioun and mekenesse, and not to spare the bodi; not in honour to the ful filling of the fleisch.

Also, Math. xxiii^j. c̃., Crist in maner of prophecie spake of vntrewe techeris, which schulden come in the daies of the Apostlis bfore the destruccioun of Ierusalem, and seide to hise disciplis thus: *Men*

And from those
made by Christ
himself.

¹ alle is added in the margin by a later (?) hand.

CHAP. I.

schulen bitake zou into tribulacioun and schulen slee zou, and ze schulen be in hate to al folk for mi name. And thanne manie schulen be sclaundrid and bitraie ech othere, and thei schulen hate ech othere; and manie false prophetis schulen rise and disseyue manye. Like sentence of the same vntrewe techeris is writun Mark xiiij^e. c., thus: Loke ze that no man disseyue zou. For manye schulen come in my name seiyng, that y am, and thei schulen disseyue manie; and whanne ze heere bateilis and opiniouns of bateilis drede ze not, for it bihoueth these thingis to be doon, but not zit anoon is the eende. Also Math. xxiiij^e. c., Crist in maner of prophecie spake of vntrewe techeris, whiche schulden come nyȝ to the dai of doom and the eende of the world, and seide ther of to hise disciplis thus: Thanne schal be greet tribulacioun, what maner was not fro the bigynnynge of the world to now, neither schal be maad; and but if tho daies hadden be abbregegid, ech fleisch schulde not be mad saaf; but tho daies schulen be mad schort for the chosen men. Thanne if eny man seie to zou, 'Lo, here is Crist or there!' nyle ze bileeue; for false Cristis and false prophetis schulen rise, and thei schulen zeue grete tokenes and wondris, so that also the chosun be led into errour, if it mai be doon. Lo, y haue bifore seid to zou. Therefore if thei seie to zou, 'Lo, he is in desert!' nile ze go out; 'Lo, in priuy placis!' nyle ze trowe. For as leit gooth out of the eest and apperith into the west, so schal be also the comyng of Mannys Sone. Wher euer the bodi schal be, also the eglis schulen be gaderid thider. And anoon after the tribulacioun of tho daies the sunne schal be mad derk, and the mone schal not zeue lizt, et cetera. Like sentence touching the same now seid vntrewe techeris is writun Mark xiiij^e. c., thus: Thilk daies of tribulacioun schulen be suche, whiche maner weren not fro the

bigynnyng of creature whiche God hath made til now, neither schulen be; and but the Lord hadde abreggid tho daies al fleisch hadde not be saxf; but for the chosen, whiche he cheese, the Lord hath mad schort tho daies. And than if eny man seie to zou 'Lo, here is Crist! lo, there!' bileue ze not. For false Cristis and false prophetis schulen rise, and schulen zeue tokenes and wondris to disseyue, if it mai be doon, zhe, hem that ben chosen. Therefore take ze kepe; lo y haue bifore seide to zou alle thingis. But in tho daies aftir thilk tribulacioun the sunne schal be maad derk, and the moone schal not zeue hir lizt, et cætera.

The iij^e. argument is thoruz weel nyz ech word the same and oon with the firste semyng skile sett bifore in the iiij^e. party of this book, the viij^e. chapitre. Which argument gooth up [on] ij. longe processis in Holi Scripture, of whiche the oon is writun Math. xv^e. ̃., and the other is writun Mark vij^e.¹ ̃.; and therefore who wole se this iij^e. argument, as he mai be mad azens the vj^e. principal gouernaunce, turne he thidir and he schal it there se.

A third argument taken from Christ's condemnation of the commandments of men. This argument has in fact been adduced already

The iiij^e. argument into the iustifyng is this: The holi maide and religiose nunne Seint Hildegart, visitid with the spirit of prophecie, wroot manie prophecies whiche weren examyned and approued in a general counceil holdun at Treuer undir Pope Eugeny the [Thridde],² at which counceil Seint Bernard was present, as it is writun in famose cronicles.³ And among the prophecies and reuelaciouns spokun bi the seid holi maide Seint Hildegart sche spekith that aftir hir daies schulde rise iiij. ordris of beggers; and not oonli

A fourth argument based on the prophecies of St. Hildegard (circa 1140 A.D.)

¹ *2^a*, MS.

² A space left in the MS. for the number.

³ See Coleti, *Concil.* tom. 12, p.

1675, s. ann. 1148 A.D., and Alberic. *Chron.* ad ann. 1141, (cited by Fabric. *Bibl. Lat. Med. et Inf. Æt.* vol. 3, p. 771).

CHAP. I.

of the persoones whiche schulden lyue in tho iiij. ordris sche seith yuel; that is to seie, "that thei " schulden¹ be flaterers,² and enuiers, and ypocritis, " and bachiters;" but also of the ordre sche seith, meenyng it to be yuel. For sche seith, "that of wijse " and trewe men this ordre schal be cursid;" as thouz sche schulde therbi meene, that the ordre schulde be worthi be cursid. And ferthirmore sche seith, "that " for her synful and gileful lyuyng the comoun peplis " hertis schulden falle away fro hem; and thei schulden " falle and ceese and that her ordre schulde be³ alto " broke for her bigilingis, and her wickidnessis."⁴ Wherefore tho iiij. ordris or religiouns or beggeris ben badde and not gode, neither worth be had and vsid in the chirche.

ij. CHAPTER.

The text of St. James considered, and the Lollard inferences refuted. Religion may be understood in two senses: in one, as a binding up of man's will by vows from his doing that which he otherwise

FOR answere to the firste argument it is to vndirstonde, that religioun mai be take in ij. maners: In oon maner religioun is such a binding vp or a bynding azen of a mannys fre wil with certein ordinauncis, maad bi God or bi man or with vowis or oothis, that he go not so wijde and so brode in hise choicis and refusis, neither in the executyng of hise choicis or of

¹ *schulden* is added in the margin by a later hand.

² *flateres*, MS.

³ *be* is interlineated in a later hand.

⁴ "Insurgent gentes quas comedent peccata populi, tenentes ordinem mendicium, ambulantes sine rubore, inuenientes nova mala, ut à sapientibus et Christi fidelibus ordo peruersus maledicatur. Sed diabolus radicabit in eis quatuor vitia, scilicet adulationem, ut eis largius detur:

invidiam, quando datur aliis et non sibi: hypocrisim, ut placeant per simulationem: et detractionem, ut se ipsos commendent, et alios vituperent. . . . Populus vero de die in diem durior erit, et expertus erit seductiones eorum et cessabit dare. . . . Sic ordo vester contritus est propter seductiones et iniquitates vestras." S. Hildegard. *Prophet.* cited by Fabric. *Bibl. Lat. Med. et Inf. Æt.* vol. 3, pp. 774-776. q. v.

hise refusis with inne the boundis of lawe of kinde, CHAP. II.
 how brode ellis withoute forbeding of lawe of kinde might lawfully
do; in another
and less strict
sense, as a con-
fining of his
will within the
bounds of the
law of nature.
 go he myzte. And religioun in this maner takun is
 religioun propirli takun, and is descryued in lijk sen-
 tence bifore in the [vj^e.]¹ chapiter of the [iv^e.]¹ parti
 of this present book. In an other maner religioun is
 a binding up or a binding azens² of a mannys fre
 wil with the lawis of kinde, (that is to seie, with
 the doomes of cleer and weel disposid resoun,) that he
 chese not or refuse not neither execute hise choisis or
 refusis azens the now seid lawe of kinde. And so
 with religioun in this ije. maner takun, which is a
 large and an vnpropre maner of taking and of vndir-
 standing religioun, mannys wil is not refreyned saue
 bi lawe of kinde oonli. And bi religioun takun in
 the firste now bifore seid maner, which is the verry³
 propre maner of taking religioun, mannys fre wil is
 refreyned with more than with lawe of kinde; for he
 is also refreyned with othere statutis or ordinauncis
 maad bi God or man or with othere vowis or oothis.

Of religioun takun in the firste maner, as anentis Examples of both
these senses of
religion in Scrip-
ture. statutis and ordinauncis maad bi God himsilf, Holi
 Writt spekith, Exodi xij^e. c. and xxix^e. c., and as
 anentis ordinauncis maad bi man, Acts xxvj^e. c., as it
 is bifore rehersed in the ⁴ chapiter of the ⁴ parti
 of this present book. Of religioun takun in the ij^e.
 maner spekith Holi Writt, Acts x^e. c., where Cornely,
 than being an hethen man not cristned, is clepid “a
 “religiose man and dreding God;” and that for the
 weel keping and filling the lawe of kinde, that is to
 seie, the lawe of resoun. Also of this religioun it is
 writun Ecclesiastici i^e. c. in the myddil.

¹ Spaces are left in the MS. for the numbers.

² Perhaps a clerical error for *azens*.

³ *verry* is interlineated in a later hand.

⁴ Spaces left in the MS. for the numbers. Pecoock seems to be thinking of what *follows*. Part v. c. viii.

CHAP. II.

Both senses combined in Pecoock's *Rule of Christian religion*.

In the ij^e. maner religioun is take for religioun of the firste maner and religioun of the ij^e. maner to gidere seet; and in this maner y toke and vndirstode this name "religioun," whanne to a certain book which y haue mad y puttid this name, *The reule of Cristen religioun*.

St. James in the text quoted uses the word *religion* in the second manner, meaning that the virtues there named are parts of such religion; but not meaning that no other virtues besides them enter into such religion.

Iames in his text alleggid bifore in the firste sem- yng skile meened not of religioun takun in the now seid firste maner, but of religioun taken in the ij^e. now seid maner; and ȝit bi thilk same text Iames meened not, that a man forto visite fadirles and modirles children and widowis in her tribulacioun, and a man forto kepe him vnwemmed fro this world schulde be al an hool religioun takun in the ij^e. maner; but that these deedis bi him there expressid schulden be summe parties of an hool religioun takun in the secunde maner. Forwhi a man forto worschipe and releue his fadir and modir is a parti of the same al hool religioun takun in the ij^e. maner, and a man forto forbere fals sweryng and idil swering is an other parti of the same hool religioun takun in the ij^e. maner; and lijk maner ech moral vertu is a parti of the same religioun takun in the ij^e. maner. And therefore bi this, that now is thus declarid, it is open ynow; that the firste maner of arguyng rehercid bifore upon the seid text of Iames is not worth, whanne it is argued thus: A man to visite fadirles and modirles children and widewis is a religioun; for it is a parti of the now seid greet religioun; therefore noon other vertu than this visitng is a religioun.

Neither is it true that any virtue, which hinders the exercise of the particular virtues there named, is unlawful; for while a man does any good deed, he for the time is hindered from performing any other good deed.

For answeere to the ij^e. maner of arguyng maad upon the same text of Iames it is to be seid, that the firste premisse is vntrewe, which is there takun and fourmed thus: What euer religioun lettith, bifore bar- rith, ȝhe, and forbedith an othir religioun to be had or doon, which is a cleene and an vnwemmed religioun at God and the Fadir, is vnleeful and not

worthi he had and vsid. Forwhi it is impossible ij. religiouns be;¹ but that the oon of hem had in a persoon lettith and bifore barrith, 3he, and forbedith the other religioun to be for the while in the same persoon, sithen oon and the same man may not be to gidere in ij. religions. And therfore the seid firste premysse of the ij. argument maad up on the text of Iames is vntrewe and to be denyed, and so ceessith the strengthe of thilk argument fro geting of his entent. Also if thilk premysse were trewe, certis thanne weelny3 ech moral vertu of Goddis lawe were vnleeful and not to be had and vsid. Forwhi what euer moral vertu a man wole take and vse, al the while that he is is werking thilk vertu he is therbi lettith, forbarrith, and weerned forto wirche an other moral vertu of Goddis lawe; as, whilis a man is weddid and wole bigete children, he is therbi lettith and weerned to be chaast, and whilis a man wole do almes deedes in Ynglond he is lettith and weerned therbi for to do almesdeedis in Fraunce, and whilis a man rideth in a iorney for a good cause he is therbi lettith and weerned for to heere a preching; 3he, and if the wirching of thilk vertu first takun schulde stonde stille perpetuely, he schulde lette and weerne perpetuely the wirching of the other vertu which my3te ellis be taken; and so, if the seid premysse were trewe, the vertu which is first takun of a man is euermore vnleeful. And also ech office in a kingis hous schulde be needis displeaunt to the king, forwhi ech office in his hous lettith, forbarrith,² and weerneth the occupier fro an office in the same hous, which office the king loueth weel to be doon. And so, open it is, that the seid firste premissis is to be denyed; and thanne is thilk argument lettith fro his purpos.

CHAP. II.

If this argument were valid, no one could hold any secular office, since other offices equally necessary cannot be performed by the same person.

¹ to be, MS. (first hand).

² for barrith, MS., (without hyphen).

CHAP. II.

In reply to the argument about false teachers named in various texts it may be said that they all with one exception refer to vicious persons and not to vicious sects. That one text (of Peter) speaks of sects which deny the Lord that bought them; and it is impossible to show that this description applies to the religious orders now existing in the church.

For answer to the ¹ ij^e. bfore mad argument going upon there rehersed textis it is to be markid wel, that among alle tho textis oonli the firste text aloone, ij^e. Pet. ij^e. c., spekith of viciose sectis whiche schulden rise aftir the daies of Peter, and alle other textis of thilk noumbre speken oonli of viciose persoones teching vntreuly and lyuyng vicioseli and not of eny viciose² sect. Wherefore noon of alle these textis berith in him silf eny colour forto smyte or reprove or blame eny sect or religion now had and vsid in the chirche, saue oonli the firste text ij^e. Pet. ij^e. c. And sithen the sectis of which Peter there prophecied he in tho wordis prophecied, that "sectis of perdition schulden be denying the Lord which bouzte hem," no man mai in eny colour afferme that thilk wordis of prophecie of Peter fallith vpon the sectis or religious now had and vsid in the chirche, but if he afore proue and schewe that these now had and vsid religious in the chirche ben sectis of perdition and denyen him which bouzte hem. And therefore proue he firste and bfore that these now seid religious ben sectis of perdition, and that thei ben denying Crist, and bi-leuen not into Crist; and thanne lete him haue the maistrie, that Petir in the wordis of his bfore allegid text prophecied or spake of the religious now had and vsid in the chirche. And certis open ynouȝ it is, that ellis he mai not haue euydence as bi thilk text that Peter meened or thouzte on hem. Forwhi this folewith not in eny good argument: Petir seide that sectis of perdition denying Crist schulden come, therefore these now had religious ben tho sectis. A lewder and febler skile or argument can noman make; forwhi bi this argument, if he were auȝt, schulde be proued that ech sect or religion mad, or which

¹ *thi*, MS.

² A later hand has wrongly altered this into *unviciose*.

myȝte be mad, were or schulde be vnleeful and a sect of perdicoun, how euer good and profitable and leeful he were or schulde be mad ; and so the same secte schulde be good and badde, leeful and vnleeful, which is repungnaunce. And therto to this bad argument muste be sett more, if he schulde eny thing proue and conclude, as is forto seie and argue thus : Petir seide that sectis of perdicoun denying Crist schulden come ; and so it is, that these religiouns now had and vsid in the chirche ben sectis of perdicoun denying Crist ; therfore of hem spake or meened Petir. Or ellis thus : Of hem is the prophecie of Peter verified and vpon hem fallith thilk prophecie of Petir ; and but if the arguer can proue the ij^e. premysse of this argument, and eer than he proue thilk ij^e. premysse of this argument, that is to seie, that these now had and vsid religiouns in the chirche ben sectis of perdicoun denying Crist, certis he may not waite afir that the conclusioun of this argument be proued or be trewe, that is to seie, that the seid prophecie of Petir fille upon the religiouns now had and vsid in the chirche. And thanne ferther, forto proue that these religiouns ben sectis of perdicoun, he muste take his euydencis and hise motyues in othir place out and fro the seid text of Peter ; forwhi it muste be proued that the now had religiouns ben sectis of perdicoun, eer and bfore we wite what and of whom the seid text of Peter meeneth. And thus it is open ynouȝ that, as bi the firste text in the bfore sett noumbre of textis, may noon hurte bifalle to the now had and vsid religions.

And thanne ferthermore thus : Alle the othere textis in the same now seid noumbre speken of persoones teching vntreuli and lyuying viciously, whether thei lyue in eny religiose sect or out of religiose sect ; for of alle suche vicious persoones, whether thei lyuen in sect of religioun or out of sect of religioun, tho textis mowen be verified riȝt weel, as is open ynouȝ bi the general

All the other texts speak of persons living viciously, whether belonging to any religious order or not ; and although they may apply to some persons now living in religious orders, they no more

CHAP. II. * and large speking of the textis in her wordis. But so
condemn the religious orders themselves, than Christ's reproofs to vicious priests condemn the priesthood which was ordained by God himself. it is, that thouz persoones in a religioun techen amys and lyuen amys, for that thei techen and lyuen other wise than her religioun wolde that thei schulde teche and lyue, zit therbi cometh noon hurte to the religioun, as that therfore the religioun were the wors or were badde and vnleeful; but if it schulde be seid and holde therto answeringli and folewingly that the sect of Cristis Apostlis were badde and vnleeful, for that Iudas lyued theryn amys; and but if it schulde be seid that Crist blamed and reproued the state of preesthode and the state of bischophode in the oolde lawe as badde and vnleeful, bicause he blamed and reproued the persoones of tho statis; whiche noman ouzte holde, for God him silf made tho statis, and he made no badde and vnleeful thing. Wherefore folew-ith needis that as bi alle tho textis of the bifore spokun noumbre, comyng in processe aftir the firste text of hem, is no strok zouun to eny sect or eny religioun forto therbi seie that eny sect or religioun is badde or vnleeful. Also open it is, that tho textis strecchen hem to viciouse persoones being out of religioun, as weel as to viciouse persoones in religioun. How schulden thanne tho textis serue in special forto distroie eny religiouns more than forto distroie eny state, zhe, ech state which is not religioun, as the state of dekenhode, the state of preesthode, and othere; if in suche statis ben persoones viciوسeli lyuyng? Certis no witti man can herto seie nay. And thanne ferther, sithen tho now seid textis speken of viciouse persoones teching amys, bileeuyn amys, and lyuyn amys, whether thei ben in sect of religioun or in other state out of religioun, if eny man wole take vpon him forto proue that tho textis or summe of hem ben verified of persoones now lyuyn in religioun or in preesthode out of religioun, make he first ther of his proof; and whanne he hath maad ther of his proof

bi euydencis being withoute tho textis, (as he muste needis for cause now late bfore in this present chapter tauzt,) Goddis forbode that he be weerned forto afferme, holde, and seie, that tho textis speken of persooones, and lete him holde and seie tho persooones for to be reproued of Holi Writt and of the Apostlis; and noman schal him therfro weerne. And it is al that he mai haue toward his purpos bi the same seid noumbre of textis. But whanne he hath al this at his lust, what hath he therbi forto reproue and blame eny sect or religioun? Certis riȝt nouȝt, as it is openli schewid in this processe of answering. Wherefore noon of alle tho textis sewyng in rewe aftir the first text ȝeuen eny strook to eny religioun now had and vsid in the chirche.

Neuertheles for as myche as the blamers and re-
prouers of the vj^e. principal gouernance ben aboute
forto proue that the ij^e. text of the bfore sett noum-
bre, which text is of Poul, i^e. Thim. iiij^e. c., spekith
of sectis and religiouns, namelich now being, and not
oonli of persooones being in religioun, therfore now
next after al this going bfore her euydencis ben to
be rehercid, that answere and solucioun be to hem
paied. Thei arguen thus: Tho persooones of whom
Poul spekith in the seid secunde text which is writun
i^e. Thim. iiij^e. c. ben alle tho persooones whiche for-
beden to be weddid, and also tho that bidden ab-
steyne fro metis whiche God made to take with doing
of thankinis, as it is open ynow bi wordis of the
text; but so doon the persooones being in the reli-
giouns now had and vsid in the chirche, and that not
as bi her owne witt, wil, and entent oonli, but as bi
strengthe and entent and reule of her religioun; wher-
fore not oonli the persooones of these now had and
vsid religiouns ben blamed and reproued bi the seid
text of Poul, i^e. Thim. iiij^e. c.; but also the religiouns
of the same persooones ben theryn and therbi also

But it is argued
that St. Paul
wrote to Timo-
thy not merely of
persons but of
religious orders
also as such,
which command
all their follow-
ers to abstain
from matrimony
and certain
meats.

CHAP. II.

blamed and reproveth, sithen tho persoones ben blamed bi the seid text in that and for that, that thei techen and doon as her sect and religioun wole that thei techen and do.

Supposed proof that the words of St. Paul condemn the restrictions imposed by the rules of the religious orders on their brethren.

And that tho persoones by strengthe and entent of her sectis and her religiouns forbeden to be weddid and forto abstene of metis whiche God made to take, thei ben aboute forto proue thus: Tho religiose men bi strengthe and entent of her religiouns dressyng hem therto bidden to her vndirlingis and her felawis and britheren being in the religiouns forto lyue chaast for euer; wherfore in so bidding thei musten needis forbede to the same vnderlingis and felawis forto be weddid; also summe of the same religiosis bi strengthe and reulis of her religiouns forbeden to her vndirlingis and felawis of religioun forto ete fleisch for euere, and summe bi strengthe of her religioun forbeden the eting of fleisch for sum cesoun and tyme of a monthe and of summe certeyn daies; wherfore, as it semeth to hem, tho¹ religiosis maken bi strengthe of her religiouns the same forbodis which Poul in his seide text blameth, that is to seie, forbeden to ete metis whiche God ordeynede to take. And if this be trewe, therof muste folowe that as Poul bi and in his seid text reproueth her now spokun forbedingis,² so bi and in his same text he reproueth her religiouns reuling tho persoones forto so forbede.

Reply to the proof. St. Paul speaks of those who consider matrimony or the eating of certain meats as abstractedly unlawful, which the brethren of religious orders do not do, but abstain only in con-

Answer to this arguyng schal be this: Poul in the ij^e. text of the seid noumbre, i^e. Thim. iiij^e. c., meeneth of suche forbeders whiche wolden forbede wedding and forbede eting of certain metis as deedis vnleeful in hem silf, or as being alwey contrarie to Goddis lawe; but so forbeden not oure religiose prelatis bi strengthe and entent of her religioun to her britheren in the

¹ that tho, MS.

| ² forbedindis, MS.

same religiouns, but these¹ religiose prelatis forbeden wedding and fre eting of alle metis to her religiose britheren, bi cause tho britheren han bounde hem silf to God into the contrarie, that is forto neuere be weddid and forto abstayne fro certein metis; and also neither tho prelatis forbeden neither tho suggestis vowiden to forbere wedlok and the vce of fleisch in certein whilis as vnleeful deedis and as deedis contrarie to Goddis lawe, but as deedis whos forberingis schulden make hem the more sureli kepen hem fro breking of Goddis lawe; and therfore the forbeders now in religioun ben not in the caace and in the deedis of whiche Poul spekith in the ij^e. seid text, which is i^e. Thim. iij^e. c̃. And but if Poul meened in the seid ij^e. text as it is now seid that he meened, and but if it were leeful to forbede as oure religiose prelatis now forbeden, certis ellis he were contrarie to him silf; forwhi, i^e. Thim. v^e. c̃., he forbedith widowis to be weddid after² thei han bounde hem silf to chastite.

*CHAP. II.

sequence of vows voluntarily made. The contrary interpretation of the text would make St. Paul inconsistent with himself.

Certis in the daies of the Apostlis weren men clepid pseudo or false Apostlis, whiche wenten aboute cuntries in the daies of the Apostlis, and peruertiden peplis fro the teching into which Poul had sette hem, as the Corinthians and the Galathies. Of whiche pseudo or false Apostlis summe tauzten that it was not leeful that men ete fleisch which was offrid to idols, neither bigge thilk fleisch whanne it were brouzt into market after tyme of offering forto be solde; summe other of these pseudo tauzten and helden that Cristen peple musten needis take the circumcision and the birthens of the oold lawe with the newe, as of euereither of these Poul spekith in his Epistle to Corinthians; and of the ij^e. he spekith in his Epistle to Galathies.

There were men living in the days of the Apostles to whom much of their words truly applied.

¹ these same, MS. (first hand). | ² after that, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. II.

Ferther more summe othere of hem tauzten that men schulden not be boundun bi mennys lawis, and therefore thei schulden not obeie to princis and dukis, whom Poul reproueth, Rom. xiiij^e. c. and i^e. Thim. i^e. c. and Petir in his firste Epistle the ij^e. c. Ferthermore the herisies of Hymeneus¹ and of Alisaundre weren in the daies of the Apostlis, whom Poul cursaide for her heresie, as it is open i^e. Thim. i^e. c. in the eende. Also Ioon the Euangeliste in his ij^e. Epistle meeneth that in hise daies weren heretikis going aboute to disseyue trewe bileeuers. Also Coloc. ij^e. c. is mensioun mad of heretikis whiche weren aboute to bringe yn in tho daies vnresonable religiouns azens trewe feith, and that bi colour that reuelacioun was maad to hem ther upon. And so open it is, that dyuerse sectis of heretikis rosen and regneden in tyme of the Apostlis, and diden miche care and lett and persecuciouns to the verry Apostlis, and therefore of hem myzte be meened myche of this that is seid in the bifore alleggid textis.

Also various heretics in after times held the opinions condemned in those texts of the Apostles.

Ferthermore, longe after the daies of the Apostlis heretikis weren, whiche helden that vtirly it is synne eny man or womman be weddid, and eny man haue to do in fleischli deling with a womman, as helde the sect of Eraclitis;² which also therwith helden that oonli chast persoonen schulen come into heuen, and that children diyng bifore her zeeris of discrecioun schulen neuere come to heuen. And summe othere heretikis with her foleweris making to gidere her sect han be, whiche helden that vtirly it is synne forto ete fleisch, as helde the sect of Tacyanys. Summe othere sect of heretikis hath be, which weel allowid

¹ *Hermynus*, MS.

² This appears to be a blunder or clerical error for Hieracitis. See for them and Tatian's disciples,

August. *Lib. de Hares.* c. 47 and c. 25. Op. tom. viii. pp. 13 and 7. (Ed. Antv. 1700).

wedlok, but thei helden dampnable if eny widowe were weddid; and herwith thei helden, if eny persoon hadde do oonys eny notable greet synne, that he neuer schulde haue therof forzeuenes,¹ how euer miche² repentaunce and penaunce he dide for it. And so oonli these heretikis and othere to hem like weren in the case of forbeding of which Seint Poul spekith in the ij^e. text; and not the othere religiose forbeders of this present tyme, whiche forbeden wedding and eting of fleisch bi cause of vow or boond therto bfore maad of hem to whom the forbedingis [are] maad, and whiche neither forsaken neither forbeden wedding and eting of fleisch as deedis vnleeful and contrarie to Goddis lawe. And thus myche is ynouȝ for answeere to the ij^e. argument.

Answeere to the iij^e. argument schal be the same answeere which is sett bfore in the iiij^e. parti of this book the ix^e. chapter, and is ȝouun there for answeere to the firste semyng skile sett in the viij^e. chapter of the same iiij^e. partie. Therefore who so wole se the seid answeere, turn he thider; for there he mai it se.

To the iiij^e. bfore maad argument, proceding vpon the reuelacioun and prophecie ȝouun to Seinte Hildegard, it is to be seid thus: Whether it be trewe or no what sche seide and wroot of the persoones holding the iiij. ordres of beggeris and of her ordre, this y dare seie, that among the reuelaciouns and prophecies, whiche ben ascriued to hir, is conteyned vntrouthe contrarie to the trewe feith; and for to it proue y durst leie in plegge my lijf, how euer it be that her prophecies and reuelacions weren approued.

The argument that the traditions of the religious orders are men's traditions has been already answered.

The argument derived from prophecies of St. Hildegard cannot be relied on, for they contain false doctrine.

¹ forzeuenes, MS.

| ² how miche, MS. (first hand).

iiij. CHAPITER.

Distinct proof shall be made that the words of the Apostles relating to false teachers were verified of many sects and persons living before the religious orders were founded, and were more truly applicable to them than to the religious orders. Enumeration of these sects by name, together with their tenets.

FERTHERMORE for as myche as y haue wist this, that summe of the lay peple, whanne thei han rad or han herd red summe of the bifore alleggid textis in the [ie.]¹ chapiter of the [v^e.]¹ parti of this book, (bi cause thei couthen applie tho textis in oon manner or other, thouz not moost euenli neither verili² and accordingly to sectis and persoones now being and lyuyng in the chirche; and therwith thei knewen not bi reding or heering of oold stories how that sectis and persoones lyuyng in hem weren in eeldir daies, to whom the same textis myzten euenlier and more accordingly be applied,) han thouzt and han holde stiffeli for bettir or wors in her conceitis and wordis, that tho textis weren seid and writun for these sectis now presentli being in the chirche and for the persoones lyuyng in hem as it were oonli, as thouz neuere had be eny sectis bifore in oold daies into whiche tho textis myzten be verified; and therbi tho reders han fallen out into bering of greet indignacioun anentis this³ present sectis and religiouns, and han seid ful foule and ful vnskilfulli of hem azens honeste and azens wisdom and azens charite;—wherefore⁴ into remediying of suche mennys vnkunnyng and into remediying of her obstynat holding, and forto make hem the redier and the willier forto counceyle with learned men vpon oold stories and oold recordis in the chirche, and forto make hem heere such oolde stories and recordis and learne what hath be doon in eeldir daies more than they witen off, y schal now

¹ Spaces left in the MS. for the references.

² *veri*, MS.

³ Apparently a clerical error for *these* or *thes*.

⁴ The sense strictly requires *therefore*; but see Glossary.

reherce here sumwhat what maners of dyuerse yuel CHAP. III.
and vntrewe sectis of Cristen men weren in eeldir
daies, (summe in the daies of the Apostlis, and summe
aftir the daies of the Apostlis,) that alle suche now
seid reders and heerers mowen therbi learne, that the
wordis of Petir, ij°. Pet. ij°. ē., and the wordis of
Poul, i°. Thim. iiij°. ē. and ij°. Thim. iiij°. ē., weren
verified of manye sectis and persoones, eer eny of
these religiose sectis weren whiche ben in the chirche.

Certis in the daies of the Apostlis in Cristen men The Menandri-
ans.
was the sect of Menandrianis, whiche helden that the
world was mad not of God but of aungelis.¹

Also the sect of Basilidianis, whiche helden that And the Basilid-
ians.
Crist suffrid not verili his passioun and his deeth, but
apparentli and seemyngli oonli.²

Also the sect of Nycholaitis, which helden that And the Nicolai-
tans.
weddid men myȝten chaunge to gidere her wyues.³

Also the sect of Carpocracianys, which helden that And the Carpo-
cratians.
Crist was not God, but man oonli, and was bigetun
bitwixe man and womman deling to gidere fleischli.⁴

Also the sect of Chirencianys,⁵ whiche helden that And the Cerin-
thians.
aftir the general resurreccioun⁶ men and wommen
thanne rising schulden lyue in greet fleischli welthe
and delectacioun upon erthe a thousand of ȝeeris.⁷

Aftir the daies of the Apostlis roosen also manye And the Valen-
tinians.
vntrewe sectis of Cristen men, as the sect of Valen-
tynyanys, whiche helden that Crist took no thing of
Maries bodi, but passid forth thoruz her as thoruz a
pipe or a canal.⁸

¹ Augst. *Lib. de Her.* c. 2.

² Aug. l.c. c. 4.

³ Aug. l.c. c. 5.

⁴ Aug. l.c. c. 7.

⁵ The MS. reading is apparently a little corrupted. At all events Pecock intended to express the *Cerinthians*.

⁶ The MS. reading here and below looks like *renurrectionun*; but more probably *resurreccioun* is intended. The analogy of the orthography favours the latter, and *c* and *t* are often almost identical in form.

⁷ Aug. l.c. c. 8.

⁸ Aug. l.c. c. 11.

CHAP. III. Also the sect of Apostelynys, whiche helden as dampnable that eny man hadde in his propirte eny worldli good.¹

And the Apostolici.
And the Cerdonians and Marcionites. Also the sect of Cerdyonystis and of Marcionystis, whiche helden that ij. Goddis ben, oon good, and an other yuel; and the oon is maker of rȳt and of good thingis, and the other is maker of vnȳt and of badde thingis.²

And the Severiana. Also the sect of Seuerianys, whiche helden as vnleful for to drinke wijn, and helden not with the Oold Testament, neither that the general resurreccioun schulde come.³

And the Tatianites. Also the sect of Tacianys, which helden that fleisch schulde not be etc.⁴

And the Catharigians or Montanists. Also the sect of Cathafrigis, whiche helden that the Holi Goost came not into the Apostlis, but into hem that weren of the Cathafrigis oonli.⁵

And the Cathari. Also the sect of Cathartitis, whiche helden to be vnleful that eny widowe be weddid, and that, aftir a man hath synned in eny greet synne, he schal neuer haue ther of forȳuenes, how euer greet repentaunce and amendis he do.⁶

And the Pauliani. Also the sect of Paulianys, which helden that Crist was not bifore Marie, but took his bigynnyng of Marie.⁷

And the Anthropomorphites. Also the sect of Antropomorfitis, whiche helden that God in his godhede hath hondis and feet and othere suche membris.⁸

And the Hieracites. Also the sect of Eraclisis, whiche helden that alle men ouȳten lyue chast, and that wedlok is vnleful, and that children diyng bifore her ȳeris of discrecioun schulen not come to heuen.⁹

¹ Aug. l.c. c. 40.

² Aug. l.c. c. 31 and c. 22.

³ Aug. l.c. c. 24.

⁴ Aug. l.c. c. 25.

⁵ Aug. l.c. c. 26.

⁶ Aug. l.c. c. 37.

⁷ Aug. l.c. c. 44.

⁸ Aug. l.c. c. 50.

⁹ Aug. l.c. c. 47.

Also the sect of Nouacianys, whiche helden that if eny man falle oonys fro the feith, that he schal neuere haue ther of forzeunes, and that a man oonys baptisid hath nede in sum caas for to be aȝen baptisid.¹ CHAP. III.
And the Novatians.

Also the sect of Ebionytis, which helden Crist to be a pure man oonli, and these helden the riztis and obseruauncis² of the Iewis rennyngli with lawe of kinde and with the feith of the Gospel.³ And the Ebionites.

Also the sect of Fotyanys,⁴ which helden that Crist was conceyued and bigete bitwixe Ioseph and Marie bi fleischli deede.⁵ And the Photinians.

Also the sect of Acyanys and of Ennomynyanyas, which helden that al the while a man holdith him silf in the feith he is not dampnable for eny other synne which he doith, thouȝ he schal be therfore punyschid for awhile.⁶ And the Aetians and Eunomians.

Also the sect of Sabellianys, which helden that of the Fadir, Sone, and Holi Goost is not but oon persoon.⁷ And the Sabellians.

Also the sect of Arrianys, which helden that the Fadir and Sone ben not oon substaunce.⁸ And the Arians.

Also the sect of Macedonyanyas, whiche helden that the Holi Goost was not God.⁹ And the Macedonians.

Also the sect of Appollynaristis, which helden that Crist in his incarnacioun took a bodi but not a soul.¹⁰ And the Apollinarians.

Also the sect of Antymaritis, whiche helden that Marie was fleischli knowen of Ioseph afir that Crist was of hir born.¹¹ And the Antidicomarites.

¹ Aug. l.c. c. 38. Isid. Hisp. Orig. lib. viii. c. 5.

² ob'seucis, MS.

³ Aug. l.c. c. 10.

⁴ Fontianys, MS. (first hand).

⁵ Aug. l.c. c. 44 and c. 45. Isid. Hisp. l.c.

⁶ Aug. l.c. c. 54.

⁷ Aug. l.c. c. 41.

⁸ Aug. l.c. c. 49.

⁹ Aug. l.c. c. 52.

¹⁰ Aug. l.c. c. 55.

¹¹ Aug. l.c. c. 56.

- CHAP. III. Also the sect of Donatistis, whiche helden that the Sone is lasse than the Fader, and the Holi Goost lasse than the Sone, and that a man baptiside of an heretik hath nede to be baptisid azen.¹
- And the Bonosianians. Also the sect of Bonosianys,² whiche helden that Crist is not the propre Sone of God, but his Sone bi choise or purchase.³
- And the Jovinianists. Also the sect of Iouyanystis, whiche helden that forto lyue in maidenhode and forto lyue in wedlok in bigeting children ben of oon meryt, and that forto ete and for to faste ben of oon merit afore God.⁴
- And the Helvidians. Also the sect of Elvidianys, whiche helden that Marie conceyued and bare sones and douztris after that sche conceyued and bare Crist.⁵
- And the Paternians. Also the sect of Paternyanys, which helden that the louzer parties of a mannys bodi weren maad of the feend.⁶
- And the Arabians. Also the sect of Arrabianys, whiche helden that a mannys soul dieth with the bodi and schal rise azen with the bodi in the laste dai.⁷
- And the Pelagians. Also the sect of Pelagianys, whiche helden that a man bi his fre wil mai deserue heuen withoute grace.⁸
- And the Nestorians. Also the sect of Nestorianys, whiche helden that Marie was not the modir of God but modir of a man oonli, to which man aftir he was born of Marie God couplid him silf; as ther weren in him ij. naturis, oon of God, and an other of man.⁹
- And the Eutychians. Also the sect of Euticianys, whiche helden that in Crist aftir his incarnacioun weren not ij. kindis or naturis, but oon nature; for that the manhode passid bi turnyng into the Godhede.¹⁰

¹ Aug. Lc. c. 69.² *Boitosianys*, MS.³ Isid. Hispal. Lc.⁴ Aug. Lc. c. 82.⁵ Aug. Lc. c. 84.⁶ Aug. Lc. c. 85.⁷ Aug. Lc. c. 83.⁸ Aug. Lc. c. 87.⁹ Isid. Hisp. Lc.¹⁰ Isid. Hisp. Lc.

Also the sect of Tritoycis, whiche helden that as CHAP. III.
thre persoones ben in Trynpte, so thre Goddis ben in And the Tri-
Trinite.¹ theite.

Also the sect of Waldensis.² . . . And the Wal-
denses.

Also the sect of Wiclifistis,³ whiche azens the vij. And the Wic-
principal gouernauncis touchid and rehercid bi the lifites.
proces of this present book holden in the maners
rehercid in this present book, and in wors and
horribler maner, as it is open in the book of Wiclif
and of othere being of his sect.

Of manye mo heretik sectis than of these here now Information on
rehercid a man may here, if he wole rede Ysidor in various other
the viij^e. book of hise *Ethymologies* and Austyn in heretical sects
his book *Of heresies*; but ȝit if a man wole knowe may be found in
the heresies of hem in lengthe, he muste rede the the works of
book which therof made Epiphanius the Greke, and Augustine and
the book which therof made Philaster the Latyn Isidore Hyspa-
writer. Neuertheles bi this rehercel here now maad lensis, and more
of heretik sectis⁴ it is open ynouȝ that alle tho men, fully in those of
whiche weenen that the⁵ wordis of Peter, ij^e. Petri Epiphanius and
ij^e. ē. and the wordis of Poul, i^e. Thim. iij^e. ē. and Philaster. But
ij^e. Thim. iij^e. ē., and the other textis bfore in the enough has been
[firste]⁶ chapiter [of the fifthe parti]⁶ of this book said here to show
alleggid, musten nedis be seid and be verified of the how mistaken
religiouns now being in the chirche, ben foule bigilid. those are, who
imagine that the
words of the
Apostles must
necessarily apply
to the religious
orders.

¹ Isid. Hisp. l.c.

² Nearly nine lines, i.e., space for about fifty words, are left blank in the MS.

³ *Wiclifistis*, MS.

⁴ The references to Augustine's work are given under the respective sects, reference to that of Isidore being only added, when he relates something named by Pecock which is not found in Augustine. All the

information given in the text is to be found in these two works, and Pecock probably knew no more of Epiphanius (and perhaps of Philaster also) than what he saw quoted by Augustine. These latter authors, therefore, are not referred to in the notes.

⁵ *tho*, MS.

⁶ Spaces left in the MS. for the numbers.

CHAP. III.

Out of which bigiling God for his merci graunte, that thei rise sumwhat the sooner bi enformacioun which thei mowen take bi rehercel now mad of heretik sectis; that thei rise out fro her indignacioun born anentis religiouns now had in the chirche, and fro al the bacbiting which thei maken azens the same religiouns.

iiij. CHAPTER.

THE SECOND CONCLUSION IN FAVOUR OF THE RELIGIOUS ORDERS. Reason does not forbid them. Certain arguments against them derived from reason considered and refuted.

THE ij^e. principal conclusioun biholding the vj^e. principal gouernaunce is this: Doom of clerili in kinde disposid resoun lettith not and weerneth not the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce. That this conclusioun is trewe y proue thus: If eny doom of such resoun schulde lette and weerne the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce, it schulde be oon of these doomes which ben conteyned in the iiij. semyng skilis now next to be maad and fourmed; but so it is, that noon of the doomes lettith and weerneth the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce. Wherefore no doom of such seid resoun lettith and weerneth the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce.

The first argument of the Lollards. Religious orders prohibit the religious from giving alms and relieving the necessities of their parents, both of which are divine commands.

The firste of these iiij. now spokun semyng skilis is this: Ech religioun is vnleeful and not worthi be had and vsid, which lettith and afore barrith, zhe, and weerneth the comaundement of God in his lawe of kinde to be doon; but so it is, that ech of the bifore spoken religions now had and vsid in the chirche and conteyning vow of wilful expropriat pouerte and obedience to certain reulis and statutis lettith and afore barrith, zhe, and weerneth hise religiose persoon for to do and fulfille sum comaundement of God. Forwhi ech of the religiouns lettith and forbarrith and weerneth hise persones for to do bodili almes deedis to the pore and nedi, and also forto worschipe his fadir and modir in the effect of

releeyng her bodili and goostli neede and lak, as it is open to ech attender. And ȝit God biddith bodili almes deedis to be doon, as it is writun [Luk xj^c.]¹ ē. thus, *That that is ouer plus ȝeue ȝe almes*; and also Math. xxv^c. ē. it is open that for vndoing or for the leuyng of such bodili almes vndoon men schulen be dampned. Wherefore forto do such almes is the comaundement of God. And also that ech man thus worschipe his fadir and modir is the comaundement of God, it is open, Mark [vij^c.]¹ ē. and Effes. [vj^c.]¹ ē. Wherefore alle suche now spokun religiouns ben vnleeful, and not worthi to be had and vsid.

The ij^c. semyng skile is this: Thilk thing or gouernaunce, not being necessarie into oure saluacioun for that it is the comaundement of God, what euer he be, is to be kutt away and to be leid aside and to be not had and vsid, of which myche goostli harme and synne comen, for that that he is the occasioun that thilk goostli harme and synne comen. Forwhi into the meenyng of this now rehercid propositioun or sentence the Gospel is alleggid bifore in the [v^c.]¹ chapter of the iij^c.² parti of this book thus: *If thi rizt ize or thi rizt hond or thi rizt foot sclaundre thee, pulle him out or kutte him away, and caste him fro thee*; but so it is, that of ech of the now spokun religiouns had and vsid in the chirche miche goostli harme and synne comen; so that ech of them is the occasioun wherbi and wherfro the goostli harme and synne comen. Wherefore folewith that ech of the now spokun religiouns ouzte be pullid out of the chirche, and ouzte be kutt away, and be not had and vsid.

The iij^c. semyng skile is this: If suche now spokun religiouns ben so gode and so profitable to Cristen men as is now bifore pretendid hem to be, whi or-

Their second argument. The religious orders are the cause of much sin and evil, and consequently ought to be abolished.

The third argument. Christ would have appointed religious orders, if

¹ Spaces left in the MS. for the references.

² *this v.*, MS. See p. 307.

CHAP. IV.
they had been
profitable.

deynde not Crist tho same religiouns to be had and vsid; sithen he couthe haue ordeynde tho religiouns as weel as men couthen fynde hem and devise hem, and sithen he loueth us and wilneth oure goostli profit more than we silf willen, forwhi for oure goostli profit he soore laborid, suffrid, and died? Wher upon it myȝte be argued in forme thus: Crist, which was oure grettist loue and oure best prowre, ordeynde al that was best for us to haue and al that is notabili bettir to be had than to not be had; for ellis he hadde not be anentis us to gidere wijsist purueier and tendirist loue: but so it is, that Crist not ordeynde these spokun religiouns, forwhi it is bifore grantid in the [i^e.]¹ chapitre of the [v^e.]¹ parti and it is openli trewe that men founde hem and devisid hem, and that now late summe and manye of hem: wherfore thei ben not necessarie, neither thei ben in notable degre bettir to be had or to be not had.

Their fourth argument. The great variety of the religious orders breeds debate and discord.

The iiij^e. semyng skile is this: If for to haue religioun and religiosite set to the comoun lawe of God maad of lawe of kinde and of sacramentis is leeful, good, and profitable, whi mai not this good and profit sufficientli be performed and fillid bi oon or ij. or a fewe of suche religions had and vsid² in the chirche? Skile ther azens semeth to be noon, namelich sithen alle tho religiouns had and vsid in the chirche accorden and ben as oon in the thre substancial thingis of hem alle, that is to seie in the iiij. vowis whiche alle suche religioses maken. Wher fore this that ther ben now in the chirche so manye foold dyuerse religiouns and religiosis, (of whiche summe eten fleisch, whanne othere religiosis eten fisch; summe waken, whanne othere slepen; summe weren whijt, summe

¹ Spaces left in the MS. for the references. See p. 483.

² had and vsid is added by a later hand.

weren blak, summe weren whijt aboue and blak binethe, and summe in the contrarie maner weren blak aboue and whijt binethe; summe weren lynnen next to her skyn, and summe forberen al lynnen fro her skyn of the bodi) is not but of vnconstaunce and of vnstabilnes, of liztnes and vnavisidnes, and of scisme making in the oonhede of Cristen britheren; and is modir cause and occasioun of debatis and of lasse loue to be had among alle Cristen britheren to gidere, and so forth of othere yuelis.

CHAP. IV.

V. CHAPTER.

FOR answer to the firste semyng skile, the ij^o. premysse of the argument there maad is to be denied, which ij^o. premysse is this: That ech religioun now had in which is vow of expropriacioun lettith, forbarith, and weerneth sum comaundement of God to be doon. And whanne ferther into the¹ proof ther of it is argued thus: Ech such religioun lettith and weerneth hise persooones forto do bodili almes of ricchessis deling, and also lettith and weerneth hise persooones forto releue her fadir and modir being in pouerte, and zit these deedis ben comaundementis of God; it is to be answerid here, that noon of these religiouns lettith tho deedis to be doon bi eny of hise persooones, as tho deedis and whanne tho deedis ben comaundementis of God to the same persoon, but as and whanne tho deedis ben noon comaundementis of God to the same persoon: and therfore noon of tho religiouns lettith hise persooones forto do eny comaundement of God.

For ferther cleering and declaring of this maad answer it is to wite, that ther ben ij. maners of Goddis

THE FIRST ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS ANSWERED. These religions do not forbid any deed so far as it is a command of God to any person, but only so far as it is not a command.

God's commandments are of two kinds, negative

¹ *the* is interlineated in a later hand.

CHAP. V.

and positive. The former are always binding, not so the latter. If any one justly lacks the means to fulfil them, or may reasonably make himself lack the means, he is released from the obligation to fulfil them. Application of these remarks to the case of the religious orders.

comaundementis. Forwhi summe comaundementis of God ben negatyues, that is to seie, weernyngis or forbodis, as ben these: *Thou schalt not do avoutrie; Thou schalt not bere fals witnes; Vnworeschipe thou not thi fadir and modir*, and suche othere; and these bynden to alwey, and to whom euere eny of these comaundementis is oony a comaundement, to him thilk same comaundement is euermore perpetueli a comaundement. Summe othere comaundementis ben affirmatyue comaundementis, that is to seie, biddingis that certein deedis be doon, as ben these: *Worschipe and releue thi fadir and modir; Zeue thou almes to the poor; Teche thou the vnkunnynge*, and suche othere: and these comaundementis binden not to¹ alwey, and to whom these ben comaundementis for oon while, thei mowen ceese to be comaundementis, as for an other while. Forwhi sithen affirmatyue or bidding comandementis ben comaundementis that certein deedis be doon, and if tho deedis mowen not be doon with oute certein to hem required meenes, it muste needis folewe that if and whanne a man iustli lackith the meenes, bi whiche needis tho deedis schulden be doon, he is not bounde forto do thilke deedis; and if euer and whanne euer a man may resonabili and therfore lawfulli make him silf lacke the meenys, bi whiche tho deedis musten needis be doon, if thei schulden be doon, that thanne he may make him be not bounde to tho deedis, and may make that tho deedis be not to him comaundementis of God, thouz bfore whanne he hadde or myzte haue the meenis of tho deedis, tho deedis weren to him comaundid deedis. And therefore folewith needis, that whanne euer a man iustli and withoute blame of rescoun lackith the ricchessis, with whiche he myzte visite

¹ to is interlineated in a later hand.

the faderles and modirles children and poor widowis and do other bodili almes, thanne as for thanne and as for al thilk while it is not comaundement of God to him forto do such now seid almes, neither forto releue the pouerte of his fadir and modir; and bi lijk skile it muste needis folewe, that if euer and whanne euer a man may not azens resoun (but bi doom of cleer resoun) make him silf lacke suche ricchessis, 3he, and make him silf lack the power forto wynne or other wise come to iustli suche ricchessis, thanne and as for al thilk while it is not comaundement¹ of God to him neither forto releue the pouerte of his fadir and moder or of eny other nei3bour, neither it is comaundement of God to him forto labore that he wynne bi craft or in eny other wise to gete riches forto therbi releue the pouerte and nede of his fadir and modir or of eny other nei3bour to him.

And that a man now hauyng ricchessis in greet plente mai with his good wil iustli and leefulli make him silf lacke the same ricchessis, 3he, and the power forto wynne, gete, or haue ther aftir eny suche ricchessis, y proue in this wise: I putte caas here, were a man which hath myche riches, wherwith he mai weel releue the pouerte of his fadir and modir and of hise othere nei3boris, if thei in eny pouerte now weren; and this man hath a bodili sijknas, (or ellis dredith for greet liklihode forto falle into a bodili sijknas,) bi which he schal lyue in huge vnberable peine or be deed; ther is a lecche which wole vndirtake to make him hool, or to preserue him fro the fal into thilk sijknas; but al the riches of this seid man is litil ynou3 forto spende aboute the medicyns longing to thilk cure or preseruacioun. This man

Proof that a man may lawfully make himself lack the riches, wherewith he should supply the need of his parents and neighbours. He might spend all his goods lawfully on physicians, if he could not otherwise be cured of a grievous sickness of body: and therefore *à fortiori* he may spend them, if he cannot otherwise be cured of a grievous sickness of soul, and he joins a religious order and becomes bound to poverty for this end and intent, and he is not bound to love any one more

¹ a comaundement, MS. (first hand, apparently).

CHAP. V.
than himself or
than his own
soul's salvation.

seing this spendith out al his seid worldli riches into the now seid purpos, and makith him silf willfulli to lacke the meenys bi whiche he myzte releue the pouerte of his fadir and modir, into which thei ben falle aftir this expense. Thanne y aske heere this questioun: Whether this man in so expending dooth azens the comaundement of God, bi which God biddith that a man releue the pouerte and nede of his fadir and modir, and releue the neede of hise othere neiȝboris? Certis ech resonable man this heering wole seie nay; ȝhe, and thouȝ eer than he hadde bigunne to make this expense he hadde seen his fader and modir falle into greet pouerte and bodili neede, ȝit he hadde not do amys forto bigynne and contynue his now seid expense, and forto leue his fadir and modir and othere neiȝboris in her pouerte and bodili nede. And thouȝ ouer al this seid expense it were so, that the leche wolde not do and make this seid cure, but if this man wolde bicomme his perpetual seruaunt or boond man, and folewe him into a fer cuntre, and serue him for mete and drinke and clooth oonli; ȝit this man schulde not do amys forto so make him silf lacke power into wynnynge eft soone of worldli good in bycomynge¹ boond to this leche for the seid effect and purpos, bisidis the expense of alle hise ricchessis now of him possessid and had, as it is open ynouȝ to resoun. But whi and for what cause is this trewe? Sotheli for thouȝ this man be bounde forto loue his fader and moder and hise othere neiȝboris as him silf, ȝit he is not bounde for to loue eny of hem more than him silf, neither so myche as him silf; but this man is bounde bi the dew ordre of charite which doom of resoun ȝeueth, and so bi the lawe of God forto loue him silf more than his fadir

¹ *by comynge*, MS.

and modir and hise othere neizboris, as it is schewid in othere placis of my writingis; so that this man ouzte loue in affect and in effect his owne bodi more than the bodi of his fadir or modir or of eny other neizbore, and his owne soule more than the soule or the bodi of his fadir or modir or of eny other to him neizbour, and his owne bodili lijf more than the bodili lijf of his fadir and modir. Certis if this be the cause, as no kunnyng man mai denye it to be the very and trewe therof cause, thanne ther of folewith this: that miche rather, if eny man is ful sijk in synne or dreedful with ful likeli opinioun that he schal falle ful periloseli into synne and contynue so, that he dredith lest he schal not make a sure eende into his saluacioun; and it is seen in resoun that forto be curid or preserued herof best wey and surist wey and noon other sure to his frelnes wey is, than to forsake alle hise temporal ricchessis and bicomme a religiose man in sum religioun conteynyng vow of wilful pouerte, bi which vow he not oonli muste leue hise now had ricchessis and power forto¹ aftirward of the newe wyne and come to eny suche ricchessis; if he so do, 3he, thou3 for the while he seeth his fadir and modir and hise neizboris falle or be in grettist bodili pouerte and nede, he doith not ther yn amys, neithir doith azens the comaundement of God. Forwhi he not therbi dooth azens the loue, bi whiche he ouzte loue his fadir and modir and hise othere neizboris as him silf; but he executith the comaundement of God, bi which he is bounde to loue him silf more than his fader and modir and hise othere neizboris, namelich his owne soule and his goostli helthe more than the goostli welthe and the bodili welthe of his fader and modir and of hise othere neizboris: and therefore he

¹ to is interlineated in a later hand.

CHAP. V. dooth not ther ynne amys, neither brekith therbi eny comaundement of God, but he ther yn and ther bi fulfillith the now seid comaundement of God.

Full explanation of the lawfulness of this conduct. The command to honour our parents is in fact a part of the more general command to love our neighbour as ourselves: but this latter command does not oblige any one to love another, so much as himself, or to love all men equally.

And thouȝ y schulde seie no more than this now seid, certis it were ynouȝ for answeere to the first semyng skile. Neuertheles thus myche more y schal therto sette: The comoun peple and perauenture summe of the clerkis ben her yn bigilid, that thei weenen this comaundement of God, *Honoure thou thi fadir and modir*, to be a seuerall comaundement bi him silf departid fro this comaundement of God, *Loue thou thi neizbore as thi silf*, and to be a streitir comaundement and more to be kept than is this comaundement, *Loue thou thi neizbore as thi silf*; but certis this is not trewe. Forwhi therof wolde folewe that a mannys fadir and modir be not to him hise neizboris; and it is fals: for thei ben to him summe of hise principalist neizboris. Also it wolde therof folewe that the deedis of reuerencing and the deedis of releeying, which a man dooth to his fadir and modir, weren not deedis of loue; which also is vntrewe. And therefore, sithen a mannys fader and modir ben to him nedis hise neizboris, and not more to him than neizboris, thouȝ thei ben hise principal neizboris, and the reuerencing and the releeying, (whethir thei ben goostli or bodili,) ben deedis of loue, and ben noon better neither more than deedis of loue, it folewith needis that in this comaundement, *Worschepe thou* (in affect and effect bi reuerencing and releving)¹ *thi fadir and modir*, whanne and as and if resoun deemeth it to be doon, is no thing comaundid streiter than is comaundid and conteyned in this comaundement, *Loue thou* (in affect and effect) *ech of thi neizboris as thi silf*.

¹ and bi releving is added in the margin by a later hand; bi having been afterwards erased.

But bi cause that thouz a man ouzte loue in affect and effect ech of hise neizboris as him silf, zit he ouzte not loue ech of hise neizboris lijk myche neither eny of hise neizboris so miche as him silf; but summe of hise neizboris, as ben Cristen men, he ouzte loue in affect and effect more than Iewis or Sarazenys, whiche ben to us neizboris al the while thei ben in state in which thei mowen be conuertid and be saued; and summe of Cristen neizboris, as ben grete to him benefetouris, he ouzte loue in affect and effect more than othere Cristene being not so grete to him benefetouris; and also hem, whiche ben trewe seruauntis to God and ben of him more loued, he ouzte more loue in affect and effect than othere not being so gode seruauntis to God and not so myche of him loued. And if her with alle tho greete benefetouris or tho bettir seruauntis to God ben neer and more of his blood than ben othere, bi so myche also thei ouzte be the more of him loued in affect and effect. And for as miche as comounli it is so, that a mannys fader and modir ben to him grettist benefetouris, or name-lich ben in grettist wil forto be benefetouris to him, and comounly noon other persoon ferther in blood is woned be so willi and so redy forto do and suffre for a man as ben his or weren bifore to him his fadir or modir, therefore that we be not vnkinde anentis hem whom we, as it comounli fallith, ben bounde forto moost loue of alle oure neizboris, God in wey of notifyng and in wey of remembring to be waar of the gretter default bifore the lasse expressid to us in wordis thus, *Worschipe thou thi fadir and thi modir*. And zit her of and herfro folewith not, neither may eny¹ colour be had, that God comaundith a man to bere him anentis his fadir and modir more and other

¹ in *eny*, MS. (first hand), perhaps rightly.

CHAP. V

wise than the hizest degre of neizborehode askith, or that he schulde do eny gretter thing than is conteyned and includid in this general comaundement, *Loue thou thi neizbore as thi silf*. For this comaundement, *Worschipe thou thi fadir and modir*, is not but a special and a parti of this general and hool comaundement, *Loue* (in affect and effect) *thi neizbore as thi silf*, but as moche as resoun wole. And certis the vnconsideracion [and] the vnkunnyng of this now declarid notabilite and the opinioun that this comaundement spokun bi Goddis owne mouth, *Worschipe thou thi fadir and modir*, was off grettir charge than is now declarid, and was in streiter wise to be vnderstonde than is now declarid, hath be a cause in summe of the comoun peple forto ouer vnwijaly and ouer bitterli berke and clatere,¹ bachbite and diffame azens the bifore seid religions. Wolde God that thei wolden now take heede to this present book, and souke out therof goostli triacle azens her goostli poysenyng and enfecting.

vj. CHAPTER.

THE SECOND
ARGUMENT OF
THE LOLLARDS
ANSWERED.
Although it has
been in fact an-
swered already,
yet it may here
be added that an
institution only
then need to be
abolished, when
evil springs from
it as a cause and
not merely as an

FOR answeere to the ij^e. semyng skile may serue sufficientli al what is bifore seid and writun in the [iv^e. parti the iij^e. chapitre]² in iustifyng the iiij^e.³ principal gouernaunce; and that fro thilk place which biginneth thus, *If eny wole pretende that rizt doom of resoun, et cætera*, into the eende of the same chapitre there.⁴ Neuertheles sumwhat more y schal sette therto here, namelich for this, that the Gospel [Math.

¹ *chatere*, MS. (first hand).

² A space left in the MS. for the references.

³ *ij^e*, MS.

⁴ See p. 432. This seems to be the place referred to.

v^e. ē.]¹ is brouzte in forto enforce this secunde semyng skile. And therefore y seie therto thus: In twey maners out of a gouernaunce mai come yuel as it is seid before in the [ij^e.]¹ chapiter of the [iv^e.]¹ parti of this book, that is to seie, in oon maner as fro the cause of the yuel, and in an other maner as fro an occasioun of the yuel oonli.² Certis whanne euer synne cometh fro and bi eny gouernaunce in the first maner, thanne thilk gouernaunce is vnleeful and to be cast away; and of [a] gouernaunce out, fro, and bi which cometh synne in to a persoon in this firste maner meened Crist in the place of the Gospel now alleggid [Math. v^e. ē.];¹ and not of a gouernaunce out, fro, and bi which cometh synne to a persoon in the ij^e. maner oonli. Ferthermore, whanne euer the sclandre (that is to seie, the synne,) cometh into a persoon out, fro, and bi a gouernaunce in the firste maner, it is alwey trewe that to the persoon sclaudrid (that is to seie, prouokid and putt into synne) the sclandre (that is to seie, the synne) is zouun, and is not oonli of him and bi his side acceptid and takun withoute zeuyng. And whanne euer out, fro, and bi eny gouernaunce sclandre (that is to seie, synne) cometh in the ij^e. maner, than it is trewe that the sclandre (that is to seie, the synne) is not zouun to the persoon, but it is of him takun and acceptid withoute therof to him maad eny zeuyng. And sithen it is so, that al the greet and notable synne, that cometh fro, out, and bi religiouns now had and vsid in the chirche, cometh fro hem into the persoones of hem in the secunde now seid maner oonli and not in the firste, therefore the sentence of the Gospel of [Math. v^e. ē.]¹ alleggid bifore in the argument fallith not vpon these religiouns, that thei for such sclaudring of persoones be

CHAP. VI.
occasion. When scandal arises from a thing as from a cause, the offence is always given as well as taken: but not so when it springs from a thing, as from an occasion only. This latter case is the case of the religious orders, and so Christ's command to cut off scandals does not apply to them.

¹ Spaces left in the MS. for the references.

² See pp. 428-433.

CHAP. VI.

kutt away. Forwhi the sclaundris of the persoones ben sclaundris acceptid and takun into hem bi hem self and her owne freelnes, and ben not ȝouun to hem bi tho religiouns.

Yet when sin comes into a man by occasion of any ordinance not commanded of God, and that frequently, he must consider whether it is easiest and best for him to forego the ordinance altogether or to conquer his frailty and to retain it. Although the ordinance itself be lawful, yet different persons must act in different manners with respect to observing or not observing it.

Neuertheles, thouȝ this be trewe what is now bifore seid, that whanne scolaundre (that is to seie, synne) cometh into a persoon bi a gouernaunce aftir the ij^e. maner oonli, thilk gouernaunce hath no wijt or deseruyng or riȝt forto be leid away, but the freelnes of the persoon ouȝte bi riȝt be fouȝt aȝens and be leid away, ȝit in this maner wolde be had this special consideracioun and therupon folewingli this now to be ȝouun tempering moderacioun. Whanne synne cometh into a persoon bi a gouernaunce and in the ij^e. maner oonli, and this person so ofte fallith into thilk synne, whanne he holdith thilk gouernaunce, that the synne is as it were vnscapeable and vnavoidable of him; and herwith it is so, that the same gouernaunce is not to him comaundid of God and bi his lawe, and therefore is not necessarie for his saluacioun, certis thanne it is to be aspied weel bothe bi resoun and bi sure assay and experience, whether it be esier and surer and lasse payne and bateil for to fiȝte aȝens his freelnes and hise lustis and ouercome it with the holding of the seid gouernaunce, or ellis aȝenward it is esier, surer, and lasse payne and lasse bateil forto forgo¹ at al and lacke the seid gouernaunce, than for to fiȝte and ouercome the lustis of his freelnes. If it be sureli founde bi cleer sure resoun or bi sufficient assay that the persoon is disposid in the first of these ij. now seid disposiciouns, it is not good reule that he oaste away fro him the seid gouernaunce, namelich if thilk gouernaunce be myche profitable to him in othere goostli sidis and stondith to him in miche

¹ for go, MS.

goostli stide; but the good reule were for to caste away the lustis and othere passiouns of his freelnes, and lete the gouernauncis be had. And azenward, if it be sureli founde bi cleer and sure resoun or bi sufficient assay of experience, that the persoon is disposid in the ij^e. now seid disposicioun, sotheli thanne, thouz this gouernaunce deserueth not bi his wijt to be kut away, zit alloweable reule it were forto kutte away thilk seide gouernaunce, thouz he be ful profitable in goostli maner in othere sides into good not being of comaundement, and so that bi the kuttyng away of thilk gouernaunce cometh not in the ij^e. maner more synne to the persoon than cometh in [the] ij^e. maner bi the holding of the same gouernaunce, and ellis not. Forwhi a litil synne is more to be eschewid¹ and to be fled, than is a ful greet goostli good, which is not of Goddis comaundement, to be pursewid and folewid that it be had; and the gretter synne is euer more² to be fled and eschewid than the lasse synne.

CHAP. VI.

And thus myche her of as now; for more of sclaudris is tauzt in *The book of Cristen religion* the
^a party the ^b treti the ^c chapiter.

More is written on scandals in Pecoock's *Christian religion*.

For to turne now azen into the mater of religiouns; thouz it be sufficientli now bfore answerid to the ij^e. semyng skile mad azens tho religiouns, zit into gretter⁴ strengthing and enforcing of the same mad answere and into the more clerling of this treuthe, that the seid religiouns ben not to be kutte away fro the chirche, y sette thus miche more here at this tyme: Thouz it were so, that no more excuse were to the seid religiouns forto defende hem fro kutting away than which is bfore seid; (that out, fro, and bi

Furthermore the institution of religious orders has hindered much more sin than it has occasioned, and so much more deserves to be retained than abolished. During thirty years and more multitudes of men have been monks and friars, who would otherwise have been engaged in bloody wars with

¹ *eschewewid*, MS.

² *euermore*, MS.

^a Spaces are left in the MS. for the references.

⁴ *the gretter*, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. VI. hem no synne cometh in the first seid maner, but in the ij^e. seid maner oonli; and therefore thei deseruen not to be kutt away, namelich sithen thei ben meenis into greet goostly goodis:—;it more therto forto excuse mai be sett thus: that gretter synne wolde come fro, bi, and out of the kuttingis away of tho religiouns than cometh now fro, bi, and out of the hauyngis and holdingis of the same religiouns, and gretter synne is lettid bi the being and holding of tho religiouns than is al the synne bi hem comyng; and therefore thei ouzten miche rather be menteyned than be leid asyde. That this is trewe, what is now seid, y proue thus:¹ Take me alle the² religiose men of Englund, whiche ben now and han ben in religioun in Englund this thritti 3eeris and mo now eendid, in whiche xxx⁴. 3eeris hath be contynuel greet werre bitwixe Englund and Fraunce; and lete se what schulde haue worthe of the men in these 3eeris, if thei hadden not be mad religiose. Lete se how thei schulden haue lyued, and what maner men thei schulden haue be. Whether not thei schulden haue be, as weelny; alle othere men ben and han be in this xxxiiij^e. wynter in Englund; and therefore thei schulden haue be or gileful artificers, or vnpiteful questmongers and forsworen iurers, or sowdiers wagid into Fraunce forto make miche morthur of blood, 3he, and of soulis, bothe in her owne side and in the Frensch side? Who can seie nay herto, but that ri3t likeli and as it were vnscapabili these yuelis and many mo schulden haue bifalle to tho persoones, if thei hadden not be religiose? And noman can fynde a3enward that tho persoones, whilis thei han lyued in religioun, han be gilty of so miche synne, how miche synne is now rehercid; and of which thei schulden haue be gilty, if

France or in sinful occupations at home, and so would have committed more sin than they now have committed.

¹ That is trewe what y proue thus.
MS. (first hand).

² alle religiose, MS. (first hand).

thei hadden not be religiose. Thanne folewith needis, that the religiouns in Englonde han be¹ ful noble and ful profitable heggis and wardis thoruz out these xxxiiij. 3eeris for to close and kepe and hegge yn and werne so manye persoones fro so miche gretter synnes into whiche ellis, if tho religiouns hadden not be, tho persoones schulden haue falle and haue be gilty. And sotheli this skile (as me semeth) ouzte move ech man ful miche forto holde with suche religiouns, if he be wijs for to considere how synful it is weelny3 alle persoons lyuyng out of religioun; and into how comberose a plijt the world is brouzt, that tho synnes (as it were) mowen not be lefte; and how that religiose persoones schulden be of lijk badde condicioun, if thei weren not in religioun, and that in religioun thei ben not of so badde condicion, thouz thei ben men and not aungels and kunnen not lyue without al synne; and that the synne comyng into hem, whilis thei ben in religioun, cometh not into hem bi the religioun as bi the firste maner of comyng bifore tauzt in the same chapiter, but bi the ij^e. maner of comyng oonli.. And no more as now and here² as for answer to the ij^e. semyng skile.

Here myzte be askid what ouzte be doon bi religiose prelatys and bi bischopys and the pope to and aboute religiose persoones, whiche in a symplenes camen into religioun and aftirward han growen into greet notabil abilnes forto stonde into miche gretter stide of al the chirche and of al the lawe of God than forto be tied to close and cloistrose obseruauncis of summe maners of religiouns, and what ouzte be desirid and askid bi tho same religiose persoones to be doon to and aboute hem silf? That is to seie, whether thei schulden stire and pursue forto be lousid of such en-

A question mooted. Ought those who have embraced a monastic life, but have afterwards shown singular powers for active service, to obtain dispensation from their vows, or hold to them for better or worse, as a man must do by his wife, however ill-suited to him she may be? This question shall be discussed in Peacock's *Book of Lessons*.

¹ *ben*, MS. (first hand).

² *now here*, MS. (first hand), perhaps rightly.

CHAP. VI.

closing and for to be take into the werkis of so greet excellence, (into which thei ben so miche abler than other, or into which ouer fewe or noon ben able;) or ellis, whether thei schulen desire and caste, 3he, and be constreyned to abide for better for wors perpetuali in the same bondage, in to which it happid hem in her 3ongthe or in her seid abilte not best knowun and of hem aspiet to entre; in lijk maner as it is with men, whiche bi 3ongthe or bi hastynes or bi vnsufficient knowing and assaiyng of certein wommenys maners han take hem into her wyues, muste holde hem to the same wyues for better for wors, how euer myche better lijf thei couthen lyue with othere wommen to be take of the newe into her wyues than with these now takun into her wyues? But al this is not myche perteynyng to this present book, and therfore no thing into assoiling of this dout schal be seid here. Sumwhat therof is seid in *The book of Cristen religioun*, the firste parti, the ¹ treti the ¹ chapter; but more and in better wise y hope schal be sett in *The book of lessouns* to be rad perauenture in the chaier of scolis.

vij. CHAPTER.

THE THIRD ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS ANSWERED. It would be just as reasonable to ask why Christ did not appoint a lord mayor of London, as why he did not appoint religious orders. God gives men sense to perceive their

ANSWERE to the iij^e. semyng skile schal be this: Whanne thou askist of me thus, "Why made not and ordeyned not Crist tho religions to be had and be vsid, sithen thei ben so profitable to us?" I aske of thee in lijk wise, "Whi ordeyned not and made not Crist to us who schal be meyr in London in the next 3eer, and who schal be bischop of London after the decesse of the bischop of Londoun now

¹ Spaces left in the MS. for the references.

" lyuying, sithen it is profitable to men of Londoun CHAP. VII.
 " and vnsporable that such a meyr and such a bischop
 " schulden be in tyme comyng? zhe, whi made not needs and power
to supply them in
both cases, and
in many other
like cases. Those
needs only which
men cannot sup-
ply God does
supply.
 " God gownes and cootis, hosun and schoon to men,
 " breed and potages and ale and beer and wijn, sithen
 " these thingis ben so necessarie to men that men
 " mowen not lake hem?" If thou answeere to my
 questioun thus: That God ordeyned, made, and zæue
 to men tho thingis (that is to seie, witt, wille, speche,
 and othere powers of the soule and of the bodi bi
 whiche and with which thei hem silf and bi hem silf
 mowen make, ordeyne, and do to hem silf alle tho
 thingis, wherof thi questiouns asken; and therfore God
 wolde not, for it was no nede that he him silf schulde
 ordeyne, make, do, and zæue tho thingis to the same
 men—certis, if thin answeere now mad to my questiouns
 is good, and such thanne a lijk answeere schal be
 good and sufficient to thi questioun askid in the iij^e.
 semyng skile: That therfore Crist not ordeined, made,
 dide, and zaf bi him silf thes seid religiouns, for he
 zæue to men inward sensityue wittis and outward
 sensityue wittis, resoun, and wil, and moving power to
 speke, and othere deedis do, by whiche men myzten
 knowe suche religiouns be worthi be had and vsid,
 and with whiche men myzten make and ordeyne and
 do bi hem silf suche religiouns to hem silf, as that it
 was not nede to Crist that he him silf schulde make,
 do, ordeyne, and zæue hem to men. So that it is the
 maner of Crist, that tho thingis and deedis, whiche
 men hem silf bi ziftis of God bfore zounn to hem
 mowen¹ kunne, make, and do hem silf, God wole loke
 that thei so do, ordeyne, and make, if thei tho thingis
 wolen haue; and ellis the powers whiche God hath
 zounn to men, bi whiche powers men mowen¹ make

¹ mowe, MS. (first hand) apparently, twice.

CHAP. VII.

tho thingis and do and ordeyne tho deedis, schulden be as in parti idil, vnoccupied, and vein. And azenward tho thingis and deedis, whiche men hem silf bi ziftis of God bfore zouun to hem mowen¹ not kunne, make, do, and ordeyne hem silf, God wole do, make, and ordeyne bi him silf to hem, if thei be necessarie and vnlackeable to hem, as ben the soulis of oure children to vs and othere suche thingis. And thus miche is ynouȝ for answeere to the questioun askid in thi iij^e. semyng skile and to the argument there maad in forme; forwhi the firste premysse of the argument is to be denyed; and whi he is to be denyed, it is open bi this processe in this answeere now maad.

And evn as it might be said that one, who equipped another with arms and inspired him with strength, gave him any prisoner he might take in war; so God, having given to men sense to see the use of religious orders and power to ordain them, may be called the *giver* of these orders to mankind.

And ȝit, (if y schulde ferther seie,) y woot riȝt weel, that if thou ȝauest to thi man hors and sadil, armour and spere, and schuldist bidde him ride into a certeyn feelde, and take to him a prisoner worthi in raunsum of an hundrid pound; and if her with thou myȝtist and schuldist like verili ȝeue to him his boldenes, his strengthe, his inward and outward wittis, and his resoun and wil forto reule him in the taking of this prisoner, thou woldist seie that thou ȝauest to him this prisoner; for this that thou ȝauest to him alle the meenys bi which and with whiche he schulde take this prisoner, not withstanding that he him silf withoute thee takith this prisoner bi and with the meenys and helpis whiche bi caas thou hast zouun to him:—wherfore, sithen God ȝeueth to men inward and outward sensytyue wittis and resoun and wil and moving power to make speking and othere bodili movingis and alle othere meenys, wherbi and wherwith men mowen bi hem silf sufficientli knowe that suche religiouns ben profitable to hem, and make and ordeyne religiouns now had

¹ *mowe*, MS. (first hand) apparently.

and vsid in the chirche, thou ouztist graunte for lijk skile that God ȝeueth to men tho religiouns. And so it is, thouȝ his ȝifte theryn be doon mediatli, that is to seie, bi meenes therto bfore ȝouun.

CHAP. VII.

In ij. therefore maners God dooth dedis¹ in erthe. Oon is of immediat doing, and that is whanne he bi him silf at next withoute meene or his assignee dooth the deede, and thus it is doon whanne he dooth eny myracle aboue the power of creature. An other maner is of mediat doing, and that is whanne he not bi him silf oonli, but bi his assignees dooth it, as bi an aungel or bi the sunne or the moone or sum othir creature; and this dede is doon of God mediatli or with meene; and in this maner he ȝeueth to man the ricches which he wynneth bi bisynes of his witt and bi labour of his bodi; and in this maner it is trewe that God made, ordeyned, and ȝaue the religiouns whiche now ben had and vsid in the chirche.

God does deeds partly mediatly partly immediatly.

Answered to the iiij^e. semyng skile schal be this: Whanne thou askist of me, "Whi ben ther so manye dyuerse religiouns in the chirche, and whi not bi fewer religiouns mai be performed al the good which cometh forth bi so manye religiouns had and vsid in the chirche?" I aske of thee, "Whi in a town which is a thorouȝ faar toward Londoun ben so manye otries clepid innes forto logge gistis, thouȝ in fewer of hem alle gestis myȝten be loggid? Is not this the cause, for that bi the mo dyuersitees whiche schulen be had in the more multitude of ynnes the peple schal be the more prouokid and stirid for to logge hem in tho ynnes, than if ther were fewer ynnes?" Thou muste nedis seie, ȝhis. Forwhi what point in chaumbring, stabiling, gardeins, beddis, seruicis of the ostiler, (and so in othere thingis)

THE FOURTH ARGUMENT OF THE LOLLARDS ANSWERED. The diversities of the religious orders attract more to join religious orders than would otherwise embrace them. Different rules please different persons; just as one inn suits some persons better than another. And since religious orders have been proved to be beneficial, these diversities are also beneficial.

¹ dedis is added by a later hand.

CHAP. VII.

pleasith oon gist, plesith not an other; and what point in these thingis offendith oon, plesith weel an other; and therfore where that the more such dyuersyte is had and founde, the more stiring therbi is had to plesse manye gistis; and therbi folewingli the mo gistis wolen haue wil forto logge hem in thilk town, more than if ther were fewer dyuersytees, whiche schulde needis be in fewer ynnes. Thanne if this be trewe, and if thou answeere to me thus; y answer to thee bi lijk skile, that therfore God purueied manye dyuerse religiouns to be in the chirche, for that bi so greet a dyuersite had in so manye religiouns (what for dyuersite of outward habit and of inward wering, and of diet, and of waking, and of officiying, and of sitis, or of placing, and of bilding, and of othere suche manie,) the mo of the peple schulde be prouokid and stirid therbi into religioun, than if ther were fewer religiouns. Forwhi ij. gouernauncis ben comounli kept in hem whiche ben moved toward religioun: Oon is, that thei encerchen diligentli what pointis and thingis schulden greene hem, and what pointis schulden plesse hem in the place and in the ordre into which thei ben stirid, and what euere pointis thei fynden forto be to hem greuouse thei dreden, and what pointis or thingis thei fynden forto be to hem plesaunt thei louen. An other is, that in multitude of men is so greet a dyuersite in affectis and passiouns, that thilk same point or thing which is plesaunt to oon man is displesaunt to an other man, and what is displesaunt to oon is pleasunt to the¹ other. Wherefore ther mai not so greet a multitude be weel willi to religioun, if in religioun be litil dyuersite of pointis, as if in religioun be gretter dyuersite of pointis. And gretter dyuersite of suche pointis ben in

¹ she is added by a later hand.

multitude of religiouns, rather than in fewer religiouns. Wherefore needis folewith that by multitude of religiouns men schulen be more stirid forto chese and take religioun, than bi fewer. And sithen religiouns ben profitable to Cristen peple, as it is bifore schewid in the [vj.]¹ chapter of this present v^c. parti, it folewith that it is profitable such multitude and diversite of religiouns to be, and so that God wolde haue men in the more noumbre and in the more affect be stirid toward religioun forto logge hem ther ynne, sithen it is bifore proued religiouns to be good. Therefore he ordeyned and purueied into thilk entent so manye dyuerse religiouns in the chirche. And 3it herwith weelny; of ech religioun he ordeyned or purueied to be manye dyuerse housis and placis, as thouz thei weren dyuerse otries or herbouris forto logge the more multitude at her liking and plesaunt choise ther yn; and so, thouz the good of iij. principal vowis be lijke and oon in ech and alle religiouns, 3it the othere plesauntis² and eesis of the religiosis persooones, whiche schulde tolle hem into religioun and whiche also schulde make hem the perfitlier and the stablier perfoorme her othere substancial vowis, ben not like and the same in alle religiouns and neither in alle housis of oon religioun.

And thouz summe harme and yuel cometh thoruz the hauyng of such now seid multitude, 3it not so greet harme and yuel as is excludid bi the hauyng of so greet multitude; for not so greet harme and yuel as schulde come of this, that so greet multitude of persooones schulde not entre into tho religiouns, neither so myche harme as is the myche good which³

The evil caused by the diversity of monastic rules is more than counterbalanced by the corresponding good.

¹ A space left in the MS. for the number.

² Perhaps we should read *pleasancis*.

³ good myche cometh, MS. (first

hand); which being added in the margin and the marks of transposition inserted by a later hand. Perhaps we should read *the good whiche*.

CHAP. VII.

cometh bi the seid multitude and dyuersitie of religiouna. And thus y eende myn answeere to the iiij^e. semyng skile bifore mad in the [iv^e.]¹ chapiter of this present v^e. parti.

THE THIRD CON-
CLUSION IN FA-
VOUR OF RELI-
GIOUS ORDERS.
They are lawful.
Proof of the con-
clusion. They
are neither for-
bidden by Scrip-
ture, reason, nor
man's law.

The iiij^e. principal conclusioun of this present v^e. partie is this: The vj^e. seid principal gouernaunce sett in the bigynnyng of this present v^e. partie is leeful. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: Ech gouernaunce or maner of conuersacioun which Holi Scripture weerneth not and forbedith not, doom of cleer and weel disposid natural resoun weerneth not and forbedith not, mannes lawe weerneth not and forbedith not, is leeful and not worthi be vndirnome and blamed. But so it is, that sectis and religiouns to be mad with inne the comoun Cristen religioun to men and to wommen forto be streitir to hem in moral conuersacioun, than is the fredom of the comoun Cristen religioun maad of preceptis of lawe of kinde and of feith reuelid bi holi autentik Scripture, is not wearned and forboden bi Holi Scripture, neither bi doom of weel disposid cleer natural resoun, neither bi mannys lawe. Wherefore needis folewith that forto haue summe suche religiose² gouernaunces is leeful, and not worthi to be vndirnome and blamed. The firste premyss of this argument is sufficiently proued bifore in the [v^e.]¹ chapiter of the [ij^e.]¹ parti of this book in the principal argument mad azens the vniust blamyng of the ij^e. gouernaunce: and the ij^e. premyss of this same argument is proued bi the firste and ij^e. principal conclusiouns of this fifthe parti fro the bigynnyng of the firste chapiter hidir to. Wherefore this present iiij^e. principal conclusioun thus concludid and proued bi these ij. premyssis is needis trewe.

¹ Spaces are left for the references. See p. 166. This seems to be the place intended.

² *religioses*, MS. (first hand), which deserves attention: *religiosis personae* occurs a little above.

viiij. CHAPTER.

THE iiij^e. principal conclusioun of this present v^e. partie is this: Holi Scripture allowith¹ the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce sett in the bigynnyng of this present v^e. parti. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue this: Religioun (as the name in Latyn therof schewith) is not ellis than an holding azen or a bynding azen or a tyng up of a mannys wil bi ordinauncis therto chosun and takun, that he vse not his fredom in moral conuersacioun so largeli as he myzte withoute forbode of resoun and of God. Certis other thing than such now seid is not religioun, and ful weel religioun mai be likened to the binding azen or the holding up bi which a man holdith vp with the bridil the heed of his ambuler, lest if² perauenture the hors were left to his fredom of the bridil he schulde be in perel forto the oftir spurne, and the wors to throwe him silf and the sitter on him; namely whanne the sitter knowith weel the same ambuler be freel and prone and redi into stumbling, thouȝ the wey be smothe and euen. Now that such religiose gouernaunce fyndable bi mannys avise is allowid³ bi Holi Scripture forto be take withinne the bondis of the comoun lawe of kinde and of comoun feith to gidere, y proue thus. And first that Holi Writt of the Oold Testament allowith¹ it, y argue thus: What euer deede or thing Holi Scripture of the Oold Testament tellith or affermeth God haue do, Holi Writ allowith and confermeth, or ellis at the leest it allowith.¹

THE FOURTH
CONCLUSION.
Scripture allows
religious orders.
Religion is a
binding up of
man's will by or-
dinances to what
he would not be
bound otherwise
by the law of
God or of reason.
Such religions
devised by man
are allowed by
Scripture, be-
cause God him-
self sometimes
appointed such
religions to men.
Proof of this
shall be made
first from the
Old Testament

¹ *allowith and approueth*, MS. | naturally be placed after *perauenture*.
(first hand), thrice.

² *if* is added in the margin by a | ³ *allowid and approued*, MS.
much (?) later hand: it would most | (first hand).

CHAP. VIII.

But so it is, that Holi Writt of the Oold Testament affermeth and witnessith God haue do, mad, and ordeyned, and sett such now seid religiosite to the lawe of kinde and of feith. Wherefore such religiosite so sett to lawe of kinde and of feith is witnessid and confermed, or at the leest allowid,¹ of Holi Writt in the Oold Testament.

Such religious restrictions imposed on Adam, Noah, and Abraham by God's covenants with them.

That Holi Writt affermeth and witnessith God haue do and maad such now seid religiosite, y proue thus: Holi Writt of the Oold Testament witnessith God to haue putt and sett Adam and Eue to such religiosite, Genes. ij.² ē., whanne he forbade hem forto ete of a certeyn tree, of which ellis as bi the fredom of lawe of kinde thei myzten haue ete. And also whanne God forbade to Noe and hise children forto ete fleisch to gidere with blood, Gen. [ix.³]³ ē. And whanne God bade Abraham and alle his children for euere to be circumcidid, Gen. [xvij.⁴]³ ē.

And on the Israelites by the Mosaic law.

And also whanne God ordeyned the cerymonyalis and the iudicialis so manye to the Iewis as the bookis of Exodi and of Numeri⁴ maken ther of men-sioun; what ellis dide he theryn, than that he made such now seid religiosite to be sett to lawe of kinde and of feith had bifore and puttid and assigned the Iewis therto for to be religiose persoones theryn and therbi? Certis resoun ful openli it schewith, so that it be bifore knowun what religioun is bi the dis-cruyng ther of now a litil bifore sett and tauzt. Wherefore folewith needis, that Holi Writt of the Oold Testament allowith weel, 3he, and witnessith and confermeth such seid religiosite to be mowe leeffulli sett to the bifore had comoun lawe of kinde and of feith to gidere.

¹ allowid and approued, MS. (first hand).

² ē., MS.

³ Spaces are left for the numbers.

⁴ Perhaps we should read *Numerorum*; or else *Exodus* above.

Confirmacioun in strengist maner to this argument CHAP. VIII.
 may be this: That Holi Writt of the Oold Testament clepith expressly the oold lawe, (which was mad bi God of cerymonyes, and was sette to the lawe of kinde and of feith thanne rennyng,) a religioun, may be proued. Forwhi God, speking of the Pascall lamb and of the obseruance in eting him, seide to the Iewis, Exod. xij°. 5. thus: *Whanne 3oure sones schulen seie to 3ou, 'What is this religioun?' 3e schulen seie to hem, 'It is the sacrifice of the passyng of the Lord, whanne he passid ouer the housis of the sones of Israel in Egypt, and smote Egipcioanes, and delyuerede oure housis.'* And also sumwhat aftir in the same chapiter it is seid of the same obseruance thus; *This is the religioun of Phase; ech alien schal not ate therof, et cetera.* Also Exodi xxix°. 5. God seide to Moyses thus, *Thou schalt presente hise sones, (that is to seie, the sones of Aaron,) and thou schalt clothe with lynnun cootis, and thou schalt gird Aaron and hise sones with a girdil, and thou schalt sette mytris on hem, and thei schulen be my preestis bi euerlasting religioun.* Also, Leuytici vij°. 5. toward the eende, the maner of sacrificing vsid among Iewis in tho daies (in sleyng beestis and in offring up the fleisch of the beestis) God clepith "an euerlasting religioun in her generaciouns." Also Leuit. xvj°. 5. almoost at the eende, the obseruance of expiacioun or of elensyng doon 3eerli of the Iewis in the x°. dai of the vij°. monthe with the fasting and penance long-ing therto God clepid "an euerlasting religioun." Also Numeri xix°. 5. the sacrifice there tauzt in sleing a cow in a certain maner God clepith "a religioun."

The obseruances of this law expressly called by the name of religion in the Old Testament.

Also in the tyme of Iewis Ionadab a Iew, the sone of Recab, bade that the sones comyng from him for euermore schulden not drinke wijn, neither bilde housis, neither tile lond neither vynezardis, but that

The restrictions imposed by Ionadab on his posterity were a religion, and were well approved by God, though of

CHAP. VIII.
human invention.

thei schulden dwelle and holde hem paied forto dwelle in tabernaclis or tentis or loggis: and thei so diden, as it is open, Ierem. xxxv^c. ẽ. What ellis was this than a religioun cast to the lawe of kinde and Goddis lawe ȝouun to Iewis mad of the cerymonies and iudicialis, as it is open bi the discruiyng of religioun bifore sett in this present chapter; and bi this that it is now proued bifore, that the lawe of Iewis sett to the comoun lawe of kinde and of othere feith thanne bifore had was a religioun; and bi this that God preisid the sones of Ionadab for the perfit keping of this now seid religioun, as it is open Ieremye xxxv^c. ẽ. ? Wherefore folewith needis, that Holi Writt of the Oold Testament allowith, witnessith, and confermeth religioun to be sett of the newe to the comoun lawe of God bifore had and vsid, and that whether thilk comoun lawe bifore had and bifore vsid was lawe of kinde oonli, or ellis mad of lawe of kinde and of sum other feith bifore had, or ellis mad of lawe of kinde and of such now seid feith and of sum religioun bifore had and vsid.

Proof that the New Testament allows humanly devised religions. Christ never reproved the Pharisees as a sect or religion, but only as vicious men: and St. Paul would not have commended himself as being a Pharisee, if Pharisaism were abstractedly bad. Hence Christ and the Apostles appear to have allowed the institution of that religious order.

That Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament groundith and confermeth (or at the leest allowith¹) such religioun to be sett to an hool sufficient lawe of God bifore had and vsid, y proue thus: The sect of Pharisees, which durid into the tyme of Cristis comyng and preching, was a religioun, as Poul witnessith, Acts xxvj^c. ẽ. where he clepith it a religioun, seiying thus: *Bi the moost certein sect y lyued a Pharisee.* And this religioun was not reproved of Crist in eny place of the Gospels² writing; thouȝ the persoones of thilk religioun weren reproved for synnes whiche thei diden, not as deedis of her religioun, but rather as

¹ allowith and approueth, MS. (first hand).

² Gospels, MS.

deedis bisidis her religioun, as for ambicioun, coueitise, ypocrisie, and suche othere. And in other wise weren not the Pharisees reproued of Crist, than the bischopis and the preestis weren reproued of Crist; notwithstanding that Crist reproued not the ordris of preesthode and of bischophode. For whi tho ordris weren foundid bi God him silf, and likeli it is, that if the religioun of the Pharisees hadde be reprouable, as the persoones weren, Crist wolde not haue sparid forto haue blamed boldeli the religioun, as he blamed the persoones of the religioun; and also Poul wolde not haue comendid him silf in that, that he was a Pharisee, Acts xxvj. ̄. and Galat. i^e. ̄.; but he wolde haue blamed thilk sect, and zit he not so doith. Wherefore it folewith as likeli, that Crist allowid weel the religioun of the Pharisees sett to the comoun lawe of Iewis thanne rennyng, thouz Crist blamed the persoones of the same religioun. And thanne the wordis seid of Crist, Math. xv^e. ̄.: *Al plaunting, which my heuenli Fader hath not plauntid, schal be drawe up bi the roote*: (whiche wordis many men vndirstonden Crist to haue seid and meened of the sect of Pharisees,) mowen and schulen conuenientli ynouz be vnderstonde of the yuel doctrine of thilk yuel tradiciouns and othere tradiciouns to hem lijk, which Crist blameth there in the same chapter, Math. xv^e. ̄., and not of the sect of Pharisees. And if al this be trewe, thanne Holi Writt of the Newe Testament groundith and confermeth¹ weel suche seid religiouns forto be sett to a comoun lawe of God sufficient bfore had and vsid.

What was the sect or the religioun of the Pharisees in her religiouse werkis and dedis and vsis, it is seid by the Maister of the Stories in *The storie of the*

Petrus Comestor shows wherein the rules of their order consisted.

¹ confermeth and approveth, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. VIII.

Gospels, the [xxxj^e.]¹ chapter of the same storijng, that thei lyueden streitli and in scant mete and drinke, and thei baren scrowis in her forehedis and in her lift arme; where yn the ten comaundementis of Moyses tablis weren writun, that thei myȝten therbi be remembrid the better forto kepe hem and not² offende aȝens hem.³

ix. CHAPTER.

Further, Christ appointed the law of sacraments to be observed by his followers concurrently with the law of nature, *i.e.*, instituted a religion in the sense above named. Now as it was lawful under the old law to add human religions to those ordained by God, so also it may be lawful now, more especially as Dionysius the Areopagite, converted by St. Paul, testifies that in his days monastic rules existed, which must needs have been framed by the

Also thus: Whanne Crist bifore his passioun, whilis he prechid, hadde renokid the religioun of the ceremonies and iudicialis sett to the lawe of kinde, and vsid of the Iewis, (and it was leeful and sufficient ynouȝ to ech Iew and to ech other man being bifore hethen forto thanne lyue after the lawe of kinde oonli withoute the seid religiosite bifore vsid of the Iewis;) ȝit Crist afterward in tyme, that is to seie, after his resurreccioun, settid the lawe of hise sacramentis to the seid lawe of kinde; for whi thanne he ordeyned and bade in comaundement baptysm to be receyued, as it is open, Matheu the laste chapter, and Mark the laste chapter. And sithen these sacramentis, whiche Crist settid so to the lawe of kinde and ordeynede hem to be vsid of Cristen men, is a religioun, as mai

¹ A space is left in the MS. for the number.

² *not* is interlineated in a later hand.

³ "Pharissæi cultu austero et victu perparco utebantur, traditiones suas statuantes, quibus traditiones Moysi determinabant, pictacia chartarum in fronte gerebant et in sinistro brachio circumligata, quibus

decalogus inscriptus erat." Petr. Comest. *Hist. Evang.* c. 31. fol. 191. Ed. Ladg. 1543. The *Historia Evangelica* is a section of the *Historia Scholastica*. See Fabric. *Bibl. Lat. Med. et Inf. Æt.* vol. i. p. 1185. It appears that Comestor was sometimes called *Master of the Histories*. See *Novv. Biogr. Génér.* tom. xi. p. 332. Paris, 1855.

be proued bi the descripcioun of religioun 3ounn and putt bfore in the [viij^e.]¹ chapter of this present v^e. partie, and also mai be proued bi this that the sacramentis, which God made and 3aue ouer the lawe of kinde to the Iewis, was a² religioun, as is now bfore proued in this present chapter; and therefore bi lijk skile thes sacramentis, whiche God 3eueth now ouer the lawe of kinde to Cristen men, ben a religioun;—it folewith³ that the hool lawe now assigned to Cristen men, mad of the lawe of kinde and of Cristis sacramentis, is a religiose lijf to hem: 3he, and folewith ferther that euen as it was sufferable and alloweable of God, that men lyuyng in the oold time vnder the hool lawe of Iewis founden other religiosite than the religiosite which God assigned immediatli to hem, and settiden thilk religiosite so bi hem founde to the al hool lawe of kinde and of religioun, which God to hem assigned, as is bfore schewid in the next chapter of the sones of Ionadab the sone of Recab; so for lijk skile of resoun no man mai weerne, denye, or seie nay, but that men now lyuyng vndir the lawe of Cristen men mowen fynde other religioun or othere religiositees than the religioun or religiosite⁴ of the sacramentis, which Crist hath assigned immediatli to hem, and mowen sette thilk religiosite so bi hem founde to al the hool lawe of kinde and of religioun, that is to seie, of Cristis sacramentis; (which hool lawe of kinde and of hise sacramentis Crist hath to hem immediatli assigned;) namelich sithen the Apostlis and the disciplis of the Apostlis (whiche disciplis weren hize in wisdom and in auctorite and in fame in the daies of the Apostlis for to reule and gouerne

CHAP. IX.
consent of the
Apostles them-
selves.

¹ A space is left in the MS. for the number.

² a is interlineated in a later hand.

³ *folewe*, MS. (first hand), the correction being incomplete.

⁴ *the religiosite*, MS. (first hand).

CHAP. IX.

and teche) suffriden and allowiden weel and receyueden such now seid religiosite foundun of newe bi men forto entre and to be sett and ioyned with the al¹ hool lawe of Crist thanne rennyng and mad of lawe of kinde and of Cristis sacramentis. Forwhi Dynys, which was turned into Cristen feith bi Poul the Apostle, (as Dynys seith him silf in his . . .)² and was homeli conuersant with Peter and Iames and alle the othere Apostlis, as he seith in his book *Of Goddis names*, the iij^e. chapitre,³ declarith that in hise daies and bi the avise of hiȝe statis in the chirche in tho daies was vайд a certein fourme bi him silf⁴ forto ordeyne hem whiche wolden be monkis, and an other fourme bi him silf forto ordeyne hem which wolden be preestis, and another fourme bi him silf for to ordeyne hem whiche schulden be bishopis, and this couthe not so soone haue be doon withoute the avise and the consent therto ȝouun of the Apostlis.⁵ Wherefore folewith that bothe bi the Apostlis and bi the worthi wise men conuertid into the feith of the Apostlis the religioun of a certein monkhode founde bi mennys witt and deuocioun entrid thanne, and was sett to the al hool lawe of Cristen men maad of the lawe of kinde and of Cristis sacramentis; to which man sett into monkhode, as Dynys there declarith, longith forto leue such seculer habit as he bifore werid, and forto be schorne other wise in his heed, and forto haue hiȝer consideratijf and contemplatijf

¹ with *al*, MS. (first hand).

² A space left for the reference. St. Luke states the fact here alluded to (Acts xvii. 34), and more than one martyrology affirms that St. Paul baptized him (see Pseudo-Dionys. Areop. Op. tom. ii. p. 268); but there seems to be no allusion to this in the works of the pseudo-

Areopagite, unless it be a vague one in *De Div. nom.* c. 3. Op. tom. i. p. 537.

³ Op. tom. i. p. 539.

⁴ *silf* is added in the margin by a late hand.

⁵ See his book *De Eccl. Hier.* passim. Op. tom. i. pp. 387, 363, &c.

occupaciouns than the othere comoun peple of the layfe han. CHAP. IX.

Ferthermore that Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament witnessith and allowith¹ religioun of mannys deuising forto mowe be sett to the lawe foundid bi Crist to Cristen men, y may also proue thus: Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament witnessith and allowith¹ this: If a mannys riȝt iȝe sclandre him (that is to seie, violentli and ferseli and as it were vnaȝenstondeabli bringith him into synne and lettith fro the more good to be doon,) that he "pulle him out and "caste him away;" and if his riȝt hond or his riȝt foot sclandre him, (that is to seie, so as is seid violentli and feersli bringe him to synne and lett fro the more good to be doon,) that he "kutte of thilk "hond and foot," as it is writun [Math. v. ȳ].² And sithen this Scripture now alleggid meeneth not of a mannys bodili membris, but of a mannys kunnyngis, purposis, and deedis, signified bi likenes in parabolik speche to the iȝe, the hond, and the foot, that thouȝ thei be riȝt, (that is to seie, alloweable as bi the comoun lawe of God,) ȝit if thei in the maner now seid sclandre the hauer and the doer of hem, he mai iustli and vertuoseli leue hem, so that thei be not bede vndir comaundement of Goddis lawe. And the skile of this gouernaunce is sett forth in the same place of Scripture there thus, "It is better to "thee forto entre sureli into lijf with oon iȝe, oon "foot, and oon hond," (that is to seie, with the lasse good kunnyng, the lasse gode wilnyngis, and purposis, and with the fewer gode dedis,) "than forto be aboute "to haue mo" good kunnyngis, mo gode purposis, and mo gode deedis, "and" (therbi and bi occasioun of hem) "falle down into helle." And thus doon reli-

Also Christ allowed of religions (as above defined) when he said that we should cut off our right hand or right foot, if they scandalize us. Religious orders were specially instituted for the removal of scandals such as these, though the things forbidden by them be not abstractedly unlawful.

¹ *allowith and approueth*, MS. (first hand) twice.

² A space left in the MS. for the reference.

CHAP. IX.

giouse persoones, and for this eende religiouns weren founde and foundid. For whi, bi cause that to manye persoones for her freelnes the homeli and free cum-penying with the world and with the fleisch grantid bi Goddis comoun lawe was to hem ouer contagiose and in the now seid maner sclaudring; therfore thei kuttiden hem away with reulis and statutis and obser-uauuncis of religions now had and vsid in the chirche. Wherefore the now alleggid Holi Scripture of the Newe Testament sufficientli allowith¹ religions fyndable bi men to be mowe leeffulli had and sett to the lawe zouun bi Crist, zhe, and also the seid now alleggid Holi Scripture sufficientli allowith and confermeth alle thilk same religiouns, whiche now ben in the chirche; namelich with this that it is bifore proued noon of hem herwith to haue eny obseruauunce, rite, or statute, or vow, but vndir such vndirstonding that it schal obeie to ech comaundement of Goddis lawe thanne being and not² stonde azens eny such comaundement of Goddis lawe.

It is idle to say that the deedis of religious orders are lawful, but that religious vows are not so. The lawfulness of vows proved.

If eny man wolde be so nyce forto seie and holde, that it is leeful to haue and vse in the clergie and laife the deedis and gouernaunce of religioun with oute bond, (vndir fredom to leue hem whanne euere a man wole,) and it is not leeful forto haue hem and vse hem in boond; certis thanne muste ech such man seie and holde, that it is not leeful eny man or womman forto vowe eny deede to which he is not bifore bound; for if it be leeful forto so vowe oon such deede, bi lijk skile it is leeful for to vowe ij. or iij. iiij. or v., and so forth; and zit that it is leeful a widowe for to³ vowe chastite, it is open bi Poul, i^c. Thim. v^c. ̃. And therfore this cavillacioun now rehercid is not worth.

¹ allowith and approueth, MS. (first hand).

² to not, MS.

³ to is interlineated in a later hand.

X. CHAPTER.

AND thus herbi it is open, that noon of the religious now vsid among Cristen men with the comoun hool lawe of Cristente eny man mai reprove or blame to be as for this, that thei ben religious founde bi men and sett to the hool religiose lawe which Crist assigned to Cristen men. Wherefore if eny men wolen be aboute forto reprove and blame eny of these now seid and vsid religions to be, certis he muste take to him other cause and ground than this, that thei ben religious founden bi men and sett bi men to the seid hool lawe of Crist. And therefore he muste take to him this cause and ground, that summe statutis and ordinauncis of these religious ben azens the seid hool lawe of Crist; and sithen thilk lawe of Crist is not maad but of lawe of kinde and of Cristis sacramentis, he muste pretende and take for cause of his reprovyng and blaming that summe of these seid statutis and ordinauncis ben azens lawe of kinde or azens the lawe of Cristis sacramentis; and ellis he maie neuere in eny thing worth be aboute to reprove and blame eny of these seid religions to be. And certis forto proue and menteyne this pretencioun is ouer hard to eny man on lyue. Forwhi the iij. principal vowis, whiche ben oon and the same in ech religioun now vsid in the chirche, ben not azens the comaundementis of lawe of kinde neither azens the ordinaunce of Cristis sacramentis. And of ech other statute or obseruaunce kept and vsid in eny of the seid religions it is so, that noon of hem is mad to be takun into vse saue with this vnderstonding and condicioun, if and as he accordith with the comaundementis of lawe of kinde and of Cristis sacramentis. And therefore if it can be schewid and proued sureli

The only fair ground of objection against the religious orders would be this, that their statutes contain some things contrary to the law of nature or of Christ's sacraments. But this cannot be shown; for the principal vows, common to all the religious orders, are not contrary to either of these, and all other observances are obeyed only under the condition that they do not contradict these. Accordingly, when necessity so requires, a man has a dispensation to be released from them.

CHAP. X.

and openli, that eny of her obseruauncis and ritis in eny point sowne or seme aȝens eny such comaundement, thei schulen as in that not binde neither holde; but thei schulen be vnderstonde and be take, as thei accorden with the seid comaundementis. And ferthermore, aftir that eny man hath professid eny of tho religiouns and is receyued into it, if it can be openli proued and schewid that he is bounden bi comaundement of Goddis lawe for to do eny certein deede out of thilk religioun for eny certein while or for al his lyuys tyme, sotheli thilk religioun is noon harder neither streiter holding, but that thilk man schal haue good leue and licence forto wirche and do the so proued deede out of the religioun for the same while. And therefore, sithen this is the¹ very and dew vnderstanding and entent of ech such religioun, noon of such religioun can as in that be reproved and be blamed to be.

Yet a man must not be suffered to leave his cloister on every slight pretence, that duty requires his services elsewhere.

Neuertheles al wisdom, al discrecioun wole, and therfore the ful hool wil of God wole, that not for ech pretensioun liztli maad neither for eny pretensioun maad, that the religiose man ouȝte bi strengthe and comaundement of Goddis lawe lyue out of his cloister forto do this deede or that deede, [he schulde] be licencid for to so and therto go out of his couent and cloistre, into tyme it be proued sureli and openli that forto so go out and forto do thilk deede bi his owne person he is bounde bi comaundement of Cristis lawe. For certis, if at ech colorable argument which myȝte be maad into such purpos for to iustifie religiose mennys out going for a long while or for alwey, religiose persoones schulden be licencid forto so go out or schulde be putt and sett in hope that bi strong sewte thei myȝten so go out, there schulden be maad so

¹ the is added by a later hand.

stronge and longe and wordful disputing and pleding and so biȝy sewt (what bi preiyng, and what bi thretenyng, and meedis ȝeuyng, and biheting) that ful manye vniust goingis out schulden be maad and doon, and so manye grete synnes of iust vowis breking schulden be doon, and miche troubelose worldli vnrestfulnes schulde be brouȝte ynto the hertis of tho religiose persoones ful vnaccording and contrariouse to her religiose vertuose lyuyng, as to ech mannys resoun which hath experience of this worldis cumberaunce this is ful sureli knowun. And therfore Godis forbode that in mater of so greet and so holi a purpos, as suche religiouns now bifore ben proued to be, eny persoon schulde be licencid fro his cloister, or fro his habit vndir such as now is pretendid colour without sufficient proof of the same colour had at the vttrist, as ful seeld it is suche caasis to falle.

And aȝenward, if such proof be had, Goddis forbode be it, but that such a persoon be licencid to go; for the entent of the fundacioun of thilk religioun is not therazens but therwith, as is now bifore seid; for as miche as al what euer is founde and foundid and maad bi man ouȝte obeie to it what is founde and foundid bi God him silf, and that is doom of riȝt resoun and vce of hise sacramentis. And in this maner and for such pretendid and weel proued causis religiose persoones ben licencid forto leue perpetuali her professid religiouns; as that nunnys han be takun out of her cloistris, and han be weddid to princis; and monkis han be take out of her cloistris, and han be weddid and mad kingis;¹ namelich whanne therupon hangith ceasing of greet werre and making of greet pees or othere causis like grete weel and surely proued to be trewe; and claustral monkis han be

At the same time, when it is surely proved that monks or nuns are called to the duties of active life, their vows may be, and have been, set aside. Such persons have left their cloisters to be made kings, queens, and bishops.

¹ and mad kingis is interlined in a later hand.

CHAP. X.

licencid forto be summe heremytis and summe reclusis; and manye monkis han be take out of cloistir lijf to be bischopis.

It has now been shown that no objection can be justly made against the religious orders on the score of their being human inventions, or on the ground that any of their statutes are contrary to the law of Christ; and it thus follows that they cannot be blamed as unlawful.

And so, if alle thingis ben aboute wel considerid longing to the religiouns now vsid in the chirche, noon of hem alle is chalengeable and blameable to be, for that eny point of his fundacioun is meened to be azens the comaundement of lawe of kinde or of Cristis sacramentis, how euer it be with the badde disposiciouns and the badde lyuyng of summe persooones in the religiouns; whos badde lyuyngis is no cause forto therbi proue the religiouns to be badde. For no wey is forto proue that eny of the religiouns is badde, saue these ij. now bifore tretid; that is to seie, oon, that noon religioun ouzte be founde bi man forto be sett to the lawe divisid and ordeyned and assigned bi Crist; and the other is, that thouz it be leeful religioun to be founde and sett to the lawe of Crist, zit sum statute, rite, or obseruance of these religiouns ben azens the comaundement of Cristis lawe maad of lawe of kinde and of sacramentis. And sithen noon of these ij. weies mowe sufficientli be founde in eny of the religiouns now had and vsid, as is now openli and sureli proued, it folewith needis that noon of these religiouns mowe worthili be reprovud and blamed to be, that is to seie, as an vnleeful thing.

Nevertheless, the employments of all the different religious orders are not equally useful; and in the case of each of them, changes might be made in their occupations with great advantage.

Neuertheles this is open ynow, that not in alle religiouns the occupaciouns assigned and foundid bi the religioun ben like fruyteful with the occupaciouns of sum other religioun; and also in ech religioun now vsid the occupaciouns foundid and devisid bi the religioun bisidis the thre principal vowis, (that is to seie, of chastite, of wilful and expropriat pouerte, and of obedience to the prelat, whanne he comaundith comaundementis of the religioun,) myzte be myche amendid, bothe the occupaciouns of her preiyng and officiying and of her contemplacioun, and also the occu-

pacious of her studyng and leernyng, as her of declaracioun open is mad in othere placis of my writing. But 3it this argueth not and proueth not tho occupacions to be nauzt, neither to be vnfruytful, or not gode and not fruyteful. Forwhi a greet maistrie it had be to the wijsist carpenter that euer was forto haue mad an hous so fair, so weel, and so esy, which couthe not bi eny of hise aftir comers be in summe pointis amendid.

Also this present iiij^e. conclusioun may be proued vnsoilabili bi a processe of thre supposiciouns [and] of an argument formed upon hem toward the eende of the firste partie in this present book; which argument there maad is vnsoileable, if therto be sett the argument of experience which is sett aftir in this present v^e. partie for proof of the v^e. principal conclusioun.¹ And thus y eende the proof of the iiij^e. principal conclusioun.

The present conclusion may also be proved in the same manner that another conclusion has been already proved.

xj. CHAPTER.

THE v^e. principal conclusioun of this present v^e. partie is this: Doom of clenli and cleerli disposid resoun in kinde allowith and approueth the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce to be take withinne the bondis of the comoun lawe of kinde and of comoun feith to gidere. That this conclusioun is trewe, y proue thus: *It is bettir to a man forto entre sureli into lijf with oon yze, oon hond, oon foot, et cætera.* Loke bfore in the eende of the [ix^e.]² chapter of this v^e. partie where these now sett wordis ben write, and rede

THE FIFTH PRINCIPAL CONCLUSION. Reason does not condemn the institution of religious orders. This has in fact been already proved from Christ's words, which in very truth only bear witness to the verdict of natural reason.

¹ See Part I. c. xix.

² A space left in the MS. for the number.

CHAP. XI.

there and frothens forth into the eende of the argument, and thou schalt se ful open proof for this now purposed and spoken entent; bi cause that al what Scripture theryn dooth is not but forto witnesse or remembre, what doom of resoun iugith, allowith, and approueth; and so thilk processe serueth for bothe the iiij^e. and the v^e. principal conclusiouns, and therefore it is no nede forto write the same proof of resoun eftsoone here.

Another proof of the conclusion. Any institution, which makes many men better or less bad than they otherwise would be, commends itself to reason; and the institution of religious orders has done this.

Also in to proof of this present v^e. principal conclusioun y mai argue bi resoun and experience to gidere thus: Thilk gouernance is worthi be allowid and approued of resoun, which gouernaunce makith manye mo men in Cristendom to be morali vertuose and gode, or forto be myche lasse morali viciouse and yuel, than thei schulden be, if thilk gouernaunce were not. But so it is, that religioun is thilk gouernaunce, bi which many hundrid thousind of soulis han lyued ful vertuoseli, which ellis wolden have lyued ful viciوسeli; and also bi religioun manye hundrid thousindis han lyued miche lasse viciوسeli in religioun, than thei schulden haue lyued, if religion hadde not be. Wherefore that such religioun be, is alloweable and aprouable of ech cleerli in kinde disposid resoun.

The second premises of the argument proved from experience. At the same time some men are so disposed, that they will live better lives out of the cloister than within it, as Pecoek has shown in *The Donet*.

The ij^e. premysse of this argument mai be proued thus: Take thou into mynde alle tho men, whiche han be in religioun sithen religioun biganne, and marke thou weel thanne how these men schulden haue lyued, if thei hadden not lyued in religioun; and certis thou schalt not fynde, as weel nyȝ for hem alle, that thei schulden haue lyued other wise than as now or than lyuen or lyueden gileful crafti men, or iurouris and questmongers, or pleders for mony, (thouȝ the causis of plee be wrong,) or as sowdiars forto fytte and slee for spoile and money; ȝhe, schortli to seie, or forto lyue as we now seen weel nyȝ alle worldli peple lyue bothe fleischli and coueitوسli and

vntreuli to God and to man. And bi cause thei han lyued in religioun thei han not lyued so as is now rehersed, but myche better. Wherefore the ij^e. premysse of this present argument is trewe. And thouz it be so, that in religioun manye men han lyued louceli fro vertu, zit tho han be fewe in reward of the othere, which han ther yn lyued vertuoseli; zhe, and thei han lyued in religioun more vertuoseli or lasse vicioseli, than if thei had lyued out of religioun. And thouz tho badde lyuers in religioun han lyued ther yn so vicioseli, zit myche more vicioseli thei wolden haue lyued, if thei hadden lyued out of religioun. And therefore, if it be weel and wijsly and treuli aboute considerid, it wole be seen that religioun is a ful noble hegge forto close yn him men and wommen, that tho whiche ben weel disposid schulen be kept from yuel, into which withoute thilk hegge thei schulden falle; and tho whiche ben yuel disposid schulen be kept that thei schulen falle not into so myche yuel, as thei schulden falle, if thei weren withoute hegge. This bifallith ofte and miche and for the more parti in noumbre of hem that lyuen in religioun, thouz y seie not that it so farith bi alle hem which lyuen in religioun. And herbi it is sufficientli proued, that religioun is bi doom of resoun allowable and approuable. And zit therwith stondith what y haue seid in the extract or outdrauzt of *The Donet*, that summe men ben so disposid that thei schulen lyue better out of religioun than in religioun, so that to suche summe persoones religioun schulde be an occasioun of her more goostli harme and hurt. And this is ynouz for proof of this present v^e. principal conclusioun.

Certis if this present argument be take into perfit and ful avise and into depe leiserful consideracioun, it wole be seen that he proueth myztli this present v^e. conclusioun, and schal be to euery considerer

A careful consideration of the facts will prove this argument in favour of the religious orders to be a very strong one.

CHAP. XL

a¹ ful strong motyue forto fauore religion; aithen peple han be and ben and schulen be so freel as experience zeueth that thei ben.

THE SIXTH
CONCLUSION.
Religious orders
are lawful. Proof
of this, and of
the following
conclusions, is
made in the same
manner as simi-
lar conclusions in
favour of other
ordinances have
been proved.

The vj^e. principal conclusioun of this present v^e. parti is this: The seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce sett in the bigynnyng of this present v^e. partie is leeful in proprist maner of leefulnes. Forwhi, what euer gouernaunce is allowid and approued bi Holi Scripture and bi doom of cleerli disposid resoun in kinde, is leeful in proprist maner of leefulnes, as it is open be the supposicioun or reul sett bifore in the [i^e.]^a chapiter of the ij^e. partie in this book. But so it is, that the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce is allowid and approued bi^a Holi Scripture and bi doom of kindeli cleer disposid resoun, as it is now proued bi the next bifore goyng iiij^e. and v^e. principal conclusions. Wherefore needis folewith that the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce is in proprist maner leeful.

THE SEVENTH
CONCLUSION.
Religious orders
are an institution
of God's law.
Proof of the
conclusion.

The vij^e. principal conclusioun of this present fifthe partie is this: The seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce is a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe. Forwhi what euer gouernaunce is allowid and approued bi Holi Scripture and bi doom of cleer and weel disposid resoun, is a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe. But so it is, that the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce is allowid and approued bi Holi Scripture and bi such seid doom of resoun, as the next bifore going iv^e. and v^e. principal conclusiouns wel schewen. Wherefore the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce is a gouernaunce of Goddis lawe.

THE EIGHTE
CONCLUSION.
It is no sin for a
man to set an ex-
ample to others,

The viij^e. principal conclusioun of this present v^e. partie is this: A man in ensaumpling bi hise deedis to othere men the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce

¹ a is added in a later hand.

^a A space is left in the MS. for

the number. See pp. 134, 135, compared with p. 167.

^a bothe bi, MS. (first hand).

synneth not as in that and therfore, but he ther yn deserueth thank and meede of God. Forwhi in ensaumpling of a gouernaunce being Goddis lawe noman synneth as in that and for that, but he ther yn plesith God and deserueth thank and meede. And so it is, that the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce is Goddis lawe, as the next bifore going principal conclusioun weel schewith and proueth. Wherfore in ensaumpling bi deede the seid vj^e. principal gouernaunce to othere men, noman synneth as in that and for that, if othere causis of synnyng ben away; but he ther yn deserueth weel.

CHAP. XL

of observing the
rules of a reli-
gious order.
Proof of the
conclusion.

xij. CHAPTER.

FERTHERMORE it is to wite, that summe of the lay peple not oonli holden azens the substaunce of the seid religiouns now had and vsid in the chirche; but also thei holden azens the habitis, whiche bi tho religiouns ben assigned to be worn of the religiose persooones. And thei seien that no good skile is, whi tho religiose persooones schulden were so straunge and dyuerse formes of habitis fro her othere Cristen britheren.

Furthermore
certain persons
object to the
habita worn by
the religious
orders.

Also summe of the lay partie blamen and holden azens this, that religiose monasteries (namelich of the begging religiouns) han withinne her gatis and cloocis grete, large, wijde, hize, and stateli mansiouns for lordis and ladies ther yn to reste, abide, and dwelle; and this, that thei han large and wijde chirchis like sumwhat to cathedral or modir chirchis of diocisis.

Also that monas-
teries contain
stateli mansions
for the reception
of lords and
ladies, and spa-
cious churches
resembling
cathedrals.

Also summe of the lay peple blamen and scornen and holden azens this, that bi the religioun of Seint Fraunces the religiose persooones of thilk religion schulen not handle and touche with her hond neither bere aboute hem eny money, that is to seye, eny

Also that the
Franciscan friars
may not touch
nor bear money,
while they may
keep it in their
coffers and count
it with a stick's
end, and may

CHAP. XIII.
handle jewels
and costly plate.

Vindication of
these matters
shall now be
made. Three
arguments may
be adduced in
favour of the
habits worn by
the religious
orders. The first
argument. It is
reasonable that
persons belonging
to these orders
should be distin-
guished by some
sign from others
and no sign is
so appropriate
as the whole
clothing for this
purpose.

gold or siluer or othere metal koynd; and ȝit thei ben not weerned bi the same religioun forto telle such money with a stik holdun in her hond, neither forto kepe it in her cofris, neither thei ben weerned for to holde, bere, touche, and handle cuppis and dischis, knyfis and iewelis of siluer and of gold, how euer preciose and delectable to the sȝt tho iewelis ben.

And therfore aftir that fro the bigynnyng of the [ix^e.]¹ chapter of this present v^e. parti hidir to it is proued and stabilid, that it is leeful ynouȝ suche religiouns to be and to renne in vce with the comoun Cristen religioun, y schal now iustifie these here now rehersed thre gouernauncis so vniustli of the lay peple blamed; for y schal expresse and open how that ech of these thre now spokun gouernauncis mai be don and vsid vnder resonable and gode causis. And first into iustifyng of the firste of these now rehersed gouernauncis, I procede bi iij. principal causis, of which the firste cause is this: Sithen it is sufficientli bifore² proued that such seid religiouns be in the chirche, it muste needis therwith [be] resonable, good, and profitable, that the religiose persoones of tho religiouns haue a mark and a signe, wherbi thei mowen openli be knowe fro othere persoones being not in tho religiouns; riȝt as, sithen the ordris of dekenys and of preestis musten needis be, it is ful resonable and profitable that summe markis be had, wherbi dekenys mowen openli be knowe fro preestis, and markis wherbi bothe dekenis and preestis mowen openli be knowe fro lay men. But so it is, that this open mark and signe may not be take sufficientli bi her persoones and her natural bodies, sithen her natural bodies ben like to the natural bodies of othere men. Wher fore

¹ A space left in the MS. for the number.

² *bifore* is added in the margin by a later hand.

thilk mark muste be take bi her clothing or bi sum mark or signe to be sett and fastned into her clothing. And thanne ferther thus: Sithen the al hool greet clothing is abler to zeue this now seid knowing, than schulde be eny lasse mark to be sett into the same clothing; it folewith that the al¹ hool outward seable habit schulde rather be ordeyned into this mark, than eny other lasse thing.

Confirmacioun herto may be this: Not withstonding that wommen mowen be knowe sumwhat fro men bi her natural visagis, ^{Confirmation of the argument. The different sexes and the different crafts are distinguished by their different clothing. Also as the servants of one lord are known apart from those of another by their livery, it is requisite that the brethren of the various religious orders should be recognized by their various habits.} 3it it is resonable and profitable that thei be knowe asunder bi her outward habitis. Wherefore miche rather it is resonable, that a religiose persoon be knowe bi outward habit fro othere persoones not religiose, sithen bi her natural bodies thei mowen not so² weel be knowe asundir as mowen be asunder knowe men and wommen. Also it is holde resonable, alloweable, and profitable, that oon temporal lordis meyne haue clothing dyuers fro the clothing of an other temporal lordis meyne; namelich, whanne thei schulen be medlid to gidere in sum oon citee or toun, that the seruauntis of the oon lord mai be knowe fro the seruauntis of the other lord. And in lijk maner in the citee of London it is holde for resonable and profitable, that the persoones of oon craft haue clothing dyuers fro the persoones of an other craft. And al this is for lasse nede or for lasse good cause, than is the cause for whiche religiose persoones schulden be knowen openly fro persoones not religiose. Wherefore it is alloweable, good, resonable,³ and profitable, that religiose persoones haue habit dyuers fro the habit of

¹ *al the*, MS. (first hand), the marks of transposition being probably in another hand; but the correction is sanctioned by the analogy of other passages.

² *so* is added in a later hand.

³ *good, resonable*, is added in the margin by a later hand.

CHAP. XII.

othere persoones not religiose. And if this be trewe, certis resonable and alloweable it is, that the habit of oon such religioun be dyuers fro the habit of an other such religioun; and that ech such religioun haue to him his propre assigned habit, namelich, sithen it is alloweable that multitude of suche religiouns be had and vsid in the chirche, as it is bifore in this v^e. parti sufficientli proued.

The second argument. The habits of the religious orders serve to remind the brethren of the vows and charges which they have undertaken to perform.

The secunde cause into the iustifyng of this same firste gouernaunce is this: Sithen it is so, that suche religiouns ben alloweable, (as it is bifore sufficientli proued),¹ it is alloweable and ful resonable and profitable, that the religiose persoones in the religiouns haue ofte in her sizt or feeling and therbi ofte in her mynde rememoratijf² signes forto ofte and myche therbi be remembrid upon the chargis of the religioun, whiche thei han taken upon hem to kepe and fulfille; riȝt as for such cause God wolde that the comoun peple of the Iewis schulde haue the comaundementis of Moyses tablis writun in the wallis of her chambris biholding azens her beddis, and in the wallis of her hallis biholding azens her mete table. But so it is, that no more conuenient, redier, and ofter seen and feelid remembratijf signe into this seid purpos for religiose persoones couthe be founde and assigned, than her outward habit. Wherefore it is resonable, alloweable, and profitable, that her outward habit be mad to hem into such for hem a remembring signe forto hem remembre ofte and myche into the chargis of her religioun taken upon hem. And thus myȝte not her habit be to hem such a remembring signe, but

¹ The first lines of this paragraph (as far as *proued*) occur twice over in the MS.; the first attempt being full of mistakes is cancelled.

² *remembratijf*, MS. originally, but

the correction may have been made by the original scribe. As the form occurs twice below unaltered it has been retained in the text, but it is exceedingly suspicious.

if it were dyuers fro the habit of othere persoones not religiose; neither the outward habit of oon religioun myȝte so perfitli and so sufficientli move and remembre into the al hool charge of his religioun, if it were not sum what dyuers fro the outward habit of an other religioun, as it may, if it be sum what dyuers. Wherefore it is resonable, alloweable, and profitable for cause of remembring, that religiose persoones haue outward habitis dyuerse fro the outward habitis of lay men, and that the persoones of oon religioun haue her outward habit dyuers fro the outward habit of persoones in an other religion.

Also the outward habitis of religiose persoones mowen be remembratijf signes to the lay peple not religiose forto remembre hem silf therbi thus: Lo, these persoones thus clothid han forsake the greet entermeting with the world and the greet felicite and prosperite of the world for the greet ioie, reward, and mede, which thei therfore abiden to haue in heuen; it is good therefore to us forto do in the same wise, or in sum other wise lijk¹ good to us or more, according to oure abilde. Wherefore it muste needis be, that also into the remembring of persoones not being religiose as of persoones being religiose, it is alloweable and profitable that religiose persoones haue habitis propre to her religious.

The iij^e. cause into iustifyng of this same firste gouernance is this: Sithen suche religious ben alloweable to be, (as it is bifore sufficientli proued,) and alle men bi her natural freelnes ben redi and prompte into gaynes of aray and into dyuerse fyndingis of schap in aray for vein glorie and for othere not gode causis, it is resonable, alloweable, and pro-

They are also profitable signs to secular persons.

The third argument. A sober and somewhat unsightly habit, imposed by their rule on the religious brethren, restrains them from that vain-glorious love of dress into which they might otherwise fall.

¹ or in sum other wise lijk is added in a later hand, and partly written on an erasure.

CHAP. XII.

fitable, if sum remedie be devisid, take, and vsid, wherbi refreinyng and lett mai be mad to this perel now rehercid. But so it is, that for to dyuyse, take, and vse stabili oon schap of outward habit, (namelich such a schap which is rather foul than gay, and which schulde rather lette fro glorie than tice into glorie,) and for to dyvise, take, and vse stabili oon colour of clooth in outward habit is a ful noble remedie and a refreynyng aȝens the seid natural freelnes, bi whiche religiose persoones myȝten and wolden ellis breke forth into nyce fyndingis of dyuerse schappis in her outward aray and into gay and riche blasing colour, and so ther yn synne bi manye wijsis. Therefore it is resonable, alloweable, and profitable for cause of such refreynyng, that in ech such religioun the religiose persoones haue her outward habitis stabilid to hem in oon maner of sumwhat foul or vnfair schap and in oon maner of poor and symple colour, and that thei be bounde forto holde hem stabili and vnchaungeabili therto. And thus miche is ynouȝ for iustifyng of the firste gouernaunce.

xiiij. CHAPTER.

The stately mansions and churches of monasteries justified by four arguments. The first argument. It is expedient that lords and ladies, when they come into cities, be lodged in places where they may be removed from the world, and may associate with religious persons, and may attend divine service. And the mansions of the religious houses are places of this kind.

INTO the iustifyng of the ij^e. gouernaunce y procede bi iiij. causis, of whiche the firste is this: It is alloweable, profitable, and procurable bi therto strecching meenis, that lordis and ladies, whanne thei schulen come to citees, be loggid out fro the myche entermeting of the world in suche placis where the world schal be myche holde out of her sizt and out of her cumpenying, that he zeue not to hem occasions of yuel; and where thei mowen haue redi at sizt and speche cumpenying with religiose persoones forto aske of hem counseil and exortacioun into good and perfit lyuyng; and where thei mowen heere

dyuyne officis of euensong and matins and masse and prechingis, and mowen bi ofte seing of religiose gouernauncis and obseruauncis be moued the more into contricioun, compunccioun, and deuocioun. And sithen these noble and notable and rizt profitable effectis of perfiting lordis and ladies mowen not be so weel had and gete to lordis and ladies, if thei schulden dwelle in citees out of mansiouns bildid with inne religiose gatis, as if thei schulden dwelle in mansiouns bildid with inne religiosis gatis; it folewith nedis, that for this cause of the more perfiting lordis and ladies it is alloweable, resonable, and profitable hem to haue mansiouns couenable for hem within the monasteries of religiose persooones, of what euer religioun tho religiose persooones ben.

The ij^e. cause into the iustifyng of the ij^e. gouernaunce is this: It is alloweable, resonable, and profitable that religiose persooones, of what euer religioun thei ben, haue freendis and menteyners and defenders; namelich to haue lordis and ladies into her main-
teyners and defenders azens wrongers and diffamers of the synful and wickid world, for that lordis and ladies ben myztier forto so menteyne and defende than othere louzer persooones ben. But so it is, that bi this that lordis and ladies dwellen withinne the monasteries of religiose persooones, tho lordis and ladies wolen and musten needis bi kindenes and bi resoun be moued forto be bi so myche the more and the better menteyners [and] defenderis to the same religiose persooones and to the freendis of the same religiose persooones. Wherefore for this ij^e. cause of frendschip geting and holding to religiose persooones, it is resonable, alloweable, and profitable, if mansiouns for lordis and ladies be bildid withinne the cloosis and gatis of religiose monasteries, of what euer religioun tho monasteries be, but if the reule of thilk religioun it weerne; which excepcioun y vndirstonde

The second argument. The hospitality afforded to persons of rank within these mansions moves them to defend the rights of the religious houses.

CHAP. XIII. thoruz out al the iustifyng of this present ij^e. gouernaunce.

The third argument. The presence of such persons has a good effect on the conduct of the brethren themselves.

The iij^e. cause is this: If lordis and ladies and othere reuerend persoones dwelle nyȝ to religiose persoones, tho persoones wolen be bi so miche the more waar and ferd forto¹ trespace and do amys and forto be of eny bad reule, lest thei of so credible witnessers be aspied and of her so grete benefeters the rather forsakun; and certis this is a greet profit comyng to the persoones of the religioun, for it is a goostli profit ful greet.

The fourth argument. These great persons will be more ready to give alms to the mendicant orders, if they are lodged within their monasteries, and thus the poor will be relieved, from whom more alms would otherwise be solicited by the friars.

The iiij^e. cause into the iustifyng of this ij^e. gouernaunce is this: If religiose persoones of the begging ordrys receyue myche and grete almessis of lordis and ladies, tho persoones han the lasse neede for to spende tyme in going aboute forto begge of the poorer peple; and so as ther yn schal ese come bothe to the nedi religiose persones² and also to the poor comoun peple, of whiche ellis almessis schulden be the more askid. And sithen bi this, that lordis and ladies schulen be loggid in mansiouns bildid withinne the monasteries of the begging religiouns, tho lordis and ladies schulen be the redier forto ȝeue her almessis to the persoones of thilk religiouns; it folewith that for this iiij^e. cause of alizting the poor men it is alloweable and profitable, that lordis and ladies haue mansiouns with inne the cloocis gatis³ and monasteries of the begging religiouns; so that tho³ mansiouns for lordis and ladies be ther mad and occupied for summe of these now here rehercid causis or summe othere like alloweable cause, and not for eny bad cause not worthi to be allowid.

But it may be objected, that such mansiouns may

If eny man wole knoulecche weel here, that such now seid mansiouns or dwelling placis mowen ver-

¹ foto, MS.

² persones is interlineated in a | later hand. So also gatis and tho | below.

tuoseli be bildid and be occupied withinne the seid religiouns, but not with the labour and puruaunce neither with the cost of tho religiosis; certis azens this¹ cauyllacioun meetith this reson: Ech vertuose doable deede is as freely doable of ech religiose man as of eny other man not religiose, but if his religioun weerne him to do thilk deede. Or ellis thus: Howeuer fre for to do eny vertuose deede is eny man not religiose, so fre is ech man religiose; but if his religioun ther fro weerne him. But so it is, that no religioun now had in the chirche now weerneth hise persoones forto purueie into suche bilding with the costis of the religioun and with the concent of the couent: as that this is trewe, the reulis of the same religiouns mowen be clepid into iugement. Wherefore, if it be a vertuose gouernaunce that suche lordli mansions be bildid bisidis the cloistris of the seid religiouns, it is vertuose ynou; that persoones of the same religiouns purueie for the same bilding and at her owne cost; for bi so myche it schal be to hem the more vertuose and the more holi and the more merytorie, than it schal be if thei schulden sette tho mansiouns into the seid gode vsis and not with her owne costis, but with the costis of lordis or ladies.

An other obieccioun miȝte be mad in this mater thus: Whanne the lordis or ladies or eny of the comoun peple ȝeueth eny almes to religiose couentis² or to eny religiose persoon into a special vce and expending of thilk ȝifte, and the couent or the persoon receyuyng the ȝifte consentith forto expende the ȝift into the same assigned vce and expending,

CHAP. XIII.

well be built in monasteries, but that they should not be supported at the cost of the brethren. It may be replied, that a monk is as free to do well as any other person is, and consequently to support such buildings at his own cost, if it is well that they should be supported at all.

Again, it is further objected, that it is a misappropriation of the funds given to religious houses, to expend them on the erection or reparation of these lordly mansions.

¹ this is interlineated by a later hand.

² *cōuētis*, MS., but it is hardly likely that a writer should have

used different forms of the same word in a sentence constructed as this is.

CHAP. XIII. it is not leeful that the seid couent or religiose person expende the same zifte into eny other vce or expending, thouȝ the other vce and expending were leeful ynouȝ. But so it is, that whanne lordis and ladies and othere persoones of the louȝer comunalte ȝeuen her almes (movable or vnmovable) to religiouns receyuyng possessiouns or to religiouns of begging, thei ȝeuen thilk almes into vce and expending aboute her owne goostli and bodili necessities perteynyng to good state of the religiouns oonli, and not into vsis and expendingis vnperteynyng to tho religiouns and to her persoones: and herwith so it is, that the vce and expending of the godis ȝouun into religioun, (mad and doon into bilding and reparing of the seid lordli mansiouns,) is not necessarili longing to the state of the religiouns, neither of the religiose persoones, in that and for that that thei ben religiose. Wherefore it semeth folewe, that tho goodis ȝouun into religiouns bi lordis and ladies and the louȝer peple ouȝten not be expendid in to bilding and reparing of suche seid lordli dwellingis.

Answer to the objection. Charters of donation and plain experienceshow that when funds or lands were given to religious bodies, discretion was left with those bodies as to what uses the gift should be applied.

Answer to this obieccioun is forto denye euereither parti of the ij^e. premysse sett in the argument or¹ the obieccioun. Forwhi sufficient record of writingis and open experience han schewid and now schewen weel, that ful ofte whanne lordis and ladies and othere peple ȝaue and now ȝeuen to religiose couentis vnmovable or movable good, thei pointiden not into what vsis the receyuers schulden expende thilk good; but the ȝeuers trustiden that the receyuers wolden expende thilk good vertuoseli and holili, and not other wise than it bisemed. And with this trust thei helden hem content and paid in her zifte making, for thei wisten weel that tho religiose persoones wolden first expende aboute her religioun and aboute

¹ Probably we should read of.

hem silf what therto were necessarie, eer than that thei wolden eny ouerplus therof expende aboute eny other vertuose deede; and into this expending the zeuers weel consentiden, or at the leest weren not ther azens. And thus it is open, that the firste parti of the seid ij^e. premysse is not trewe.

Also the ij^e. parti of the same ij^e. premysse is not trewe. Forwhi the ij^e. and iij^e. causis, brouzt in before in the ij^e. chapter into the iustifyng of the ij^e. gouernaunce, ben ful myche strecching into furtheraunce of religiouns; and therefore, thouz religiose persoones expende the godis zouun into religion aboute the bilding and repairing of the seid lordli mansiouns, thilk expensis ben mad as necessarie and profitable to the religioun; for thei ben maad into mentenaunce of the religioun and in refreynyng of the religiose persoones bi drede from yuel. And so open it is, that also¹ the ij^e. parti of the same ij^e. premysse is vntrewe. And thus bi this answeere the argument or obieccioun now bifore mad is not strong forto proue his entent.

Moreover, to spend money in the erection of such mansions, has been proved to be directly beneficial to the religions themselves in more senses than one.

As for iustifyng of the large and wijde chirchis, whiche religiose persoones (namelich of the begging religiouns) maken, so that ther yn be not ouer greet curiosite, gaynes, preciosite, or costiosenes, sufficith and is ynou^z this: that ther bi the more² multitude of persoones mowe be receyued togidere for to here theryn prechingis to be mad in reyne daies; and also that therbi in othere whilis the gretter multitudes mowen be the² more eesid in her deuociouns making to God, whilis thei stonden or sitten or knelen rombe fer ech from othir, and not oon such is ny^z at an othere cheke; and also that therbi in othere whilis the grete multitudis mowen come thider in

In vindication of the ample churches of the religious orders, more especially of the mendicants, it may be said that they admit larger congregations, and hold them more conveniently, and offer opportunities to more persons to repair thither at other times for the settling of disputes and the like, than smaller churches could do.

¹ *al so*, MS. (without hyphen, probably accidentally, but ?).

² *more* is interlineated in a later hand; and similarly *the* below.

CHAP. XIII. reyne daies aftir mydday, for to counceile with her freendis and with her wise counseilers aboute making of accordis and aboute redressing of wrongis and aboute othere vertuose deedis. And so open it is, that thouz no mo godis schulden come therbi than these iij. now laste rehercid; certis tho ben sufficient forto proue the seid wijde and large chirchis to be alloweable and profitable, if thei be mad into these now rehercid gode effectis. And thus miche is ynow for¹ iustifyng of the ij^c. gouernaunce spokun in the next bifore going chapter of this v^c. partie.

Reply to the objection that evil comes from these stately buildings. Greater evil does not arise than is suppressed, and no evil at all arises which may not be remedied.

And thouz summe men wolden seie that yuel cometh bi occasioun of suche seid lordli bildingis occupied with inne the gatis of religiose monasteries, certis therto mai treuli be seid that not eny yuel, which mai not esili be remedied, stonding al the good which bifore is rehercid to come bi the same bildingis and her occupiyngis; and not gretter yuel, than is the yuel which is excludid and lettid bi occasioun of the seid bildingis and of her occupiyngis; and therefore this obieccioun hath no strengthe.

xiiij. CHAPTER.

Two arguments in vindication of the practice of the Franciscans in counting money with a stick. The first argument. Whenever anything is to be avoided, it is praiseworthy to avoid all familiar approaches to the same thing. Love of money is such a thing.

THE iustifyng of the ij^c. gouernaunce spokun bifore in the [xij^c.]² chapter of this present v^c. partie schal be in ij. causis, of whiche the firste is this: Whanne euer eny deede or thing is to be forborn or left,³ for that it is yuel, or for that it is perilose, or for eny other good cause, it is alloweable, zhe, and preiseable forto forbere the neizing and the entermeting and the homelynes with the same thing; as whanne euere and where euer fleischli loue to a womman is

¹ *forto*, MS. (first hand).

² A space is left for the number.

³ *lest*, MS.

to be forborn, it is preiseable forto forbere the nyzing and the homeli cumpeniynge with hir; and in lijk maner, for that Adam and Eue ouzten haue forborne the eting of the appil in Paradise, it hadde be good and preiseable if thei hadden forborn the entermeting which thei maden aboute the appil in it biholding, handling, taasting, ymagynyng, and questiouns theraboute moving. But so it is, that loue to money (and namelich greet loue to money) is worthi to be forborn, as experience weel schewith, for that it is moder of passing myche yuel, and, as Poul seith, it is "the roote of al yuel,"¹ and it is "seruice of ydol-atric,"² and the touching and handling and bering of it is a greet neizing and entermeting and a ful greet homelines therwith making. Wherefore it folewith that it is preiseable forto forbere the bare touching and handling of money, that bi this forbering sumwhat the more the seid ouer greet loue to money be lettid forto gendre or to growe or to contynue;³ rízt as bi the forbering of kissing or of handling a wommannys hondis schulde sumwhat be kutt away of the loue, which ellis schulde be had toward the same womman.

The secunde cause is this: Whanne euer eny man is bounde to eny deede or gouernaunce, it is profitable him to haue sum thing forto ofte and miche remembre him into the fulfilling of thilk deede into whiche he is so bounde. But so it is, that freris of Seint Frauncessis religion ben bounde bi the religioun forto forbere the ouer miche loue⁴ to money: and herwith it is trewe, that the forbering⁵ of the bare touche ther of and the forbering of the pursing

CHAP. XIV.

and therefore to abstain from handling money is praiseworthy.

¹ See 1 Tim. vi. 10.

² See Ephes. v. 5.

³ to contynue, MS. (first hand), rightly; but a corrector has cancelled to.

⁴ loue is interlineated in a later hand.

⁵ for bering, MS. (without hyphen).

The second argument. The Franciscans, being bound by their religion to renounce the excessive love of money, are reminded of their vows by this abstinence from the bare touch of money.

CHAP. XIV. or bodili bering ther of is a ful greet and a bisi remembrauncing to hem, that thei ouzten forbere and ouzten caste away ouer greet loue therto; and also of this forbering the touche and the bodili bering aboute cometh noon yuel. Wherefore it is allowable, zhe, and preiseable this, that thei forberen¹ for euer for to touche eny money or forto bere aboute hem eny money, if thei so forberen that therbi thei wolden be remembrid thus as is bifore now seid, and as now in forme schal folowe: "Lo we han take up
 " on us forto forbere greet loue to money, and in
 " token and in signifyng therof we han bound us
 " silf for to neuere touche neither bere money; lete
 " us therfore (as thus remembrid) make oure deede
 " accorde with oure bond, that we trespace not azens
 " oure bond."

But it may be objected, that they ought with equal reason to abstain from counting it with a stick, and from handling precious jewels and plate.

Perauenture azens the iustifyng now mad for the iij^e. gouernaunce summe men wolen obiecte and chalenge thus: If freris of Frauncensis religioun forbering handling and bering of money, for that this handeling and bering ben neizingis and homeli entermetingis with money, and for that thilk forbering schal make in hem a remembraunce that thei ouzten not loue money ouer myche; whi forberen not thei telling of money with a stikkis eende, sithen this telling is a nyz and a ful homely entermeting with the same money, and the forbering of such telling myzte make in hem lijk remembrance as the forbering of handling schulde make? Also sithen iewelis of gold and of silver and of preciose stoonys and knyfis and girdelis harneisid with gold and siluer and suche othere araies ouzten not be loued of hem ouer myche, whi forberen not thei to touche in handling and the bering upon hem of suche now seid iewelis and knyfis harneisid with siluer and gold?

¹ for *beren*, MS. (without hyphen).

To the firste of thes now mad obiecciouns and chalengis y may answere thus: For to handle or bere money is a more homely entermeting with the same money, than is forto telle it with a stik; and therefore the more homelynes is forborn, and the lasse homelynes is suffrid. To the ij^e. obieccioun and chalenge y mai answere thus: Iewel is ben not in so manye kindis so redy and so nize to the vce in which the hauer mai delite him synfulli, as is money. Forwhi the hauer of iewel is may not delite him silf with iewel is fleischli neither worldli except veinglorioseli,¹ eer than he haue turnede or chaungid the iewel is into money; and so into ful many synful vis the money is nyzer and redier than ben iewel is; and therfore the more perel is forborn, whilis the lasse is suffrid to abide. And thouz it were so, that the telling of money with a stik were as greet a neiizing in homelynes to money as is bare handling, and thouz the handling of iewel is were as perilese as is the handling of money; zit ther of not folewith, that if eny man for deuocioun wolde forbere the oon, that therfore he ouzte forbere the other; neither it were chalengeable, if he wolde forbere the oon and wolde not forbere the other. Forwhi it is fair, good, and preisable to forbere the oon, whilis he is not constreyned to forbere of hem bothe eny oon; and it is preisable him to binde him silf in to the forbering of the oon, whilis othere men bynden not hem silf to of the same bothe eny oon. And in lijk maner y seie, thouz the forbering of mony tellyng with a stik were as good a remembrauncing meene in to the bfore seid effect, as is the forbering of money tellyng with bare hond; and thouz the forbering of iewel is touching were as good a remembring meene into the

CHAP. XIV.

Answer to both parts of this objection. To count money with a stick is a less familiarity with it than to handle it; and there is not so much danger in familiarity with jewels as in familiarity with money. Moreover, even if this were not the case, it does not follow, that if a man, for the sake of devotion, abstain from one thing, he should therefore abstain from another, when he is not obliged to abstain from either.

¹ *vein glorioseli*, MS.

CHAP. XIV.

bifore seid effect, as is the forbering of money touch-
ing; 3it therof folewith not, that who euer chesith
to take oon of these forberingis, that he schulde
take ther with the other of hem, neither he is worthi
be¹ chalengid, which takith the oon and not takith
bothe. Forwhi whanne a man is fre to leue bothe,
it is preseeable² and fair and honest, if he take the
oon and not bothe; and nameliche sithen fewe othere
taken eny of hem bothe. And thus y answeres to the
ij. now bifore going obiecciouns or chalengis.

Confirmation of
the argument by
examples, and by
an imaginary
conversation be-
tween a Fran-
ciscan and his
opponent.

Confirmaciouns to this answeres mowen be mad ful
weel bi ensaumplis thus: If a man wole for a iust
cause faste ech Friday in the 3eer as bi boond and
not as bi fre deuocioun conli, were this a iust
challenge therazens for to seie thus, "Whi fastith not
" he ther with also bi boond the Saturday or the
" Wednesday?" And if he wolde forbere fisch and
mylky mete in ech Friday in the Lente, were this a
iust challenge ther azens for to seie thus, "Whi for-
" berith he not ther with fisch and mylki mete also
" in ech Wednesday of the Lente?" Open ynow it is,
that these chalengis weren not resonable. For bettir
it is forto do oon good of the tweyne, into of whiche
neuer neither he is bounde, than forto leue of hem
the euereither vndoon. Ferthermore if eny man wolde
challenge a frere of Seint Frauncessis ordre, and seie
to him thus, "Frere, thou louest money as myche
" as othere men³ louen, and more than othere men
" louen; for ellis thou woldist not so bisili begge
" for to haue it: whi wolt not thou thanne handle
" money as othere men handlen?" the frere myzte
weel answer thus, "Sir, if y loue money more than
" othere men louen, and more than y schulde loue;

¹ to be, MS. (first hand).

² Perhaps a clerical error for
preisable.

³ men is added in the margin by
a later hand.

“ ȝit if ne were this forbering fro touche of money,
 “ y schulde loue money more than y loue now; and
 “ therfore this forbering fro touche is not in vein.
 “ Also this forbering and abstinence of handling
 “ money is a meene for to make me loue it lasse
 “ than y now do; and therfore also this abstinence
 “ or forbering is not in waast and in vein.” And
 if the challenger wole contynue in his chalenging and
 seie thus, “ It is better and more toward perfec-
 “ cioun for to not loue the money ouer myche, than
 “ forto abstayne fro touching it:” the frere myȝte
 graunte it weel, and myȝte seie setting therto this,
 “ And for that the forbering of handling money is a
 “ good meene into the abstinence of louyng it, therfore
 “ y abstayne fro handling it; for that y wolde therbi
 “ come the sooner into the not louyng of it as into
 “ the better good, than is the not handling of it.”
 And ȝit if¹ the challenger wolde stryue ferther and
 seie thus, “ Frere, it is bettir and neerer to perfec-
 “ cioun forto not loue money ouer myche and handle
 “ it, than forto not loue money and not handle it;
 “ and sithen the gretter perfeccioun or the thing
 “ neerer to perfeccioun is to be chosun, rather than
 “ the lasse perfeccioun or the thing romber fro per-
 “ feccioun, thou schuldist rather sette thee forto
 “ not loue money with the handling of money, than
 “ for to sette thee and wone thee to not loue money
 “ with the not handling of money:” herto the frere
 myȝte answere thus, “ Sir, y knowleche weel that it
 “ is better and hizer gode and holynes forto not
 “ loue money with touching it, than to not loue
 “ money with the not touching of it; but aȝenward
 “ to freel men, whiche han not ȝit gete the fulnes of
 “ perfeccioun, it is surer to not loue money with not

¹ if is added in the margin by a later hand.

CHAP. XIV.

"touching it, than to not loue it with touching of
 "it. And therfore to me, (as man freel bi kinde and
 "not hardi for to feele of my silf that y am in the
 "fulnes of perfeccioun,) it is surer for to chese this
 "parti which is for to not loue money with the not
 "handling of it, than for to not loue money with the
 "handling of it. And whanne 3e seien ferther thus,
 "that the more good and the perfizter good and the
 "hizer good and the neerer good to perfeccioun is
 "alwey of ech man to be chose and executid bfore
 "other lasse good and romber good fro perfeccioun,
 "certis this is not trewe; for thouz ech man ouzte
 "loue and desire such now seid gretter good bfore
 "the lasse good, 3it not ech man ouzte chese forto
 "do and execute such more good bfore the lasse
 "gode, but perfit men at fulle¹ mowen so chese and
 "ouzten so chese, and vnperfit men cumbrid in her
 "freelnes and in her passiouns ouzten chese ful ofte
 "the sikerer and surer good to hem bfore the vn-
 "surer good; thouz thilk surer good be lasse good
 "in it silf or to a perfit man, than is thilk vnsurer
 "good." And this is ynou3 for answeere to the laste
 now maad challenge.

Moreover, this will ever be found true, that it is more or less self-denial to a man to abstain from the touch of money; and this self-denial, undertaken from love to God, will receive its reward, as will all other acts of self-denial.

And ferthermore forto seie fynali as here in this mater: What euer eny man challenge or obiecte azens this now seid forbering of moneyes touching, this wole euer be founde trewe, that it is payne lasse or more to ech man so forbering² as ofte as he so forberith, and forto take such a payne so ofte comyng and that for Goddis³ loue and into amendis making for synne, (namelich whilis thilk same absteynyng in payne is a meene into geting of a moral good, which ellis schulde not be had or not so miche had,) it

¹ *the fulle*, MS. (first hand).

² *bering*, MS. (first hand).

³ *for goddis*, MS. (perhaps by mere accident; but ?).

muste nedis folewe, what euer be seid ther azens, that at the leest thilk abstinence or forbering is a merytorie deede and a deseruyng to haue therbi grace and sum forzeuenes of synne, as othere abstinencis ben merytorie and deseruyng to haue grace and sum forzeuenes of synne, as is abstinence in sum day¹ fro fisch, or abstinence in sum day¹ fro mylky mete, or abstinence in sum day¹ fro pley, and abstinence in sum day¹ fro sizt taking of sum delectable thing. And this same withoute more were ynouz forto excuse fro waast or fro ypocrisie the seid forbering of monyes handling.

CHAP. XIV.

XV. CHAPTER.

THE vij^e. principal gouernance azens which summe of the lay peple erren is this: That the preestis and othere clerkis preien to God and to Seintis, and thei so preien bothe for hem silf and for her neizboris; and thei graunten to summe othere persoones forto be partyners in sum kinde of her preiers, and of her abstinencis, of her wacchis, and of her othere gode deedis and suffrauncis. This now seid gouernaunce summe of the lay peple blamen vnwijsly, seiying and holding that it is waast and vein forto preie to God, whilis he knowith ech mannys hertis desijr and ech mannys nede; also that it is waast and veyn forto preie to eny Seint, whilis God loueth us more than eny Seint loueth us. And, as it myzte seme, thei holden that no man may take an other man so into his nyȝ frendschip, that therbi the other man schal fare the better bi this mannys fasting, waking, and hise othere gode deedis; but ech man schal fare weel goostli oonli bi hise owne gode deedis. Azens which

A brief enumeration of the remaining five principal points against which the Lollards object. THE SEVENTH POINT. The invocation of saints and the intercessions offered by priests for particular persons. This matter is discussed in Pecock's treatises *On the filling of the four tables*, and *On Christian religion*.

¹ In all the above instances the MS. has *sūday* (conjunctim).

CHAP. XV.

now rehercid vnwijs blamyng to be reproued and improued (that is to seie, to be proued vntrewe,) it is sufficientli tretid in *The book filling the iiij. tablis* in ther of the firste parti; and also azens sum therof it is notabili procedid in the firste partie of *Cristen religioun*, the secunde treti, the ¹ chapter. And therefore that y be not ouer long in this present book, y speke not of thilk mater in special here; lest that for lengthe which this present book schulde haue, if alle the xj. gouernauncis weren here yn tretid in special maner, the mo of the comoun peple myzten the wors avorthi in cost of mony forto gete to hem this present book.

THE EIGHTH PRINCIPAL POINT. In the church is used a great variety of costly ornaments, as bells, banners, &c., which are useless and wasteful, and relics are also worshipped with a superstitious or idolatrous veneration.

The viij^c. principal gouernaunce, for which ² summe of the lay peple reprouen, vndirnemen, and blamen vnwijsly the clergie is this: In the bodili chirche ben had and vsid signes of greet curiosite, preciosite, and cost; and in greet multitude and dyuersite, as bellis, baners, and suche othere, not being the grete sacramentis; whiche myzten be solde and be delid to poor men or be sett into othere vsis better, than to so be had and vsid in the bodili chirche; and also this, that ymagis and crossis ben lowtid of men, and the feet of ymagis and of crossis and of relikis ben kissid of men, and to tho ymagis, crossis, and relikis it is offrid, or ellis bfore hem offrid, and toward hem ben maad longe pilgrimagis in greet cost, wherbi, (as these blamers seien,) ydolatrie is doon, sithen thilk lowting which is to be zouun oonli to God is zouun ther yn to creaturis, that is to seie, to ymagis and to crossis and to relikis. Wherefore alle the now rehercid thingis and deedis schulden be not had and vsid in the bodili chirche of Cristen peple.

¹ A space is left in the MS. for the number.

² for which, MS.

Azens this now rehercid chalenging, vndirnemyng, and blamyng, that he is¹ vniustli and vntreuli mad, serueth ful weel and sufficientli *The book of worschipping* in large lengthe, as nede of the mater so askith; and therefore who wole se how this here rehercid blamyng and chalenging is defauti and vniust, and how treuthe hath him silf in the mater of signes vsid, not being the grete sacramentis, go he into *The* (now named) *book of worschipping*, (for he is ouer greet for to be ingraffid here,) and go he in to the firste parti of *Cristen religioun*, the treteti, the chapter, and into the treteti, the² chapter; and with Goddis grace he schal be fillid there with ful fair instruccion perteynyng to the maters of this now touchid purpos.

CHAP. XV.

The things objected against are amply justified in Peacock's treatises *Of worschipping* and *Of Christian religion*.

The ix^e. principal gouernaunce for which summe of the lay peple vnwijsly and vnreuerentli blamen the clergie is this: That in the chirche ben had grete signes and sacramentis, and her vsis; as ben baptem, confermyng, hosil of Cristis bodi and blood, and othere mo; whiche sacramentis and her vsis summe of the lay peple holden to be pointis of wicche craft and blindingis, brouzt into Cristen men bi the feend and the anticrist and hise lymes. And in special thei abhorren aboue alle othere the hizest and worstiest signe and sacrament of alle othere, the sacrament of the auter, the preciose bodi and blood of Crist for us hangid in the cros and for us out sched; in so miche that thei not oonli scornen it, but thei haaten it, mys callen it bi foule names, and wolen not come her thankis into the bodili chirche, whilis thilk sacrament is halewid, tretid, and vsid in the masse.

THE NINTH POINT. The sacraments of the church, and especially the sacrament of the altar, are superstitious and anti-christian.

¹ is is interlineated in a later hand. | ² Spaces are left for the numbers.

CHAP. XV.

Full vindication
of the things
thus calumniated
is to be found in
various works of
Peacock.

Azens this now rehercid mys bering of tho men and azens this her foul faring with hem silf and her vniust bering an hond is maad a book bi him silf clepid *The book of feith* and an other *Of sacramentis*; and also ij. othere bokis, of whiche oon is clepid *The book of baptyem*, the other *The book of eukarist*, in which book sufficientli and cleerli al this now rehercid foule and mys bering and vniust chalenging and blamyng is reproued and vnproued. And therefore, sithen so long a werk is seid and doon there, it is no nede forto seie ther of eny thing vnperfitli and vnfully and therefore vnsauorili here; lest perauenture for the lak and the noun hauyng at hond here of al that ouzte be seid to gidere for strengthing of the treuthe, enemyes myzten and wolden take colour that her parti is not so miche confoundid as it is, and that the contrarie partie to hem is not so weel proued as it is.

THE TENTH
PRINCIPAL
POINT. The
clergy take and
allow of oaths,
which are utterly
unlawful in all
cases. The law-
fulness of oaths
proved in Pe-
cock's *Filling of
the four tables*.

The x^e. principal gouernaunce azens which summe of the comoun peple erren is this: That the clergie in certain causis and maters swerith and makith othere persoones forto swere, and allowith weel that princis and her officers being vndir hem bothe swere and make othere men of the layfe forto swere. Certis summe of the lay peple holden this gouernaunce to be vnleeful, and azens the comaundement of God; and that it is vtirli vnleeful eny man forto swere. Neuertheles for as miche as this vnwijs holding is sufficientli proued to be vntrewe in *The book filling the iiij. tablis*, in the secunde parti, bi manye chapitris, therfore no thing therof here.

THE ELEVENTH
AND LAST POINT.
The clergy
wickedly allow
and approve of
war and of capi-
tal punishment
to be inflicted by
laymen under
certain circum-
stances. Vindi-

The xj^e. principal gouernaunce, azens which summe of the lay peple erren, is vsid in the lay partie and not in the clergie and is this: That men for her trespassis ben doon into her deeth. For summe of the lay partie holden that no man schulde be slein of eny other man for eny trespass, cause, or

perel; but al slauzter vpon man is reserued to God. CHAP. XV.
 And also thei holden that in no wise and in no caas cation of these matters to be found in Pecock's Filling of the four tables.
 bateil is leeful, neither bitwixe Cristen and Cristen,
 neither bitwixe Cristen and hethen. And thei blamen
 the clergie in this, that the clergie allowith and ap-
 proueth these gouernauncis to be doon bi the layfe.
 But for as myche as azens al this blamyng of the
 xj^e. principal gouernaunce it is procedid in othere
 placis of my writingis, as in the book clepid *The*
filling of the iiij. tablis, in therof the iiij^e. partie,
 therfore it is no neede for to make this book here
 therbi eny ouer greet bolk more than nede is.

And thus y eende this present book clepid *The* The conclusion. Laus Deo.
represser of ouer myche blamyng the clergie. For
 which¹ book, to thee, Lord God, be preising and
 thanking; and to alle the seid ouer myche vndir-
 nemers and blamers ful amendement. Amen.

¹ *Forwhich*, MS.

EXCERPTS
FROM
JOHN BURY'S ANSWER TO PECOCK'S
REPRESSOR,
ENTITLED
GLADIUS SALOMONIS.

Bibl. Bodl. Oxon. n. 108. (formerly 1960), 4to. ff. 63. sec. xv.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Capitula sequentis operis, quæ scriberentur post epistolam.

1. Continet primam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Quod non est officium Sacrae Scripturae fundare regimina, actus, leges, et veritates quæ natura vel ratio adinvenire potest.

2. Continet primam conclusionem Auctoris, conclusioni primæ Reginaldi contrariam, cum solutione argumentorum suorum.

3. Continet secundam probationem pro conclusione Reginaldi.

4. Continet improbationem et solutionem dictæ secundæ probationis.

5. Continet tertiam probationem pro conclusione Reginaldi.

6. Continet improbationem et solutionem ejus.

7. Continet quartam probationem pro conclusione Reginaldi.

8. Continet improbationem et solutionem ejus.

9. Continet quintam probationem pro conclusione ejus.

10. Continet improbationem et solutionem ejus:

11. Continet sextam probationem pro conclusione Reginaldi.
12. Continet improbationem et solutionem ejus.
13. Continet unum corollarium primæ conclusionis Reginaldi.
14. Continet impugnationem ejusdem corollarii, et solutionem ejus.
15. Continet tria exempla pro conclusione Reginaldi.
16. Continet primum exemplum pro conclusione Auctoris.
17. Continet secundum exemplum pro conclusione eadem.
18. Continet tertium exemplum pro eadem.
19. Continet secundam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Quamvis non pertineat Sacræ Scripturæ fundare dicta moralia, regimina, [&c.], nihil obstat, quin possit ea recitare.
20. Continet secundam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Quamvis Sancta Scriptura fundet moralia quæ dicta sunt, humano tamen more ratio naturalis hæc ipsa recitare potest.
21. Continet tertiam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Integrum officium et opus Sanctæ Scripturæ est fundare articulos fidei et recitare virtutes morales.
22. Continet tertiam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Proprium et speciale officium est Sacræ Scripturæ mores viatorum¹ reddere deiformes, et respondet Reginaldo.
23. Continet quartam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Non est officium moralis legis naturæ fundare aliquem articulum fidei.
24. Continet quartam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Non est officium moralis legis naturæ fundare

¹ i.e. of pilgrims, used for Christians generally. See Ducange, s. v.

aliquem articulum fidei. Ibi etiam probatur contra Reginaldum, quod lex naturæ et moralis philosophia non sunt idem.

25. Continet quintam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Quamvis neque lex rationis, neque exterior scriptura moralis [philosophiæ] possit fundare fidem, nihilominus libri catholicorum possunt articulos fidei recitare in Sancta Scriptura fundatos.

26. Continet quintam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Nihil obviat quin articuli fidei in lege naturæ philosophiaque morali recitari valeant.

27. Continet sextam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Officium est philosophiæ catholicæ exprimere veritates fundatas in lege naturæ et quasdam veritates fidei.

28. Continet sextam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Philosophia catholica homines Deo in moribus assimilat, et solutionem Reginaldi.

29. Continet septimam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Major pars divinæ legis non fundatur in Scriptura.

30. Continet septimam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Nulla pars divinæ legis Scripturæ fundamento caret.

31. Continet octavam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Nullus potest scire sufficienter legem Dei, nisi prius philosophiam moralem intellexerit.

32. Continet octavam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Aliquis potest scire totam legem Dei, etsi moralem philosophiam adquisitam nesciat.

33. Continet nonam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Nullus potest sufficienter intelligere Sacram Scripturam ubi de virtutibus moralibus agit, nisi prius in philosophia morali instruat.

34. Continet nonam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Aliquis potest intelligere Sacram Scripturam ubi de virtutibus moralibus agit, quanquam philosophiam adquisitam nesciat.

35. Continet decimam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Nullus absque philosophia morali utiliter Deo servire potest.

36. Continet decimam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Absque philosophia morali adquisita quis potest servire Deo.

37. Continet undecimam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Laici tenentur magnificare doctos in philosophia.

38. Continet duodecimam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Laici tenentur magnificare libros compositos in lingua eorum materna, et præsertim libros quos idem Reginaldus edidit.

39. Continet undecimam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Illiterati tenentur magnificare servos Dei per quos certissimas leges vivendi didicerunt.

40. Continet duodecimam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Quod illiterati viri summe detestarentur libros Reginaldi.

41. Continet tertiam decimam conclusionem Reginaldi, scilicet, Irrationabiliter quæritur ubi aliqua doctrina morum in Sancta Scriptura fundatur.

42. Continet tertiam decimam conclusionem Auctoris, scilicet, Quod non irrationabiliter quæritur ubi omnis doctrina morum fundatur in Scriptura.

BURY'S EPISTLE DEDICATORY TO ARCHBISHOP BOURCHIER.

VENERABILI in Christo patri ac domino, Domino Thomæ Dei gratia Cantuariensi Archiepiscopo,¹ totius Angliæ Primati, Ordinisque Fratrum Heremitarum Sancti Augustini in Anglia benignissimo conservatori, pauper ille filius suus ejusdem ordinis et provinciæ provincialis frater Johannes Bury, tantæ insignia reverentiæ, et a luporum morsibus gregem defendere Christi.

Bury entreats Bouchier to accept the work, which he had himself urged him to write.

Sæpe vobis ovilique vestro nova discrimina, clementissime patrum, nefandus ille Reginaldus Pecocke intulisse visus est. Laudes Deo! Cum peccatoribus super ecclesiæ dorsum fabricavit, nec prævaluit! Et enim datum est ei exercitium, non exterminium facere. Exacuit calamos, libellos pinxit, grandia etiam tonavit in cælum usque; sed tandem inter miseræ Babylonis colonos juste compertus est. Sacræ fidei neophytos veterana hujus forsân laus in ecclesia Dei corrupisset, si sanctorum canes altarium, micis cœlestis mensæ depasti, (quibus, ut Orosius ait in prologo *Ormentæ Mundi*, extraneos insequi mos est, non quia velut hostes oderint, sed quod zelent dominos suos), silenti adversus eum tacuissent² ore. Inter quos et me pusillulum vestra dominatio irritandum duxit, ne ceteris latrantibus solus perfide desidîæ reus arguerer. Intuens ergo librum ejus, quem *Repressorem* vocat, non singulas hæreses discutere, non errorum quæ in

Bury designs to go to the root of Pecock's errors, and to show the blasphemous tendency of his rationalistic scheme, which exalts reason above Scripture.

¹ Bourchier, MS. marginal note. | ² *tacuisse*, MS.

eo multa sunt annotare vestigia curavi, sed ad totius (ut arbitror) sui mali radicem, ubi rationis humanæ titulos in morum directione Scripturis Sanctis præfert, exquisiti studii libuit mittere securim. Quæ penes eum sacramentorum blasphemia, quæ divinorum mandatorum corruptio, quæ dispersio¹ petitionum, quis donorum contemptus, quæ credendorum articulorum confusio, sapiens iste aut ille, prout talentum accepit, videat. Mihi autem minimo o si daret Omnipotens solam Scripturarum injuriam posse vindicare et earum promissam patribus veritatem citra Jordanem rationis a longe contemplari! Progrediar tamen aliquatenus² accinctus, et particeps ero ex industria tanta bellantium. Securius enim animalis homo cum suis pecoribus moram habet, naturalis rationis intendens gregi, ubi divinos mores cultusque aptis sedibus collocasse studuit. Hoc in agone mecum certasse putaverim omnes, quotquot laureatos Scripturarum titulos asportarunt. Si enim "tractent fabrilis fabri," theologorum erit tantæ patronum nequitiae, tantæ præsumptionis Sathanam, digna lacerare calumnia. Non dixisse verum quidem, fallacemque impugnatores vicisse, paris meriti est. Nec tamen opusculum meum, quod *Gladius Salomonis* appellari potest, eo quod matrem virtutis non litigiosam rationem, sed pietatis Scripturam esse confirmet, vestris excidat manibus, o pater optime et felix pastor, quoadusque ejus parvuli sermones ad petram collidantur.

Praise of Bishop
Lowe's learning
and orthodoxy,
and hope ex-
pressed that he

Adest utique vobis ille reverendus in Christo dominus meus,³ Dominus Roffensis, stabilis columna in templo Domini, vir Benjamin, vir geminus⁴ ab ado-

¹ *dispertio*, MS., but perhaps *despectio* may be the true reading.

² *aliquotiens*, MS.

³ 'Frater Johannes Lowe,' MS. note.

⁴ *virii gemini*, MS. Lewis (*Life of Pecock*, p. 13) wrongly reads *genuinus*, from this MS. See p. 274. *Geminus* is used for *ambidexter*; see *Judg.* xx. 16.

lescentia sua, utraque manu ut dextra utens, qui nec sic institit Scripturis, ut humanitatis in se studia aliquando vacasse credantur, nec sic humanas litteras amplexatus est, quin semper eas divinis coëgerit subservire. Dum enim vobis turbulentissimi nostri regni atra perstrepunt negotia, quibus propitio Deo optanda proveniat tranquillitas, severus hic clemensque corrigat, interserat, aut dilaniet iudex, et conflet quasi aurum et argentum. Nec parcat quidem; parcat, inquam, sicut olim Augustinus ad Hieronymum scribere solitus est, si errantem me non reprehenderit. Fortassis arguet tantus pater quod in bove simul araverim et asino, et quod vestem contexerim ex lana linoque. Ad quod ego, Ne judaizare videar, Judæorum maledicta contemptui, sacramenta mihi neglectui sunt.

may not disdain to revise and correct Bury's work, if there are any errors in it. Anticipation of an objection that his book is an incongruous medley of English and Latin.

Est et aliud quod Reginaldum in suo vulgari scribentem me compulsi introducere. Mussitatores enim sui ubique ferme theologos et juristas nostros incusant quod scilicet perverse interpretentur, quæ in dicto Reginaldo non nisi rectissime denunciant exarata. Hac re cautior effectus non verbum e verbo trans tuli, sed velut exemplaria probant, quæ propriis annotavit digitis,¹ Anglicanam, prout ipse conscripsit linguam, eloquio litterarum² Latino immiscere volui. Sic nempe respondi "imprudenti viro juxta stultitiam" suam, ne sibi sapiens esse videatur. Nec tamen materna, qua usus est voce, studui respondere, ne sibi censeret esse consimilis.

Reasons for quoting Pecock's arguments in his own words and language.

Dividetur autem hoc opus in duos libros; primus, quandam disputationis formam induens, mores eos, ut dixi, quibus Deo vivitur, e Scripturarum Sanctarum visceribus ostendet exortos, simulque dudum formosam

Summary of Bury's first book of the *Gladius Salomonis*. Scripture and not reason is the true mother of

¹ This is a very important remark, which makes it highly probable that the great mass of the corrections in the Cambridge MS. are in the hand

of Reginald Pecock himself. See p. 264, *sqq.*

² *litteratorum*, MS.

the living and
divine morality.

rationis prolem, dum ignorantiae somno mater langueret oppressa, morticinam reperiri.

Summary of the
second book.
Pecock's argu-
ments for reason,
the pretended
mother, are null
and void.

Secundus liber, a nostri adversarii inchoans *Represore*, per singulos ejus qui occurrerint libros, quicquid singillatim iste pro parte conduxerit dormitantis rationis, nihil ad rem agere; sed infantem vivum, felicem scilicet morum vitam, pro quo contentio est, hic aut ibi per Scripturas prodiisse monstrabit.

Thus shall
Pecock's work be
condemned and
executed by
Solomon's sword.

In primo libro per gladium Salomonis, qui verbum Dei est, litigii dabitur sententia. In secundo latae sententiae erit executio.

The first book
now published;
the second
shall soon follow.

Primum semper corrigendus admonendusque tantae paternitatis offero reverentiis. Secundus, duce Deo, postveniet, si Salomon meus, si dominus meus et pater, cujus est in gladio Spiritus fidem tueri catholicam, cum benedictione sancta libellos adversarii mihi manifestare dignetur. Feliciter militet Christo Jesu athleta judexque credentium serenus Thomas et¹ pontifex, accinctus gladio super femur potentissime. Amen.

¹ Probably *et* should be cancelled.

EXCERPTS FROM BURY'S GLADIUS SALOMONIS.

CAP. I.

THE ferste conclusioun of Reynold Pecokke in hys book namyd *The Repressour* laboryng effectually ayens the liberte of Holy Scripture ys this: It longyth not to Holy Scripture, neither it is [his] part, for to grounde any gouernaunce, or dede or seruyse of God, or any lawe of God, or any trovthe whiche mannys resoone be nature may fynde, lerne, or knowe. This conclusioun he provith thus: Euery fundament shewith sufficiencytly by him selfe¹ for that thing to whom it is fundament; but Holy Scripture only shewith not this, for swiche lawes, vertues, and gouernaunces wyche mannys resoon may fynde.

Pecock's first conclusion against the authority of Scripture cited in his own words.

Wherefore Holy Scripture is not to swiche a suffycient fundament. Example of this: My place ys fovnded here and not in anothir place, for if it were in anothir stode, it shulde not be here. And in lyke maneere, if this trouthe and gouernaunce, that eche man shuld kepe mekenesse, were knowe be summe othir thyng than be Scripture, and as weel and as suffyciently as be Scripture, thilke gouernaunce or vertue were not grounded yn Holy Scripture. Also thus, ther may no thyng be fundament of a walle, or of a tre, or of an hovs, saf that up on wyche alle the hool substaunce of the wal, of the tre, or of the hovse stonde the, and ought of wiche oonly the wal, hovs, or tre cometh. Wherefore be lyke skele no thing is grovnd or fundament to any vertu, or conclusioun, gouernaunce, or trovthe, saf that up on

His examples in favour of the conclusion similarly cited.

¹ *the self*, MS.

whiche alon alle the gouernaunce, trovthe, or dede stondithe, and oughte of which alon alle the same trovthe and gouernaunce comethe.

His reason for the conclusion similarly cited.

And that doom of resoone dothe so, I prove thus : What euere thing doom of resoone doothe as fully and as parfithely as Holy Scripture it dooth, Holy Scripture it doth not alone ; but so it is, that what so euere lernyng Holy Scripture yevethe vp on ony of the seid gouernaunces, trovthis, and vertues of Goddys lawe, into whos fyndyng, lernyng, and kunnyng, mannys resoone may come, mannys resoone may and kan yeve the same kunnyng, as experience shewith. Wherefore Holy Scripture is not ground to hem.¹

CAP. II.

Thirteen catholic conclusions shall be made against Pecock's thirteen heretical conclusions contained in the first book of his *Repressor*.

CUM nuper ille Reginaldus Pecokke Cicestriensis directionem et gubernationem morum humanorum a Scripturis Sanctis diripiens, humanæ rationis tribueret iudicio, tredecim conclusiones ad hujusmodi erroris probationem in *Repressore* suo adducit ; nos autem, duce Deo, catholica veritate subnixi æquali conclusionum numero adversus eum disputabimus :

Bury's first conclusion. It is the office of Scripture to found ordinances, truths, and laws of divine service, even although they may be discovered by the light of natural reason. Reason of the conclusion.

Contra primam ejus conclusionem nostra prima hæc conclusio statuitur : Convenit Sacræ Scripturæ, eique a Deo speciale deputatum est officium fundandi, scilicet, regimina, actus, leges, veritates, et obsequia divina, etiam quæ humana ratio naturalis de se adinvenire et edocere potest. Pro hac conclusione sic arguitur : Illius scientiæ proprium officium est fundare

¹ Compare with this pp. 10-12 of this edition, from which it will plainly appear that little use can be safely made of such loose quotations as these of Bury's for settling the text of Pecock's work.

omnem gubernationem et actum dirigentes homines in obsequium Dei, quæ a Deo sufficienter ad hoc ordinata est, et ab eo nomen accepit; sicut grammatica fundat omnem congruitatem, quia doctrinam totius congruitatis continet et ab ea nomen accepit. Sed Scriptura Sancta, quæ theologia dicitur, sufficienter per Deum ordinata est ad gubernationes et omnes actus hominum dirigendos in ipsum, nomenque ab eo accepit. Ergo hujusmodi actuum et gubernationum sive regiminum fundatio, quanquam aliunde per naturalem rationem inveniri valeant, ipsius erit Scripturæ Sanctæ proprium, speciale, et primum ei deputatum officium. Nempe theologia sermo de Deo dicitur.

Quod autem in ea mores hominum sufficienter edoceantur, ex illo patet, Eccles. xii., ubi Salomon aiebat: *Verba sapientum, (ait,) quasi stimuli et quasi clavi in altum defixi, quæ per magistrorum concilium data sunt a pastore uno. His amplius, fili mi, ne requiras.* Si enim supra sapientum verba, quæ a pastore uno illo data sunt, (de quo Paulus [Heb. i.]: *Multifarie multisque modis olim Deus loquens patribus in prophetis, novissime diebus istis locutus est nobis in Filio,*) nihil amplius quærendum est, ergo hæc verba sapientum ab ipso pastore data ad directionem hominum ordinata sufficiunt. Sufficit¹ quidem scientiæ fundanti conclusiones principia manifestare, per quæ singulæ conclusiones possunt deduci contentæ in eadem, et si numerum earum singillatim non tradat. Descendentibus a generalissimis ad specialissima jubet Plato quiescere, inquit Porphyrius;² principia autem omnium actuum dirigentium homines in Deum aut sunt virtutes naturales perficientes homines modo humano; aut supernaturales, ut dona et virtutes, quæ theologicæ, et

God ordained
Scripture for
this very end,
and that suffi-
ciently.

Proof of this
from Scripture
and from a consi-
deration of the
contents of Scrip-
ture.

¹ sufficiunt, MS.

² Μέχρι τῶν εἰδικωτάτων ἀπὸ τῶν
γενικωτάτων κατιόντας παρεκλείετο

ὁ Πλάτων παύεσθαι. Porphyr. *Isag.*
c. 2. § 35 (int. Aristot. Op. p. 452.
Ed. Weise.)

quæ infusæ dicuntur eosdem perficientes modo divino. Sufficiens autem de utroque genere virtutum per quædam specialia principia in Veteri et Novo Testamento traditur, in Deuteronomio scilicet, in libris Salomonis, in Evangelio, et Epistolis Canonicis; quare sufficiens in Sacra Scriptura omnium actuum dirigibilium in Deum sufficiens fundatio reperitur.

Peacock's first conclusion is consequently false.

Conclusio ergo adversarii Scripturarum neganda est, scilicet quod non pertineat Sacræ Scripturæ neque ejus pars est fundare gubernationem aliquam actumve aut obsequium divinum seu legem Dei quamcunque aut veritatem, quam scilicet humana ratio per naturam invenire, addiscere, aut cognoscere valet.

His argument that Scripture is not a sufficient foundation of morals is invalid, and his illustration drawn from the foundation of a house is irrelevant.

Ubi autem sic arguit: Omne fundamentum ostendit sufficiens pro eo, cujus est fundamentum; sed Sacra Scriptura non ostendit sufficiens pro dictis gubernationibus, actibus, veritatibus, &c.; ergo Sacra Scriptura eis non est sufficiens fundamentum: dicendum est quod minor hujus primæ probationis suæ falsa sit, eo quod Scriptura Sancta de se sufficiens ostendit naturam omnis regiminis, veritatis, et virtutis, dirigentium homines in Deum. Ad exemplum ubi sic habet: Domus mea sic hic fundata est, quod non alibi fundari potest; nam si alibi, ergo non hic: a pari, si virtus humilitatis aliunde et æque sufficiens cognita esset sicut per Scripturam ipsam, humilitas non diceretur fundari in Sacra Scriptura: dupliciter respondetur primo quod incongrue sumptum est, secundo quod ejus applicatio frivola et vana judicatur. Longe quidem aliter de fundatione domuum et scientiarum fundatione disserendum est. Nam fundatio scientiarum rationis est, altera vero rei sive loci dicitur. Una autem res corporalis nullatenus in diversis locis fundabitur. Res considerationis vero et rationis totiens aliud et aliud respicit fundamentum, quotiens circa diversos modos sciendi admittit alterationem. Exemplum: Corpus mobile visibile et resuscitandum post

mortem quamvis secundum corpulentam substantiam res una sit, nil obstat quin secundum considerationem ad alterius et alterius scientiæ foundationem pertineat. Eo¹ enim quod corpus in geometria, eo quod mobile in philosophia naturali, eo quod visibile in perspectiva et in eo quod resuscitandum in theologia fundabitur. Res ergo eadem scilicet in diversis fundatur scientiis; dum tamen diversarum scientiarum sibi formales modi conveniant.

Unde cum philosophia moralis humanis de moribus agat, de vitiis, de virtutibus, (de ordinatione scilicet et de deordinatione hominis in Deum,) modo tamen imperfecto et humano; de eisdemque moribus primo in Sacra Scriptura sumantur evidentiæ certissimæ, quemadmodum septima nostra declarabit conclusio; regimina actusque vitæ moralis utrobique fundabuntur, sed non eodem modo. Evidet hoc ipsum, si navalis scientiæ et astrologicæ consideremus terminos.

Astrologia cursus siderum subtili indagine, quos etiam navalis ignobili quodam et rudi scrutinio metitur. Motus igitur siderum, facies et aspectus astrorum ad utrumque referuntur. Et sicut de motibus astrorum et navalis et astronomia agunt, ita de humilitate et aliis virtutibus Sacra Scriptura et philosophia moralis humana pertractant. Idcirco etiam addidi "humana," ob differentiam ipsius perfectæ philosophiæ moralis quæ in sacris literis continetur et proprie "divina" appellatur. Harum utraque² rationi nititur non tamen ut fundamento, hanc autem rationem id ipsum quod legem naturæ describit adversarius. Sic utique ratio non dicit vim aut potentiam quæ contra irrationalem dividitur, sed est ipsa lex naturæ humanæ aut inclinatio in bonum naturale, consequens formam hominis, de qua in septima nostra dicetur conclusione.

Morals are founded in Scripture and in philosophy, but in different ways.

An illustration drawn from astronomy and nautical sciences.

¹ Perhaps *in* should be read before every *eo*, or before none.

² *utique*, MS.

Reason or law of nature is used in two senses, according as man's original or fallen state is contemplated. Man's original reason goes along with the philosophy of Scripture.

Et ratio sic dicta dupliciter intelligitur. Nam ipsa lex naturæ humanæ proprie est ipsa ejusdem naturæ inclinatio a lege æterna derivata, ad cujus similitudinem primus homo conditus erat, aut ad quam homines per poenitentiam reparantur, et hæc lex naturæ sive naturalis ratio in diligentibus Deum et eum timentibus tantum reperitur. De quolibet enim vitioso Psalmista ait [Ps. xlviii.]: *Homo cum in honore esset non intellexit, comparatus est jumentis insipientibus, et similis factus est illis*; et Ecclesiastes xii.: *Deum time, et omnia mandata ejus observa: hoc est omnis homo*; id est, ad hoc primo conditus erat omnis homo. Aliter lex naturæ seu ratio naturalis ipsa solet vocitari inclinatio naturæ humanæ in bonum, naturam hominis consequens generaliter, postquam peccato reperitur obnoxia. Ratio secundum primum modum illi philosophiæ morali semper concomitatur, quam Scripturæ revelatæ per Deum commendant.

Man's fallen reason gives birth to an imperfect moral philosophy.

Declinantibus autem a Dei similitudine hominibus et somniantium more, in bonum nunc naturali magis appetitu quam electione inclinatis, ratio secundo modo dicta quandam philosophiam moralem parturit, cui itidem ipsa ignorantia vulnerata debile supponitur fundamentum. Altera autem philosophia invariabilem certitudinem ex suo fundamento (Sacra scilicet Scriptura per Deum revelata) obtinet.

Further remarks on Peacock's illustration from the foundation of a house. As a house in a street is founded both in the street and in the city of which it is a part, so morals are grounded in the law of nature and on Scripture of which it is a part.

Quam insuper vana sit applicatio exempli foundationis domus in loco uno ad foundationem regiminum moralium in ratione tantum, qua nititur probare Sacram Scripturam non valere fundare mores humanos, præsertim cum ipsi juxta eum in ratione fundentur, ex tribus manifestari potest. Primo quia generaliter simile non est de foundatione domuum et scientiarum foundatione, ut diximus. Nec enim quidquam concludit adversarius per exemplum illud, sed simplices et illiteratos viros tantum fallere molitus est, qui inter fundamentum scientiarum et fundamentum domuum quod intersit non agnoscunt. Secundo, quia ex special

prærogativa Scripturæ Sanctæ datum est quod sicut spiritualis vir omnes dijudicat et a nemine judicatur, ita et hæc omnium morum (sive revelatorum per Deum sive industria humana reparabilium) causas principiaque examinat. Et tertio, quia Sancta Scriptura potest in id quod majus est, utpote in foundationem virtutum infusarum, idcirco etiam in minus valet operari, scilicet in foundationem adquisitarum. Unde contra exemplum adversarii sic argui posset. Suppono quod locus partialis et locus totalis non sunt duo loca. Exemplum: Civitas Damascenorum et vicus ejus, qui vocatur rectus, non sunt duo loca. Et idcirco domus Judæ, in qua Paulus morabatur, sic erat in vico fundata, ut quoniam vicus ejus erat in civitate, ex consequenti de necessitate eadem domus in civitate Damascenorum fundabatur.¹ Suppono insuper quod Sacra Scriptura triplicem legem continet, scilicet, naturæ, synagogæ, et ecclesiæ. Naturæ, a principio ejus usque in Exodum. Synagogæ, ab Exodo usque ad Evangelium. Lex autem ecclesiæ Christi et apostolorum continet doctrinam. His suppositis, sic possum invehi. Sicut domus ædificata in vico ad vicum et ad civitatem, ita traditiones et doctrinæ morales quæ in lege naturæ fundantur ad eandem legem et ad Sanctam Scripturam, cujus dicta lex naturæ prima pars est. Sed domus fundata in vico civitatis in ipsa etiam civitate fundatur, ergo traditiones et doctrinæ morales in lege naturæ fundatæ etiam in Sacra Scriptura fundantur. Quod concedimus, intelligendo id fundari in aliqua ejus parte, quod in toto admittit foundationem.

Ad aliam probationem ubi dicit, quod nihil fundat domum, murum, aut arborem, nisi id solum super quo tota substantia domus, muri, vel arboris collocatur; ergo a pari, nihil fundat scientiam morum, nisi id

Pecock's assertion, that nothing is the foundation of any thing upon which it is not wholly built, examined.

¹ The sense requires *fundatur*, but very probably the author himself wrote the text as edited.

super quo solum mores ædificantur, quod non de Sacra Scriptura verificari potest. Sacra Scriptura, quoad res corporalis, loco circumscribitur, et idcirco fundata localiter proprio et singulari metitur fundamento: res autem, prout animæ considerationibus subjacet, in omnibus illis fundatur scientiis, in quibus secundum modos earundem formales quasdam et differentes mensurationes obtinet, quandoque similitudo non procedit. Nam etsi de vitiis et virtutibus in philosophia morali humana et in philosophia morali divina mentio fiat, dispariter tamen, ut supra diximus. Nec igitur incongruum aut inconueniens est rationi, cum veritates morales scientificæ et intelligibiles res sint atque considerationibus subjectæ, quod tota earum substantia, etsi non totaliter, in una et alia scientia fundetur. Planius de hoc dicetur in fine tertiæ decimæ conclusionis.

EX CAP. IV.

(Compare REPRESS. pp. 12—18).

It is false that Scripture enjoins justice without describing it.

Moral virtues are set down in Scripture both in word and in action.

INSUPER quod ait, Scripturas velle immo et imperare justitiam exhiberi inter proximos, non tamen quid ipsa sit describunt, verum non est.

Nam justitia et cæteræ virtutes, quas philosophia moralis et humana solo describit sermone, in Scripturis Sanctis sermone et opere comprobantur. Ser-mone diffinitur justitia et exercitanda infertur operi ubi dicitur: *Reddite quæ sunt Cæsaris Cæsari, et, quæ sunt Dei Deo*, Luc. 5; et Marc. 12; et ad Rom. 13: *Reddite omnibus debita; cui tributum, tributum; cui¹ vectigal, vectigal; cui timorem, timorem; cui honorem, honorem*. Item Lev. 19: *Nolite facere aliquid iniquum in iudicio, in regula, in pondere, et men-*

¹ et cui, MS., badly and against the Vulgate.

sura. Statera justa et æqua sint pondera, justus modius, æquusque sextarius. Quid etiam hæc omnia aliud sonant, quam quod brevi sermone Philosophus exarat, dicens:¹ *Justitia est virtus reddens unicuique quod suum est?* Non diceret ergo adversarius justitiam et cæteras virtutes per Scripturas Sanctas non diffiniri, cum per eas facillime et actuum exemplo et vocum annotatione valeant agnosci. Ubi autem in confirmationem sic arguit: Omnis res fundata dependens est a suo fundamento, ita ut absque suo fundamento esse nequeat, sed combustis aut penitus destructis Scripturis Sanctis doctrinæ morales remanerent; igitur ipsæ doctrinæ a Scripturis Sanctis foundationem non admittunt: quid quod absque Scripturis Sanctis perfecta nulla reperitur moralis doctrina, sicut absque astronomiæ consideratione de ortu et occasu stellarum [et] planetarum conjunctionibus nullus perfecte agat? Verumtamen sicut pastores nauclerique, quibus usus et non scientia astrorum est, de eisdem etiam certitudinaliter sed non scientificè pronunciant, ita philosophis naturali edoctis ratione quis vivendi modus conveniat, quisve disconveniat evenire contingit. Nam etsi ratio naturalis et humana multiplicibus tenebrata ignorantiae nebulis omnem perfecte vivendi modum non aspiciat, hunc tamen aut illum modum æque posse consequi experimentaliter perspicuum est.

Sed adversarius quidem doctrinam moralem perfecte remanere intelligit combustis aut destructis Scripturis, alioquin nihil concluderet in argumento; hoc autem omnino negamus: *Dicant*, (sicut ait pater sanctus Augustinus super Johannem homilia,²) *Pagani, Judæi, vel hæretici, Bene vivimus. Si per ostium non intrant,*

It is false that the doctrine of morals would remain in its integrity if the Scriptures were burnt.

¹ Comp. Aristot. *Rhet.* Lib. I. c. 9.

² Aug. *Tract. in Joh.* xlv. § 2, 3,

tom. iii. p. 432. Ed. Ant. 1700.

Bury's quotation extends to the end of § 3.

*quid eis prodest unde gloriantur? &c. * * * **
 Ex his Sancti Augustini sermonibus intelligi datur omnem recte vivendi doctrinam a Scripturis Sanctis, quibus Christus ostium est, velut proprio dependere fundamento: sed nec eam perfectam doctrinam morum posse dici, quæ soli naturali rationi innititur, quam ipsi pagani et hæretici licet inaniter gloriantur se possidera.

EX CAP. VI.

(Compare REPRESS. pp. 18—20).

Pecock's assertion that the Scripture did not exist before Abraham is false. The unwritten essence of Scripture commenced with the first positive law given to man.

HÆC autem probatio sic impugnatur. Sicut Sacra Scriptura pro parte Evangeliorum fundat sufficienter omnia quæ respiciunt novam legem gratiæ, et pro parte mandatorum ea quæ concernunt jura legis Mosaicæ, ita pro parte Genesis ea quæ concernunt circumstantias legis naturæ; igitur sicut de se et ex se sufficit ad duas ultimas, fundando eas scilicet, ita et ad primam. Sed dicit hic adversarius Scripturam mandatorum non incepisse nisi in Abraham et Moyse, et idcirco eam non posse fundare vitam moralem eorum qui præcesserunt. Contra sic: Hoc argumentum non concludit, Scriptura mandatorum non erat data Judæis ante tempora Abrahæ vel Moysis, igitur ante eorum tempora Scriptura Sancta non erat: sicut nec valet sic arguere: Lux meridiana non est priusquam sol ad austrum declinaverit, igitur nec lux diurna est priusquam sol ad austrum declinaverit. A negatione partis non inferitur negatio totius, in successivis præsertim. Hic dicit adversarius Scripturam Sanctam et Vetus Testamentum a circumcissione Abrahæ primam traxisse originem, ita quod simpliciter ante Abraham non erat Scriptura Sacra aut Vetus Testamentum. Contra suppono tecum quod Sacra Scriptura et Vetus incepit Testamentum ubi prima lex

positiva oriebatur, ex sola liberalitate Dei hominibus concessa.

Ex hac suppositione sic invehi posset. Assignatis The original law of nature was such a law, imposed by the mere will of God on Adam: consequently the Scripture is as old as Adam. duobus quæ secundum ordinem participant aliquid eis commune, non dicemus commune illud primo cum posteriori in ordine illo, sed cum priori exordium sumpsisse. Sit hoc exemplum nostrum: Aurora et meridies ordinate participant lucem, et idcirco non a meridie, sed ab Aurora prima lux procedit. Cum igitur lex naturæ et lex circumcisionis ordinate incedant, hoc eis commune habentes, quod utraque sit lex positiva ex sola liberalitate Dei concessa; (nam quod primi homines clara cognitione Creatoris et creaturarum mox conditi perfusi sunt, non naturæ legibus, sed sola ejus voluntate actum est;) igitur legi naturæ prius conveniet, quod sit talis lex positiva ex sola liberalitate Dei hominibus concessa, quam legi circumcisionis; et per consequens cum tu dicas cum tali lege Scripturam Sanctam et Vetus inchoare Testamentum, non a lege circumcisionis sed naturæ fateberis Scripturam et Vetus Testamentum incepisse. * * *

Igitur a primo credente usque ad ultimum credentem Thus the law of believers has been always one: viz., Holy Scripture. una erit lex; lex ecclesiæ credentium Scriptura Sancta est; igitur omnium credentium, nedum a lege circumcisionis, sed a lege naturæ inchoante, una erit Scriptura Sancta.

After saying that Adam learned the indissolubility of marriage and other matters by divine revelation, and not by the light of nature, for confirmation of which view he refers to Augustine, *Sup. Gen. ad litt.*, and that Abel and the antediluvians were instructed in the same way "multis aliis virtutibus specialibus, quibus si ratio naturalis quæ omnibus inerat hominibus jecisset fundamentum, proculdubio ab omnibus fuissent approbatæ," he proceeds thus: Ad tertium igitur argumentum, quo probare nititur suam primam conclusionem, ubi sic arguit: Lex naturæ super quam The moral virtues are rather rooted than founded in the natural reason, which is common to all men. This is liable to error unless aided by Divine illumination.

fundantur virtutes morales non fundantur in Sacra Scriptura, quia lex naturæ erat priusquam Vetus aut Novum scriberetur Testamentum; quare sequitur Scripturam Sanctam non esse fundamentum virtutibus istis moralibus, dicendum est quod in lege naturæ quædam virtutes morales radicari possunt, sed non fundari proprie. Nam sicut radix vivacitatem suam a fundamento sortitur, et imperfecta est, nisi suo adhæserit fundamento; ita lex naturæ aut in vitium declinat, aut non dirigit perfecte in virtutem, nisi quatenus suffragetur per sanctas Dei illuminationes. Unde quidam prophetarum aiebat: ¹ *Imperfectum meum viderunt oculi tui, et in libro tuo omnes scribentur.* Quasi diceret, "Cum oculi tui, Deus meus, imperfectum legis naturæ meæ vidissent, præbuiisti subsidium, librum Scripturæ proferens, cujus præceptis et institutionibus indelibiliter humana et mortalis vita describeretur." Nec valet arguties adversarii.

The Old Testament existed before it was written, as the rules of grammar and other sciences existed in use before they were committed to writing.

Nempe hoc antecedens verum est: Lex naturæ erat priusquam Vetus scriberetur aut Novum ² Testamentum. Consequens nihilominus abnegatur, scilicet, quod Sacra Scriptura non est fundamentum eorum quæ in lege naturæ continentur. Nam etsi lex fuerit ante Scripturam Veteris Testamenti, non tamen præcessit Vetus Testamentum. Hunc vero modum dicendi ex duobus verificamus: primo ex testimonio ipsius adversarii dicentis Vetus Testamentum in circumcisione incepisse Abrahæ, cum nihilominus lex circumcisionis et ipsa circumcisio usque ad tempora Moysis descripta non fuerit; igitur per eum Vetus Testamentum prius erat quam id ipsum testamentum describeretur. Secundo hoc ipsum docet experientia. Ante enim grammatica erat, et postmodo literis dabatur ad memoriam; prius etiam geometria in mensurationibus suis exquisita scriptoribus mundi exinde operandi et laborandi circa

¹ Ps. cxxxviii. (Vulg.)

| ² *vetus*, MS

se perpetuam exhibuit disciplinam. Immo, juxta Hugonem¹ in suo *Didascalicon* lib. 1. c. penultimo, omnes scientiæ prius erant in usu quam in arte. Unde artes generaliter ab usu venerunt. Propterea dicimus, quod Vetus Testamentum et Sacra Scriptura prius erant quam scriptorum calamis et digitis exararentur.

EX CAP. XII.

(Compare REPRESS., pp. 24, 25.)

FALSA igitur calumnia tua est, o æmule Legis et Scripturarum, ubi mores humanos regiminaque moralis vitæ in Sacris Literis dicis non fundari. Formetur sic ratio. Sacra Scriptura de se et secundum institutionem sui fundat omne id quod de se ordinatur ad salutem vitæ humanæ, quæ est finis intentus in ea, dicente Paulo, "[ut] per patientiam et consolationem Scripturarum spem habeamus." Exhibitio autem virtutum per quas passiones temperantur et fugantur, aliæque institutiones morales ordinantes ad Deum directe hanc operantur salutem. Quare sequitur Scripturam Sanctam de se et ex sui institutione hujusmodi virtutes fundare. Nec asperneris hoc cum fidelibus fideliter humiliterque concipere, qui grandia quædam frustra te invenisse iudicio tuæ rationis gloriaris, quanquam pauca sint (ut dicis) quæ in Scripturis de morali vita efferantur. "In paucis," ait Philosophus,² "vis³ major:" "multitudo enim et numerus dignitatem non arguunt." Nam et plebs ignobilis ubique multa est: nobilium autem personarum rarior admodum reperitur numerus. Erant, ait Scriptura,⁴ Salomoni "sexaginta reginæ," sed "concubinæ octoginta, atque vilium adolescentularum

Pecock's argument that Scripture is not the foundation of moral virtues, because it only mentions them briefly, refuted. It is the office of Scripture to lay the foundation of all that concerns man's salvation and consequently of moral virtues. The smallness of a foundation is no objection to its reality: various illustrations of this.

¹ i. e. Hago de S. Victore.

² Compare Aristot. *Polit.* lib. vii. c. 4; but it is by no means certain that this is the place alluded to.

³ *vis*, MS.

⁴ The quotation is wholly false: see 1 Kings xi. 3.

"numerus non erat." Quid enim compendiosius dici potest: *Diliges Dominum Deum tuum ex toto corde tuo et proximum tuum sicut teipsum?* Et tamen "in his duobus," ait Dominus Jesus veritatis magister et veritas, "tota lex pendet et prophetæ." Ecce quam multa sunt quæ fundantur, et quam parvæ quantitatis, etsi virtutis plurimæ id sit in quo fundantur. Insuper multitudinem inspicere ab oriente et occidente credentium populorum, modicamque eorum foundationem simul attendas. Istis Paulus dicit: *Vos estis cives sanctorum, et domestici Dei: superædificati super fundamentum apostolorum et prophetarum.* (Ad Eph. 2.) Immo apostoli et prophetæ plures erant, in uno tamen omnes et indivisibili fundamento sunt collocati. *Fundamentum*, inquit Paulus, *aliud nemo potest ponere, præter id quod positum est, Dominus noster Jesus Christus.* (1 ad Cor. 3.)

A great number of moral conclusions may be based on a few Scriptural principles. Illustrations of this.

Sane auctoritatibus his simul et ratione congrua persuaderi potest conclusionum moralium innumeram multitudinem ex paucis Sanctæ Scripturæ posse dependere principiis. Neque principiorum paucitas indignitatem sed gloriam potius et nobilitatem conclusionibus præfert. Sufficit enim fundamento considerationis et virtutum, quod omnia virtualiter complectatur, quæ super id fundanda sunt. At sic in hac parte Scripturæ, *De omni ligno Paradisi comede, de ligno autem scientiæ boni et mali ne comedas*, fundantur justitia obediendo Deo, prudentia acquiescendo ejus præcepto, fortitudo respuendo viriliter vetitum, temperantia cibum sumendo permissum. Sicut quidem in hujus unius violatione mandati omnium vitiorum perniciosa fundata structura est; ita generaliter quedam virtutum omnium in hujus exhibitione fundatio reperitur. Qui enim resolvit totam legem et prophetas in hoc verbum *Diliges*, profecto de facili in hoc verbum, *De omni ligno quod est in Paradiso*, et in moralem vitam Adæ omnem formæ vivendi

modum moralem resolvet, utpote ex qua omnis, ante quam nulla homini vita consistebat.

* * * * *

EX CAP. XIV.

(Compare REPRESS., pp. 25, 26.)

CUM igitur Sanctæ Scripturæ sit opus libros vitæ singulos singulis animabus conficere, merito tibi reluctamur, dicentes quodcunque regimen juris naturalis verius in exteriori Scriptura Bibliæ fore exaratum, quam in interiori libro animæ aut humani cordis. *Verba*, ait Dominus Jesus, *quæ ego loquor vobis spiritus et vita sunt.* Joh. 6.

Pecock's corollary is false, which affirms that natural justice is more truly written in man's soul than in Scripture.

* * * * *

Occasione autem secundæ partis corollarii tui pauca habeo adversus te. Dicis enim si discordia apparens oriat^r inter verba exterioris Scripturæ et judicium rationis, ipsa scripta sic exponenda, glossanda, et interpretanda sunt, ut cum judicio rationis concordent, judicium autem rationis ducendum non est, ut cum eis conveniat Scripturis. Quis autem te sic blasphemantem et ore rabidissimo¹ sanctam violantem veritatem amplius tolerabit? Annon Scripturæ Auctor, cui omnipotentia proprium est, quidquam² aggredi perficereque valebit, quo imbecillitatem nostræ rationis exsuperet? Intuere pessimos patres tuos, quibus nimium naturalis ratio complacuit, Christum audientes dicentem: *Nisi manducaveritis carnem Filii Hominis et biberitis ejus sanguinem, non habebitis vitam in vobismetipsis. Durus est* (aiunt), *hic sermo, quis potest sustinere eum?* Omnes enim quotquot discordiam inter verba Christi et judicium

Those who make reason the standard by which to judge of Scripture are like those who murmured against Christ's words at Capernaum.

¹ rapidissimo, MS.

² quanquam, MS.

rationis sentientes, iudicio rationis et non Christi sermonibus favent, ex illis sunt qui abierunt retrorsum.

All antiquity, sacred and profane, denounces such a mode of dealing with divine mysteries.

Augustini, Ambrosii, Hieronymi, Gregorii, Hugonis, Boëthii, Trismegisti, Ciceronis, et Platonis sententias te velim audire, ut quam perversitatis obliquitas grandis sit, divina mysteria humano more velle pertractare, vel invitus discas.

After quoting the first eight of these authors, he proceeds thus:—*Et Plato in Timæo: Credamus his quæ apud prius sæculum. Certe deorum filiis et nepotibus non credi satis irreligiosum est.*¹ Et alibi introducit Plato ita colloquentem Socrati: *Memento tam me qui loquor, quam vos qui iudicatis homines esse; atque in rebus ita sublimibus mediocrem explanationem magni cujusdam esse hominis*² *laboris.* SOCR.³ *Omnes tibi, o Timæe, veniam largimur volentes. Ecce Plato in rebus humanis ut homo loquens veniam precatur et obtinet. In rebus vero majoribus Deorum filiis se, ut tu, non præfert, sed eis non credi satis putat irreligiosum. Filii Deorum et nepotes homines sunt Sancto Spiritu inflammati quibus dicitur: Ego dixi, Dii estis et filii Excelsi omnes; per hos enim ad nos usque, nedum quod de Deo, sed et de his moribus qui ad Deum ordinant, Scriptura Sancta mundum edocuit. Et quomodo tu adversus multitudinem hanc, discordantem rationi humanæ, Scripturam Sanctam ejusdem rationis correctioni per glossulas quasdam et interpretationes subici præsumes?*

¹ Ἀδύνατον θεῶν πασὶν ἀπιστεῖν, καίπερ ἦεν τε εἰκότων καὶ ἀναγκαίων ἀποδείξεων λέγουσιν, ἀλλ' ὥς οικεῖα φάσκουσιν ἀπαγγέλλειν, ἐπομένους τῷ νόμῳ πιστευτέον. Plat. Tim. p. 40. D.E. Ed. Steph. The quotation, it

will be observed, is very loosely made, as is also the following.

² Id. p. 29. c. D.

³ omis, MS.

⁴ Seneca, MS.

CAP. XXX.

(Compare REPRESS., pp. 39-42.)

SEPTIMA conclusio est ista: Nulla pars divinæ legis hominibus datæ Scripturæ fundamento carere potest; sed et quantumcunque in corde hominis lex naturæ descripta sit, firmitus tamen et certius de ea per Scripturam Sanctam, quam per iudicium rationis fideles agnoscunt. Probatio primæ partis in conclusione est hoc. Omnis lex divina data homini ad evangelicam legem, ad legem Moysis, et ad legem naturæ reducitur; quælibet autem istarum legum in Sacra fundatur Scriptura; igitur nulla pars divinæ legis homini datæ Scripturæ fundamento carere potest.

Bury's seventh conclusion: No part of God's law to man is without its foundation in Scripture. Proof of the conclusion. The law of nature, of Moses, and of Christ, which comprise all God's laws given to man, are founded in Scripture.

De lege naturæ instantiam facit adversarius, sed et qualiter hæc lex in Scriptura fundetur, per primam conclusionem et secundam sufficienter arbitror declaratum esse: ut autem secunda pars conclusionis elucescat, quid lex ipsa naturæ sit, quid lex humana sit, et demum quid sit id ipsum quod dicitur lex divina, qualiterque leges istæ adinvicem ordinentur, notandum est.

For further proof that this assertion is true, definitions of natural, human, and divine law shall be added.

* * * * *

Ipsum . . . lumen naturalis justitiæ, quo universaliter discernimus inter bonum et malum nihil aliud est quam ipsa impressio luminis divini, qua rationalis creatura signata est. Hoc ipsum etiam lex naturæ rationalis appellatur, secundum quam generalis quædam insita est et regularis inclinatio naturæ rationali, qua statutam et limitatam suis viribus perfectionem posset attingere, si non aliunde ad contaminationem anima rationalis ipsa etiam contaminaretur atque fœdaretur; lex autem humana est quoddam dictamen rationis practicæ.

Natural and human law defined.

Differt igitur lex humana a lege naturæ in duobus. Primo in hoc quod lex naturæ præcedit in homine omnem actum rationis, lex vero humana ipsius rationis practicæ dictamen et sententiam subsequitur. Nempe

These laws differ in two respects: viz., in the order of their origin, and in the distinctness of their definitions.

cum lex naturæ ipsa sit inclinatio, qua creatura rationalis apta est ferri in proprium finem, erit de ea loquendum, quemadmodum de quacunque inclinatione formam naturalem sequente loqui consuevimus. Idcirco enim aliter forma ignis, aliter forma aquæ agit, quia alia inclinatio naturalis hanc, alia hanc formam comitatur. Mediat igitur inclinatio naturalis inter formam et actum; quasi posterior forma, quia est accidens ejus, et tamen prior actu, eo quod ipsius principium consistat.

* * * *

Secundo lex naturæ et lex humana distinguuntur, in eo quod lex [naturæ] inclinat ad discretionem boni et mali in genere et confuse; lex vero humana determinat de bono et malo distincte et secundum aliquas suas species.

* * * *

Divine law necessary to be added to these on four accounts, and first because human and natural laws are too weak to direct man to eternal happiness.

Præter has dictas leges, naturalem scilicet et humanam, necesse fuit propter quatuor divinam requiri legem ad directionem humanorum actuum. Primo¹ si homo ordinaretur solum ad bonum proportionatum suis viribus, non esset ei opus alicujus directivi supra legem naturalem aut humanam; sed finis beatitudinis improporcionatus est nobis; idcirco [necesse] fuit ut illius legis divinæ scilicet doctrina traderetur, per quam mentes nostræ ad hujus boni supernaturalis consecutionem redderentur dispositæ.

Also because of the uncertainty of human judgment.

Secunda causa est, propter incertitudinem humani judicii præcipue de contingentibus et particularibus circa quæ opiniones et diversitates sectarum oriuntur. Adeo enim circa talia iudicium rationis variatur, ut non solum aliter iste, aliter ille sentiat esse agendum, sed et quod uni hodie videatur honestum, cras turpe et vitandum putetur.

* * * *

And because human and natural laws are imperfect and incomplete.

Tertio autem lex divina necessaria nobis est, quia lex humana et naturalis non sufficiunt. De his enim

¹ prima, MS.

non potest sufficienter in lege statui, de quibus per eandem legem non potest judicari. Constat autem neminem perfici habitu virtutis, nisi quem interioris et exterioris hominis laudanda dispositio commendaret, quanquam ipsa portio interior quasi totius boni promereatur laudem. *Omnis gloria ejus*, ait Psalmista, *filice regis ab intus*. At quoniam per legem humanam, quæ non judicat de moribus qui latent, sed de patentibus quam maxime, et non per eam cohibere et refrænare moderarique motus interiores:¹ idcirco ut veræ virtutis apprehenderemus summam, necessarium erat divinam legem nobis superinfundi.

Quarta ratio est, quia ([ut] dicit Augustinus, in libro *De Libero Arbitrio*,)² lex humana non potest omnia mala punire, quia dum vellet generaliter hæc extirpare, cum eis non pauca bona destrueret, sicque utilitas tolleretur boni communis.

And, in fine, because human law cannot punish all evils.

Ex his autem et præcedentibus septimæ conclusionis nostræ veritas sufficienter declaratur.

The above proofs will suffice for Bury's seventh conclusion.

Septima igitur conclusio adversarii neganda est, scilicet, quod major pars divinæ legis homini datæ, in magna quantitate supereminens parti residuæ, sufficienter fundatur extra Sacram Scripturam in interiori libro legis naturæ et philosophiæ moralis; non autem in libro Sacræ Scripturæ, qui vocatur Veteris et Novi Testamenti. Ubi tamen nititur adversarius conclusionem suam³ sic defensare: Omnia regimina, virtutes, et veritates in quorum inventionem, eruditionem, et cognitionem naturalis ratio per se aut cum adiutorio naturali, absque supernaturali revelatione a Deo facta, consurgere valet et pervenire, sufficienter extra Sanctam Scrip-

Further proof of the falsity of Peacock's seventh conclusion. Even if it were true, as it is not, that the greater part of God's law to man might be discovered by reason, it does not follow that its discovery has, in fact, been so made and not by revelation.

¹ Something is omitted or corrupted here; if *non possumus* were substituted for *et non per eam*, we should obtain the required sense.

² Compare Lib. 1, § 14, (Op. tom. i., p. 425. Ed. Antv. 1700).

³ *suam conclusionem suam*, MS.

turam Novi et Veteris Testamenti, fundantur in interiori libro naturæ jacente in spiritu et anima hominis; sed ita est quod talia regimina sunt major pars legis divinæ homini datæ, in magnaquantitate excedunt remanentiam totius divinæ legis; igitur dicta regimina extra Sacram Scripturam sufficienter fundantur, &c.:—dicendum est quod major et minor evidentis falsitatis arguuntur. Nam, sicut in solutione secundæ conclusionis dictum est, possibilitas rei non probat foundationem sed actualitas. Nempe possibile erat præsepe primo suscepisse Christum Romæ, nullus tamen per hoc probat idem præsepe primo fuisse fundatum Romæ. Nec quanquam de moribus multa valeant absque revelatione cognosci, concludendum est quod idcirco eadem multa sine revelatione fundantur; cum de facto, stante possibilitate dicta, per revelationes sanctas sanctis patriarchis, prophetis, et apostolis primo innotuerunt. Insuper ubi ait in minore, quod talia fundata super legem naturæ et rationem sunt major pars divinæ legis homini datæ, verum non est, ut patet in fine responsionis ad sextum argumentum pro prima conclusione.

Peacock's praise of his own books reprehended. Bury will in due time tell him his opinion of their merits.

De jactantia et laude suorum opusculorum, quibus adversarius hic se extollit, sibi ipsi videat. Sapientis eulogium est, "laudet te alienus et non os tuum;" hic autem sic de se scribit, "Per sollennem et regalem processum major argumenti mei probatus est in libro *De justa appretiatione Sacræ Scripturæ*," quod tamen omnino non credimus; processum enim de eo ibi fieri putare possumus, probationem vero minime. Nihilominus, duce Deo, prosecuturi eum per singula suorum latibula voluminum, cum ad id perventum sit, quod sentimus dabimus intelligere. Cumque ad suum codicem accesserimus, quem *De Donato Christianæ Religionis* ascripsit, quicquid moralis regiminis in ratione fundari ibidem perhibet, totum supereminenti modo in eloquiis divinis prius fundamentum suscepisse monstrabimus.

Insuper esto quod ratione naturali, Deum unum esse a quo creaturæ in suas species prodierunt, quodque veram felicitatem esse scire possemus ejusdem rationis naturali ductu, conjungi scilicet Deo amando et serviendo; verumtamen cum hæc ipsa Spiritus Dei per Scripturas Sanctas elegantius certiusque docuerit, quam in ejus cujusvis alteriusve præditi ratione naturali quocunque codice exarari valeat, quis non, neglecto tanto præsumptionis spiritu, ut supra Deum se mores informare humanos spondeat, humiliter¹ Scripturis rite docendus obtemperet? Fortasse vero ex ipsius Scripturæ medullis ubi adversarius impinguatus dilatatusque erat, in largitorem ingratus iste recalcitravit, suis se viribus obtinuisse credens vere vivendi scientiam, quam non nisi longo sacrarum literarum contractu diutinaque industria ab ipsis ferme cunabulis sensim perquirere visus est. Inveniturque sibi ipsi contrarius.

Dixit namque supra in conclusione sua tertia, Scripturæ officium proprium et integrum esse articulos fundare fidei. Constat autem, "Deum esse creatorem cæli et terræ," unum immo et primum esse inter articulos fidei, quare si conclusionis suæ tertiæ sententiam teneat, articulus iste non in ratione sed in Scriptura Sancta primæ suæ² foundationis locum habet. Consimiliterque arguere possumus contra eum de felicitate, quæ aliud non est quam ipsa vita æterna. Fortasse hic non veretur dicere, ut prædictam repugnantiam verborum suorum possit evitare, hæc ipsa quæ recitavimus de fidei articulis non esse. Sic enim, dum fugit Scyllam, in Charybdim demergitur; et dum sibi in errore defensionem extruit, apostolorum et canonis antiquissima fidelissimaque confundit symbola, in quibus pro articulis supputantur et Deum mundum creasse et vitam hominum esse æternam.

Reason teaches elementary truths less clearly than Scripture. Peacock ungratefully ascribes to the power of reason the knowledge that he has gained by means of revelation.

Peacock is inconsistent with himself in assigning certain truths to the discovering power of reason. He owns that it is the office of Scripture to ground articles of faith, and yet maintains that the first article of the creed may be discovered by reason.

¹ *humilibus*, MS.

| ² *primi sui*, MS.

EX CAP. XXXVI.

(Compare REPRESS, pp. 43-46.)

Bury's tenth conclusion. The law of nature or moral philosophy is a very useful guide to those who are without the direct light of Divine revelation; but is not universally necessary to those who have that light. Thus the hearts of the Apostles were enlightened without the aid of moral philosophy. Various arguments for the conclusion.

DECIMA conclusio principalis est ista: Quamvis lex naturalis, quam adversarius moralem philosophiam vocat, in iudicio rationis fundata, sit utilis valde catholicis illis, quibus divinæ revelationes immediate non elucescunt, non tamen generaliter omnibus ita necessaria est; quin absque ea quidam vivaciter vigoroſeque et satis peculiariter Deo summo valent¹ deservire. Veritas hujus conclusionis sufficienter ut putamus per dicta 6^a, 7^a, 8^a, et 9^a conclusionibus elucescit. Quid etiam ille magnus sanctus pater Augustinus de hac ipsa sentiat conclusionem, ex suo prologo in libros *De Doctrina Christiana* datur intelligi, ubi sic: *Quamvis momento uno temporis adveniente Spiritu Sancto replet apostoli omnium gentium linguis locuti sunt, non tamen se indignum putet Christo cui talia non proveniunt, ac Spiritum Sanctum se accepisse dubitet; immo et quod per hominem addiscendum est discat sine superbia, et qui docet² sine superbia et invidia tradat quod accepit. Neque temptemus Dominum cui credidimus, ne talibus inimici versutiis et perversitate decepti ad ipsum quoque Evangelium audiendum atque discendum nolimus ire in ecclesiam aut codicem legere aut docentem prædicantemque hominem audire, et expectemus rapti usque in tertium cælum, sive in corpore sive extra corpus, sicut Apostolus ait, et audire arcana verba quæ non licet homini loqui; aut ibi videre Dominum Jesum Christum, et ab illo potius quam ab hominibus audire Evangelium. Caveamus tales temptationes superbissimas et periculosissimas. Cogitemus etiam ipsum Apostolum Paulum licet divina et cælesti*

¹ So the MS., but the subjunctive would be greatly preferable.

² docetur, MS.

*voce prostratum et instructum ad hominem tamen missum esse, ut sacramenta perciperet et copularetur ecclesiæ: sed et centurionem Cornelium, quamvis exauditas orationes ejus et eleemosynas receptas ei angelus nuntiaverit, Petro tamen traditum imbuendum, per quem non solum sacramenta susciperet, sed etiam quid credendum, quid sperandum, quid item diligentum esset audiret. Et poterant utique omnia per angelum fieri, sed abjecta esset humana conditio, si per homines hominibus Deus verbum suum ministrari nolle videretur.*¹ Hæc Augustinus. Ex quibus Sancti Augustini sermonibus sic arguitur pro conclusione: Si per homines Deus verbum suum hominibus nollet annuntiari, abjecta videretur esse humana conditio: ergo lex naturalis, quam adversarius Scripturarum moralem philosophiam vocat, in judicio rationis fundata, per quam hominis est hominem docere, catholicis illis necessaria est, quibus divinæ revelationes immediate non elucescunt. Item centurio Cornelius Petro traditus est imbuendus, ut ab eo audiret, quid crederet, quid speraret, quidque diligeret, ut quemadmodum Petrus, ita ille efficaciter placeret Deo; hos autem vivendi modos, non per judicium philosophiæ, sed per revelationem Petrus exercuit; “absque doctrina humana,” inquit Augustinus, “Deus illustravit corda apostolorum.” Igitur possibilis est et vera secunda pars conclusionis, scilicet, quod quidam vivaciter vigoroque et satis peculiariter Deo possent deservire per solam revelationem, absque omni philosophia morali judicio rationis humanæ fundata.

Idcirco cum adversarius dicat in conclusione sua Pecock's two arguments for his tenth conclusion have been already refuted, decimam, doctrinam et disciplinam legis naturalis et moralis philosophiæ adeo consistere necessariam, ita

¹ August. Opp. tom. iii. pp. 2, 3. Ed. Ant. 1700. The quotation, however, is not very exact.

ut hæc deficere non possit Christianis qui Deo servire volunt et ejus mandata servare, negamus quidem eum. At quia loquacissimæ nugationi, qua probationes dictæ conclusionis suæ adversarius communivit, respondere stylo speciali non curavimus, saltem tamen ne insolubilia se gaudeat assumpsisse, primum argumentum suum per septimam conclusionem nostram, secundum argumentum per nonam conclusionem, et per alia quæ jam dicta sunt, solutum arbitretur.

Those arguments stated. His first argument.

Argumentum primum: Illa doctrina non potest deesse Christianis, quæ est major pars totius legis divinæ homini datæ in terris; lex naturæ et philosophia moralis sunt hujusmodi; igitur hæc lex ita necessaria est ut Christianis deesse non possit.

His second argument.

Argumentum secundum: Illa doctrina non potest deesse Christianis sine qua sufficienter et secure Sancta Scriptura non intelligitur, nec potest intelligi; lex naturalis et philosophia moralis sunt hujusmodi; igitur minor primi argumenti, et etiam minor hujus secundi veritate carent, ut declaravimus.

* * * *

Pecock's assertion that reason bears a greater part in founding the doctrine of the sacraments than Scripture is false, as appears from the nature of the sacraments themselves.

In reference to Pecock's remarks on the sacraments, Bury replies: Per fidem sacramentorum et eorum virtutem fideles accessum habent ad gratiam "in qua stant et in qua gloriantur in spe gloriæ filiorum Dei;" igitur cum iste effectus proprius et immediatus sacramentorum omne judicium rationis et philosophiæ transcendat, claret eorundem sacramentorum institutiones et usus omne judicium rationis superare.

And from Scripture.

Confirmatur per Apostolum ad Titum 3^o: *Non ex operibus justitiæ quæ fecimus nos, sed secundum suam misericordiam salvos nos fecit per lavacrum regenerationis et renovationis Spiritus Sancti, quem effudit in nos abunde per Jesum Christum.* In hac auctoritate ostenditur diversitas virtutum earum quæ judicium rationis, et earum quæ sacramenta Christi consequuntur. Nempe opera justitiæ quæ nos facimus sunt

ea quæ in ratione fundantur et philosophia morali. De his dicitur in Isaia: *Omnes justitiæ nostræ quasi pannus menstruatus.* (Isaiæ 65°.) Idcirco hæc justitiæ nostræ dicuntur et opera nostra, quia harum habitibus perfecti utimur cum volumus. Unde morales viri dicuntur domini actuum suorum; ita ut apud vulgus dicatur: *Sapientem etiam astris dominari.* Rursus virtutes exprimit sacramentorum dicens: *Per misericordiam suam salvos nos fecit, per lavacrum regenerationis et renovationis Spiritus Sancti, et cætera.* Ex his sic invehitur: *Lavacrum regenerationis et renovationis,* et cætera. Sacramenta ad hunc effectum instituuntur, ut homines per ea salvi fiant, sed juxta prædictam beati Pauli sententiam, nulla judicia rationis aut philosophiæ vel legis naturalis, quæ sunt opera legis per nos facta aut justitiæ quæ nos fecimus, ad hunc conducunt effectum; quare institutiones et eorum usus omnia judicia rationis et philosophiæ humanæ principia transcendent.

Item omnis consensus animi qui non est inquisitus, aut scrutatus, sed infusus, excedit omne iudicium rationis, cum iudicium rationis semper inquirat, scrutetur, et deliberet super his quæ apud intellectum sunt; sed fides, per quam sacramenta omnem institutionem et omnem usum habent, requirit consensum, non inquisitum, nec scrutatum, ut Damascenus¹ habet quarto *Sententiarum*, cap. tertio; igitur hæc ipsa eorundem sacramentorum fides omne iudicium rationis excedit.

Faith, moreover, upon which the efficacy of the sacraments depends, requires the consent of the mind, not the investigation of reason.

Bury has many more remarks on this branch of the argument, and confirms his views by the authority of many of the Fathers.

¹ The reference to the *Sentences* of Peter Lombard is false; the place of John Damascene seems to be *De fid. orthod.* Lib. v. c. 11 (Op. tom. 1, p. 263. Ed. Par. 1712)

EX CAP. XXXIX.

(Compare REPRESS., p. 46.)

Bury's eleventh conclusion. The unlearned have cause to bless God that they have learned the sure rule of life, not from human philosophers but from inspired writers. Proof of the conclusion from Scripture.

UNDECIMA conclusio est ista: Illiterati viri et simplices ob id præcipue laudes Deo persolvere tenentur, quod regulas vivendi certissimas modosque et leges, quibus vera philosophia colitur, non per philosophos naturales aut humanas doctrinas, sed per sanctos patres, prophetas, et apostolos didicerunt. Totius veteris ac novæ Scripturæ series hujus conclusionis veritati attestatur. Nam cum omnis nostræ inventionis doctrina, totaque philosophia hominum errorem naturalem habeat, aut certe suspicionem erroris, quam eis semper et ubique invincibilis parturit ignorantia (ut in sexta conclusione ostensum est), clementissime non per quoslibet vivacis ingenii viros sed per vasa electionis præcipue usque ad horam abscondita divina providentia certissimam agendorum lucem populis eduxit. Ait utique Malachias propheta: *Labia sacerdotis custodiunt scientiam.* Non dixit: "Labia Peripatetici," "labia Stoici," aut "labia ex Ionicis cujusve philosophi humanæ sectæ;" sed "labia sacerdotis" custodiunt scientiam, et legem requirent ex ore ejus. Quasi etiam percunctanti cur ex ore ejus scientia legis exquireretur, respondet idem propheta: *Quia angelus Domini est.* Quod enim quæstionis dudum cæremonialia, legalia, moraliaque protulerunt, mox sacerdotum judicium¹ judiciis delatum est; hi autem non scrutiniis rationis usi sunt, sed aut per Dei oracula, aut per voces ejus in Scripturis Sanctis edocti, scrupulum omne² et omnem agendi vivendique dubitationem constantissime amputarunt.

* * * * *

God has taught mankind the perfect law of life not by men of letters but by

Non igitur duntaxat septem sacramentorum paucissimas regulas, ut adversarius garrire solet, sed et totius vitæ humanæ perfectam speciosissimamque

¹ *judicium*, MS.

| ² So the MS.

legem per illiteratos fideles, non ratione hominis, non sensu, non ingenio, non inquisitione quæ claudicant, sed Deo illos illuminante inviolabiliter mundus accepit. Quid autem de hac re Paulus sentiat, per id quod ad Galatas 1^o scriptum est datur intelligi: *Notum facio (ait) Evangelium meum, quod evangelizatum est a me; quia non est secundum hominem, neque enim ego ab homine accepi illud, neque didici, sed per revelationem Jesu Christi.* Non dicat adversarius Paulum a philosophis modos primo suscepisse vivendi, quamvis in sacramentorum mysteriis postea per Christum revelantem fuerit edoctus.

inspired apostles.
St. Paul's Gospel
not learned of
man but by
revelation.

* * * * *

Vas istud electionis quidem non erat ad sacramenta libanda, sed ut Christi nomen ferret "coram regibus et " principibus terræ " et mores quosdam seminaret novos, quos non natura vetus aut prioris legis sanctio, sed nova mater fides attulerat. *Non (inquit) misit me Deus baptizare sed evangelizare (1^a ad Cor. 1^o).* Et Galatas interrogat (ad Galatas 3^o): *Hoc solum volo a vobis discere. Ex operibus legis Spiritum accepistis, an ex auditu fidei? Qui igitur tribuit vobis Spiritum, et operatur virtutes in vobis, ex operibus legis, an ex auditu fidei?* Ac si diceret: "Virtutes, O Galatæ, quas Spiritus Christi in vobis operatus est, " nolite legi quæ naturales mores profert, sed fidei, id " est quam per me prædicatam tenetis, magis integritati donare." Si igitur Evangelium Pauli hos mores, scilicet castitatis, eleemosynarum, parcitatis, contemptus mundi, humilitatis, orationis, patientiæ, longanimitatis, fortitudinis, prudentiæ, et cæterarum virtutum, quibus Christiana adornatur conversatio, contineat; et Paulus hoc ipsum Evangelium non accepit ab homine neque didicit, sed per revelationem Jesu Christi, quis eosdem mores non a philosophis aut doctrinis eorum, sed a Christo immediate Paulum suscepisse fateretur?

His gospel
embraced not
merely or prin-
cipally the
sacraments, but
the whole range
of Christian
virtues.

* * * * *

EX CAP. XL.

(Compare REPRESS., pp. 46-48.)

Bury's twelfth conclusion. Peacock's works are more to be detested by faithful people than those of Mahomet or of any heretic whatever. The necessity of the conclusion arises partly from their simplicity, partly from his craftiness, as expressed in the three following arguments.

DUODECIMA conclusio est ista: Summe cavendi sunt et detestandi laicis fidelibus libri quos Scripturæ adversarius edidit, citiusque Machometi, Sabellii, Aarii, Wiclyfi, cujus alteriusve damnati hominis, quam hujus hæretici intuerentur opuscula. Veritas hæc tum ex imbecillitate credentis populi tum ex malitia cælli concipitur adversarii. Ex tribus enim, ut frequenter, contingit populum decipi; primo quidém ex novitate doctrinæ; secundo ex famosa dicentis auctoritate; et tertio ex fraudulenta suavitate blandientis erroris. Errores namque Gentilium veteresque sectæ et hæreses publico despectui ubique tenentur; unde minus nocent, quoniam jacula¹ eorum jaculis providentiæ retusa sunt.

* * * * *

The first argument. The novelty of Peacock's error easily captivates the unwary and simple. His doctrine of human reason, unheard of for ages, is only too flattering to human pride. St. John's flight from the bath in which he beheld Cerinthus is an example warning us to avoid contact with all heretical doctrines.

Nova vero iniquitas pusillorum animos facile contaminat. "Sæpe," (inquit unus), "viatorem nova non "vetus orbita fallit;" propter quod prima ad Timotheum 6°, Sanctus Paulus Timotheum consulit, dicens: *Devita profanas vocum novitates, et opiniones falsi nominis scientiæ, quam quidam pronunciantes circa fidem erraverunt.* Sane hujus Sanctæ Scripturæ adversarii non saltem effrenissimos inter hæreticos hucusquam temeraria cognita assertio est. Cautius igitur tanti serpentis insidias prævisuri sumus, qui postremo jam in fine sæculorum ecclesiæ Christi calcaneo infastas demolitur fraudes. Et quanquam pia, quanquam sancta, fidelia, divinaque impiissimis suis dogmata interserat opusculis; non verebimur eum falsi erroris arguere defensorem. Ubique enim apud eum laudatur ratio, velut omnis exsors ignorantiae. Ubique in morum² regulis et divino cultu, quod a sæculis auditum non est,

¹ iacule, MS.| ² modum, MS.

hæc ipsa ratio naturalis Sacræ Scripturæ documentis præfertur: adeo ut ritus et ipsæ sacramentorum incomprehensibiles virtutes ab ipsis humanis potius quam revelatis veritatibus confirmentur. Hujus primitias erroris iste sacramentorum contemptor literarum¹ [ope] studuit invenire,² ut, dum philosophiam commendaret mortalium, dulcissimis mendaciis de naturali lege multa commentans pronos ad malum sensus sibi alliceret humanos. Consulendum piis mentibus est, ut fiant longe a tabernaculis tanti adversarii, et quæ satellites ejus mellito propinant calamo, aut venena aut certe venenata esse cognoscant. Quid vero eis faciendum sit, Sanctus Johannes operis attestatione persuadet, de quo in *Glossa super 2^a Canonica Johannis* ita scribitur: *Cum Johannes apud Ephesum balnea lavandi gratia [intravisset], et vidisset Cerinthum, foras exiit, dicens: "Fugiamus hinc; ne balnea ipsa corrumpant nos in quibus lavatur Cerinthus, veritatis inimicus."*³ Noverat amicus Christi Johannes balnea bona esse, quæ tamen refugit, ne balneato Cerintho loci saltem vicinitate participaret. Spernantur ab omnibus (inquam) novelli hujus hæretici documenta. Nam etsi cara, preciosa, dulcisque catholicis interdum ejus doctrina sentiatur, apud bonos, sanctos, atque eruditiores patres studendum erit, qui licet non se ut hæreticus iste collaudent, non minus a Deo judice collaudantur. *Qui gloriatur* (ait Paulus), *in Domino gloriatur: non enim qui seipsum commendat ille probatus est, sed quem Deus commendat.* Et Ethnicus Cato,⁴ *Nec te collaudes*, inquit.

Insuper ut secundo diximus loco, ipsa dicentis auctoritas simplices viros facile in errorem mittet. *Isaiæ 19^o: Deceperunt Ægyptum angeli populorum.* Et

Peacock's exalted station in the Church is another cause of error to the common people.

¹ This word (as it seems) is obscurely written on an erasure.

² So the MS., but *munire* would make a better sense.

³ Gloss. Ordin. in S. Joh. Ep. ii.

in Bibl. N. de Lyra, tom. 5, fol. 236. Lugd. 1529. Irenæus (Lib. iii. c. 3)

is the original authority for this story.

⁴ Dion. Cat. *Distich.* Lib. ii., c. 16.

(vol. i., p. 120. Ed. Amst. 1759.)

Daniel 13°. : *A senioribus populi, qui videbantur regere populum, egressa est iniquitas. Ipsa enim ovina pellis transfigurato lupo totius gregis ruina est.*

Sunt et infatuati sales mittendi foras et conculcandi ab hominibus. At quoniam rudis populus et simplex turba fidelium tantarum rerum non novit doctrinas, fieri potest, si hujus dicta adversarii legerint aut audierint, ut tamen dicentis auctoritate, tamenque dictorum novitate percussi, lucem pro tenebris et pro luce tenebras insano profiteantur more.

The deceitful sweetness of his doctrines is another cause. And yet they are so mischievous that they strike at the very root of Christianity.

Namque fraudulentissima suavitas erroris sui, prout tertio ostendendum diximus, de facili illiteratos etiam seducit. Quid enim suavius dici potest hominibus, quam quod ratio naturalis de se, id est, neque per Spiritum edocta nec informata per Scripturas, suo jure ac propria valeat industria virtutibus perfici et Deo perfecte famulari; et quis hæreticorum ab exordio tanto furore excanduit adversus Spiritum veritatis? Fuerunt qui inviolabilis fidei supremum corruperunt verticem, ineffabili detrahentes Trinitati.

Solus autem iste ad procerae hujus arboris¹ illibatæ fidei radices securim mittere præsumpsit. Tolle Scripturarum certissimam constantissimamque sinceritatem, et quid de Christo habes? Quid de Deo sentis, quomodo Trisagion, aut Homöision tibi sonant? Quæ sacramentorum remedia; quæ redemptionis virtus; quæ bonorum merces; quæ malorum afflictio cognoscitur?

Pecock's philosophy rejects all authority of sacred or profane authors, and has no stable foundation to rest upon.

A quo te sequentes concilium præstolantur adepturi? Non mittis ad Isocratem, non ad Platonem, non ad Aristotelem, qui principes in doctrina morum ab hominibus computantur. Apostolos item et apostolicos recusos viros, patriarcharum et prophetarum sensus non admittis. Moralis igitur philosophia et universum rationis judicium in solo tui pectoris domicilio

¹ arboris ad, MS.

quiescunt. Quanta perversitas est, tanta temporum damnare curricula, tot utriusque scientiæ, divinæ scilicet et humanæ, peritissimos homines sapientissimosque bonorum et optimorum morum institutiones et præcepta latere protestari. Avulsa est, (dicerem magis, repudiata est,) a pedibus tuis ipsa securæ veritatis petra. Tua utique nil certum, nil stabile pollicetur philosophia. Numquid audisti, *Multifarie multisque modis olim Deus loquens patribus in prophetis, novissime diebus istis locutus est nobis in Filio?* Quomodo Paulus "multifarie multisque modis loquentem Deum "patribus in prophetis," quomodo "novissime loquentem "eum in Filio" novit, si non ut alter Moyses in petram Sanctæ Scripturæ pedes fixisset suos? Quæ præsertim ea sunt, quæ inter mille similia Deus locutus est. Audiant catholici, audiant fideles, sed etiam me tacente, audiant eum qui loquentem Dominum audierat: *Notas mihi fecisti, inquit, vitæ vias, adimplebis me lætitia cum vultu tuo.*" Quæ litera sic ab Augustino discutitur:¹ *Ipse notas mihi fecit vias vitæ, cum me docuit fidem, misericordiam, justitiam, caritatem, his enim itineribus pervenitur ad salutem.*

* * * * *

Odibilis est Deo qui sophistice loquitur. Si idcirco ratio hujus hominis aut illius philosophiæ moralis statutas adinvenit regulas; cujus hujus quæso? Liber *Donati* tui, liber tuæ *Religionis Christianæ*, liber *Imitatoris Donati* tui, liber *Impletionis quatuor tabularum* tuarum, liber *Adorationis* tuæ, liber tuæ *Dignæ et justæ appreciationis Scripturæ Sanctæ*, liber quem appellas *Provocatorem Christianorum*, hunc hominem quem quærimus non produnt; quem, neglectis Scripturis Sanctis, in tanta philosophia cultores Dei fideles, (ut dicis,) obtinerent patronum. Quid

Sarcasms on
Peacock's vanity
and self-com-
mendation.

¹ The words of Augustine on Ps. xv. 11. are, *Notas fecisti per me humilitatis vias ut ad vitam redirent homines unde per superbiam*

ceciderant, in quibus quia ego sum mihi fecisti. (Op. tom. iv., p. 54.) Possibly, however, this text may be explained by Augustine elsewhere.

dices? Annon respondebis? Quis memorandus homo ille est, qui accommodissima, ut dicere soles, hæc dogmata mortalibus suis lucubrationibus perquisivit? Cujus hominis vivacissima extat ratio hæc, tot tamque multiplices veritates ex nullius philosophorum catholicorumve, sed sui¹ solius proferens thesauris? Abutaris verbo prophetæ. Dic, quia et dixisti: *Ecce ego mitto me*. Sane Aristoteles virtutem non a ratione quacunque, sed a recta ratione pendere decrevit, prout determinaret sapiens. An non tu sapiens, dicens: *Ecce ego mitto me?* "Mecum sapientia est, mecum prudentia, mecum virtus, immo et omnium virtutum singularis solaque gubernatrix ratio. In me omnis spes vitæ et virtutis. Opuscula mea legite; utilia sunt; necessaria sunt." Tantundem pene de te, qualiter et Salomon de sapientia Dei cecinit, sentis. *Transite (ait)² ad me, omnes qui concupiscitis me; et a generationibus meis adimplemini. Spiritus enim meus super mel dulcis, et hereditas mea super mel et favum.* Si sapiens sis, dum hæc alta de te sentis, non Salomoni, non Apostolo, non Augustino sapientem te esse cognovimus.

The authors of the Old and New Testaments sought wisdom from God not from human philosophy, like Pecoek.

Salomon donis repletus naturæ et rationis humanæ, omni pollens gloria, non a fontibus philosophiæ, sed a puteo aquarum viventium, quæ fluunt impetu de Libano virtutem ipsam degustare concupivit. *Da mihi, (inquit),³ Domine, sedium tuarum assistricem sapientiam, ut mecum sit et mecum laboret, ut sciam quod acceptum sit coram te omni tempore.* Frustra nempe sic orare videretur, si interior sibi et naturalis ratio, quicquid acceptum coram Deo esset propria dictaret lege. Et Paulus prima ad Cor. 2^o: *Non enim judicari me scire aliquid inter vos, nisi Jesum Christum, et hunc crucifixum. Et ego in infirmitate et timore et tremore multo fui apud vos; et sermo meus et prædicatio mea non in persuasi-*

¹ sue, MS.

² Ecclus. xxiv. 26, 27.

³ Sap. ix. 4.

bilibus humanæ sapientiæ verbis, sed in ostensione Spiritus et virtutis; ut fides vestra non in sapientia sit hominum, sed in virtute Dei. Sapientiam autem loquimur inter perfectos.

Item Augustinus *De Libero Arbitrio*: *Non aliam* Similarly St. Augustine. *putes esse sapientiam, nisi veritatem in qua cernitur et tenetur summum bonum, quod nullo loco est, nusquam deest, foris admonet, intus docet, cernentes in se omnes in melius commutat, a nullo in deterius commutatur. Nullus de illa judicat, nullus sine illa bene judicat.*¹ Si Salomonem audias, quomodo scis quid acceptum sit coram Deo, si non sapientia, quam prædicant Scripturæ, tibi astiterit? Si Paulum audieris, quomodo quæso crucifixum Jesum in persuasibilibus annuntias humanæ sapientiæ verbis, et ponis fidem in sapientia hominum? Quomodo, si Augustinum audieris, sapientia qua cernitur summum bonum, de qua nullus judicat, et sine qua nullus bene judicat, arundinæ mortalis hominis rationi subiacebit? Quæ pestis hac tua hæresi crudelior?

Nec tamen ex improvise nostris advenisti sæculis. Pecock is the "abomination of desolation" spoken of by Daniel the prophet. Suspicio quia de te sollicitos fideles suos Christus effecit, ubi aiebat: *Cum videritis abominationem desolationis stantem in loco sancto, qui legit intelligat.* Impia igitur nimis tua conclusio duodecima est.

EX CAP. XLII.

(Compare REPRESS., pp. 48-51.)

TERTIA decima conclusio est ista: Cum philosophia Bury's thirteenth conclusion. Since moral philosophy is a particular theology, and Scripture a general theology, we may reasonably moralis sit quædam particularis theologia, merito quicquid in ea fundatur, perfectius id ipsum in Sacra Scriptura quæ est generalis theologia potest reperiri, ideoque rationabiliter de omni eo quæritur, quod

¹ Compare Lib. iii. § 26 and 38. (Op. tom. 1, pp. 441-446.)

inquire concern-
ing all moral
doctrines, where
they are founded
in Scripture.
Proof of the
conclusion.
Every thing re-
lating to partial
perfection sub-
sists more
perfectly in a
whole than in a
part.

ad mores spectat, ubi scilicet in Scripturis fundetur. Suaderi quippe taliter hæc valeret conclusio pro prima parte. Sicut illa scriptura dicitur *theologia generalis*, per quam omnifarie actus humani diriguntur in Deum, ita illa scriptura *particularis theologia* nuncupabitur, per quam sic vel sic dicti regulantur actus; sed generaliter et omnifarie per Sacram Scripturam, per philosophiam vero moralem,¹ sic vel sic, id est, modo tali tantum, contingit humanos actus regulari, ut in prima conclusione nostra et sexta declaratur; quare verum erit philosophiam moralem particularem quandam theologiam esse.

* * * * *

Hoc autem dato, cum omne id quod respicit perfectionem partialem, perfectius in toto, quam in parte subsistat, quicquid in philosophia morali (quæ est particularis theologia) fundatur, id ipsum perfectius in Sacra Scriptura (quæ est generalis theologia) poterit reperiri.

The same con-
clusion is arrived
at from three
other considera-
tions; and first
from this, that
the ultimate ends
of moral philo-
sophy and of
Scriptural
philosophy are
different, the
one being man's
temporal, the
other his eternal
happiness.

Quod quidem triplici alia ratione ostendere possumus, primo per comparisonem finium ad quos mores ordinantur; secundo per comparisonem obsectorum a quibus specificantur; et tertio per comparisonem luminum, in quibus agnoscuntur. Qualiter enim omnes mores perfectissime in Scripturis edocentur, primo ex comparatione elucescit finium. Nam sicut finis morum adquisitorum sub fine constituitur morum desuper infusorum, ita mores sub moribus; habitus enim, perfectiones, et essentias ex finibus sortiuntur.

* * * * *

Nunc autem per virtutes adquisitas in philosophia morali mortalis et peregrinans hominum vita ad quoddam bonum humanum tanquam ad proprium finem ordinata est. Sed per virtutes infusas quas Sacra Scriptura docet, ipsa eadem vita velut finem debitum

¹ per Sacram Scripturam et per scripturæ philosophicam vero moralem, MS.

bonum supra hominem, bonum scilicet infinitum respicit; ut homo per eas videlicet civis cœlorum constituatur et domesticus Dei, qui est finis simpliciter humanæ vitæ.

• • • • •

Secundo hoc ipsum evidet ex comparatione objectorum. Cum vero virtus sit ultimum potentiæ, potentiæ vero distinguuntur per actus, et actus per objecta, manifestum est etiam virtutes (cujusmodi sunt universi mores) per objecta distingui. Objectum quidem virtutis cujuslibet est bonum consideratum in propria materia; sic objectum tactus est bonum delectabile in concupiscentiis tactus. Cujus objecti formalis ratio a ratione pullulat quæ instruit modum in his concupiscentiis, sive ab aliquo quod perfectius quam ratio naturalis in eisdem concupiscentiis modum præbet, quale est ipsa divina revelatio. Materiale vero est id quod est ex parte concupitorum tangibile, ut cibus, liber, pecunia, vel quid simile. Clarum est utique quoniam alterius naturæ formaliter est modus impositus in his concupiscentiis, circa quas mores hominum sunt, secundum regulam humanæ rationis; et alius, secundum regulam divinæ inspirationis.

Secondly, the objects of moral and of Christian virtues are different.

Exempli gratia, abstinencia, virtus ut acquisita est, hoc a ratione habet, ut modum ponat inspirationi ciborum et potuum ne noceant humanæ valetudini; hæc itidem, ut infusa, castigat corpus et in servitutem redigit. Modus primæ abstinentiæ a ratione, modus secundæ a revelatione imponitur; secunda autem nedum perfectior judicatur quam prima eo quod perfectioris objecti, sed eo etiam quod omnis perfectionis ratio, quæ in prima, supereminenter in secunda reperitur.

Exemplification of this in the difference between a moral or acquired and a Christian or infused abstinence; the standard of the one being human health, of the other the bringing of the body into subjection.

Sic temperantia acquisita a venereis distrahit propter bonum hominis tantum; infusa, propter regnum cœlorum. Hanc Christus tetigisse visus est ubi dicebat: *Sunt eunuchi qui seipsos castraverunt propter regnum cœlorum.*

Similarly of continence.

Fortitudo etiam acquisita passiones timoris cohibet

And of fortitude. et mortis angustias, quas sensus exterior ministrat, ratione. Sed infusa non sic adversus carnem et sanguinem, sed "adversus principatus et potestates contra" spirituales nequitias in cœlestibus" docet militare; si quidem talis penes objecta ordo consideratur inter virtutes acquisitas et infusas, qualis inter acquisitas et animales est.

Fortitude in man of three kinds, animal, human, and divine: the second includes the first, and the third includes the other two. And so universally the objects of Christian virtues include the objects of the moral ones.

Fortiter enim bellare competit homini tripliciter, primo quia animal, secundo quia homo, tertio quia servus peculiaris Dei. Nam quia animal, habet ut adversantia repellat; quia homo, ut ea repellat, non semper sed ut oportet, secundum temporis et loci et adversantis congruentiam: aliter enim temerarius homo dicitur et non fortis. Quia vero servus Dei peculiaris, nedum has circumstantias considerat, quas ratio ut communiter solet edocere, sed etiam modum illum quem sola sibi revelatio præstitit. Sicut igitur trigonus in tetragono, et tetragonus in pentagono, ita virtus animalis in acquisita, et adinquisita in¹ infusa continetur, secundum earundem objectorum ordinem et considerationem.

Thirdly, a comparison of the light of revelation with the light of reason shows that all human virtue is contained in Scripture in the most perfect manner. The perfection of the light of revelation described.

Tertio etiam quomodo universæ virtutes et mores hominum perfectissime in Sacra Scriptura continentur, ex comparatione datur intelligi luminis revelationis et luminis naturalis rationis. Qualis autem et quanta sit perfectio luminis revelationis ex verbis Dionysii colligitur in libro *De Divinis Nominibus*: *Deus* (inquit) *qui est essentialiter bonus, nominatur intelligibile lumen*, (Joh. 8^o: *Ego sum lux mundi*), *propter hoc quod implet omnem supercœlestem mentem* (id est, angelicam), *intelligibili lumine* (quod nihil est aliud quam cognitio veritatis); *ab omnibus etiam animabus quibus innascitur expellit omnem ignorantiam et errorem*.² *Ignorantia*, ait Sanctus Thomas, *ad remo-*

¹ et in, MS.

² See Pseudo-Dionys. Areop. De Div. Nom. c. iv. § 5, tom. i. p. 557. Ed. Cord. The quotation from

St. John and the words included in parentheses are not in the text of Dionysius.

tionem pertinet veritatis, sed error ad inhæSIONem falsitatis. Unde 2^a Pet. 1^o: *Habemus firmiorem propheticum sermonem, cui benefacitis attendentes, quasi lucernæ ardenti in caliginoso loco, donec dies elucescat, et oriatur in cordibus vestris.* Hoc autem de angelis non dixit, in quibus ignorantia et error non habent locum, licet in eis sit quædam nescientia.

* * * * *

Sane mentium humanarum ac ipsorum divinorum spirituum non magna foret in intelligendo disparitas, si tetra nubes ignorantie splendidum rationis lumen non obduceret; hæc inquam sola omnium hominum sententias et sapientissimorum judicia mortalium erroris suspitione replevit. Adeo ut vix mathematicalia certitudine polleant, cætera vero et præsertim quæ ex humanis arbitriis captant vigorem, vacillanti et timorosa opinione doceantur. Quid nisi ratio humana Socratem, et Platonem, cæteramque philosophorum [turbam] in moribus direxit? Quorum primi omnia in civitatibus communia esse voluerunt; sic enim unitatem maximam in ea promiserunt obsistere. Insuper uxores statuerunt civibus esse communes, et bellicis rebus exercitandas voluerunt. Ratione etiam ductus est Phaleas¹ ut æquales civium possessiones consistere debere monstraret. Rursus Hippodamus et Solon pellices² juxta rationis leges instruxerunt. Quos omnes Aristoteles, in *Politicis* libro secundo, velut ignorantie tenebris convincit palpitantes.³ Compertum igitur est lumen rationis tenebris confundi ignorantie, quas lumen revelationis prorsus effugat. Ex his sic argui posset: Universi mores hominum aut infusi aut adquisiti sunt; utrumque autem genus morum perfectissime in Sacra Scriptura traditur; igitur perfectissime de moribus universis traditur in eadem.

The light of reason is obscured by clouds of ignorance, insomuch that little certainty is to be obtained. The wisest philosophers have fallen into the grossest errors. The light of Scripture alone can dissipate this ignorance, and consequently it is the surest guide to all human virtue.

¹ Felleas, MS.

² polliceas, MS. The correction is certain. See Harpocr. s. v. *πρόληπτος* 'Ἀποδοίτην, but it does

not appear on what authority the remark is made of Hippodamus.

³ See Aristot. *Politic.* lib. ii. capp. 1, 4, 5, 9.

Scripture teaches not only the infused but also the acquired virtues in the most perfect manner, and is, therefore, the most perfect guide to all virtue.

Secunda autem præmissarum de eo quod ad mores infusos spectat, palam est; sed et quod genus virtutum et morum adquirentium perfectissime traditur in Scriptura Sancta sic ostenditur. Quicquid monstratur perfecte modo suo in lumine rationis, quod vix alioquin perspicuum est propter invincibilis tenebras ignorantiae; si cognoscatur in lumine revelationis excludentis omnem dictæ ignorantiae caliginem, perfectius et perfectissime cognoscitur; hoc autem contingit illi generi morum qui acquisiti dicuntur; igitur generaliter mores isti in lumine revelationis perfectissime cognoscuntur. Minor hujus argumenti ex Ambrosio, Hieronymo, et Augustino sumitur.

Proof from St. Augustine that everything necessary to salvation is contained in Scripture.

After quoting Ambrose and Jerome, he proceeds thus: Insuper Augustinus (ut prædictum est respondendo ad quartum argumentum primæ conclusionis) in libro *De Gratia et Libero Arbitrio*, sic habet: *Nihil utiliter prædicamus ad salutem, quod Sancta Scriptura Spiritus Sancti miraculo fecundata non protulerit, aut intra se non contineat.*¹ Non immerito igitur, cum universi mores hominum in Sancta Scriptura doceantur modo excellentissimo ac perfectissimo, de singulis eorum interrogare congruit, ubi aut qua parte in Sacra dicta Scriptura ipsi fundationem admittant.

Pecock's thirteenth conclusion is therefore false.

Dicemus igitur tertiam decimam conclusionem adversarii Scripturarum veritatis omnino vacuum esse, quod scilicet æque rationabiliter quæritur ubi singuli mores aut ubi singulæ conclusiones et veritates morales fundentur in Sacra Scriptura, sicut irrationabiliter quæreretur ubi conclusiones grammaticales in eadem fundarentur Scriptura.

Bury then concludes his work by answering Pecock's thirteenth conclusion at great length, the substance,

¹ The passage does not occur in the treatise named

however, of his argument is comprised in the following paragraph :

Cum theologia sit doctrina omnium morum per quos humana vita dirigitur in Deum, non excedit se ubi mores illos instruit, qui naturali possent industria comparari. Sed neque moralis philosophia suos excedit fines, dum naturalis rationis virtutes et legis naturæ judicia atque regimina in se fundata esse demonstrat. Theologiæ enim proprium est, de omnibus moribus judicare: (*Spiritualis vir*, inquit Paulus, *omnes judicat et a nemine judicatur*); philosophiæ [autem] moralis de acquisitis tantum.

Scripture does not exceed its proper bounds when it teaches even those virtues which human industry might discover, as it is its province to teach all virtues without exception.

* * * *

“ABBREVIATIO REGINALDI PECOK,”

BEING

A VINDICATION OF HIS SERMON AT PAUL'S CROSS.

(MS. Bibl. Bodl. Oxon. n. 117, fol. 11-13, sæc. xv.)

REVERENDISSIME in Christo pater et domine, domine Johannes, Dei gratia Cantuariensis archiepiscopus et totius Angliæ primas et apostolicæ sedis legatus:¹ Ego Reginaldus Assavensis episcopus, sacræ pagine professor, coram vobis dico et allego quod nuper propter causas rationabiles me moventes posui et tenui ac in scriptis publicavi apud Crucem Sancti Pauli in civitate Londoniensi quasdam conclusiones veras, sanctas, rectas, et orthodoxas, prædicari² multum necessarias, quarum tenores statim inferius perlegentur. Quibus conclusionibus aut saltem earum quibusdam plurimi (ut dicitur) contradixerunt. Aliqui asserendo illas esse falsas immo hæreticas, et aliqui asserendo illas esse sophisticas et continentes intra se terminos incompetentes et indebitos, ut dicitur in magnam mentium inquietationem plurimarum, et præcipue in ista civitate London. Quapropter vestram reverendissimam paternitatem et vestrum officium imploro et peto, ut proclamari nunc faciatis an aliquis ipsis conclusionibus aut earundem aliquibus velit facere se contradictorem. Et si aliquis offerat se obicem³ ipsis conclusionibus obiciendum; peto me ad sibi respondendum in scriptis

Pecock's statement to Archbishop Stafford respecting his sermon preached in 1447 at St. Paul's Cross, and the offence which it had occasioned. He offers to meet his opponents face to face.

¹ *legatus*, MS.

² *prædicavi*, MS.

³ *obicem ad*, MS.

de die in diem admitti. Quod si nullus hujusmodi contradictor inveniatur, vos auctoritate vestra pronuncietis illas conclusiones pro ista vice non habere contradictorem. Insuper peto quod ex tunc declaretis illas (prout sunt) esse veras et rectas et non sophisticas nec verba habentes incompetentia, saltem postquam coram vestra reverentia fundaverim et probaverim ipsas sufficienter ad finem et effectum, ut populus quantum ad istas conclusiones reponatur in quietem et pacem. *Explicit præfatio.*

The heads of the discourse.

CONCLUSIONES REGINALDI PECOCK.

Tenores conclusionum sunt isti :

No one can prove that bishops are bound to preach to the common people by virtue of their office.

(i.) Prima conclusio est hæc. Nullus hominum scit probare quod episcopus in quantum est episcopus et pro quanto est episcopus obligatur ad prædicandum in sua propria persona vulgari populo suæ diocesis. Istis terminis et "ad prædicandum" sumptis in suis famosissimis significationibus.¹

Bishops ought not to consider themselves so bound.

(ii.) Secunda conclusio est hæc. Episcopi non reputarent seipsos esse obligatos ad prædicandum in propriis personis suis vulgari populo suarum diocesum in quantum et pro quanto ipsi sunt episcopi supra alios curatos. Sed episcopi reputarent se esse liberos ab isto onere. Istis terminis "episcopi" et "ad prædicandum" et aliis terminis in hac conclusione sumptis in suis famosissimis significationibus.

Bishops, and bishops, ought to have more knowledge of divinity and of difficult

(iii.) Tertia conclusio est hæc. Episcopi in quantum sunt episcopi debent habere abundantiorē Christianæ religionis notitiam in materiis quas inferiores

¹ Gascoigne, referring to this position of Pecock (*Dict. Theol.* MS. vol. 2, p. 593), says : " Et causam istam reddidit, dicens : Dionysius papa divisit parochias ab episcopis et dedit curam animarum

rektoribus et curatis immediatis ecclesiarum parochialium, et tunc, ut dixit ille Pecock episcopus, ille papa Dionysius disoneravit episcopos ab onere prædicandi in suis diocesisibus," &c.

curati tenentur populo prædicare aut docere, atque debent habere majorem scientiam ad respondendum ac solvendum difficiles quæstiones quam est requisita haberi ab immediatis inferioribus curatis in quantum ipsi sunt inferiores et immediati curati.

questions than the inferior clergy.

(iv.) Quarta conclusio est hæc. Episcopi habent potestatem ad assumendum et resumendum sibi et ad iterum dimittendum quando eis placet exercitium et opus prædicationis ad populum, quemadmodum habent potestatem ad assumendum et resumendum sibi quodcunque aliud opus curæ pertinens immediato curato, quando eis placet; ita quod perinde episcopi non impediuntur a meliore opere suarum ordinariarum curarum pro illa vice ab illis debito adimpleri, et quod opus ab illo immediato curato non potest ordinarie impleri.

Bishops may assume and lay down at will any of the functions of the inferior clergy, such as preaching, &c.; provided these do not interfere with their higher duties.

(v.) Quinta conclusio est ista. Episcopi possunt propter diversas causas absentare se a suis diocesibus et fieri non ibidem residentes excusabiliter et meritorie et allocabiliter penes Deum durante toto tempore illarum causarum.

Divers causes may excuse bishops from residence in their dioceses.

(vi.) Sexta conclusio est hæc. Magis expediens opus potest Christianorum animabus impendi quam est opus prædicationis, isto vocabulo prædicationis capto in sua propriissima et famosissima significatione.

Bishops have more important duties to discharge than mere preaching.

(vii.) Septima conclusio est hæc. Neque papa neque episcopi Anglicani sunt simoniaci in hoc et per hoc, quod ipsi recipiunt suos episcopatus a papa per provisionem et solvunt papæ primos fructus suorum episcopatuum.

Neither papal provisions to bishoprics, nor payments of annates to the pope, are simoniacal.

Præterea ne videatur aliquibus quod prædictio istarum conclusionum fuit non necessaria et quod non fuit rationabilibus causis fulcita, sed¹ quod sapiunt magis curiositatem quam utilitatem seu necessitatem, ecce causæ quæ me movebant ad formandum, tenendum, publicandum dictas conclusiones erant istæ:

Pecock's motives in preaching his sermon. Scandals had unjustly arisen against non-preaching and non-resident bishops, whose influence was thus diminished

¹ et sed, MS.

and whose character ought to be cleared.

Prima videlicet hæc; contraria vel opposita quarundum ipsarum conclusionum a retroactis temporibus erant a plurimis viris opinata et in pulpitis sæpe prædicata. Unde episcopi non prædicantes populo, et episcopi a suis diocesibus propter rationabiles causas absentes detractionibus vulgi creberrimis subiacebant, ac suis subditis vilescebant a quibus debuissent revereri. Immo et ad corripiendum, mandandum, regulandum suos subditos ipsi erant tanto inhabiliores seu tanto impotentiores effecti; quanto in tantam infamiam secundum reputationem hominum fuerant dejecti. Quod nullus sapiens negabit esse malum digne et merito remediandum, cum indignarum personarum succurrendum est infamiae; et ideo multo magis infamiae episcoporum.

Some of the bishops themselves, moreover, were perplexed with groundless scruples.

Insuper et pro secunda causa. In multis episcopis perinde generabatur scrupulosa conscientia quasi super sua obligatione in qua tamen secundum veritatem ipsi non erant obligati; quod maxime periculosum erat illis, potissime cito et statim morituris.

The laity, in fine, fell into disaffection towards the bishops through holding the false opinions here refuted. These were the motives why the sermon was preached, not any wish to interfere with the due discharge of the office of preaching, which the sermon, on the contrary, intended to encourage.

Tertia causa erat, quia laici etiam in tam sinistre et temerarie de episcopis judicando et perinde in malas et indignas affectiones incidendo aut a bonis et debitis affectionibus recedendo suas animas sæpissime fœdaverunt, et in peccatis se involverunt. Et exemplo plane constat quod per publicationem mearum dictarum conclusionum, cum nullus eas improbare quiverit, omnia recitata mala et plurima alia tam impediri quam extirpari necesse est; hinc propter istas causas conclusiones meas formavi, posui, tenui, et publicavi. Quas causas esse rationabiles et sanctas ac digne moventes ut ipsæ conclusiones ponerentur, prædicarentur, et publicarentur, nullus (ut æstimo) negabit vir sapiens et discretus. Maxime ex quo nullum præjudicium, nullum impedimentum, nulla diminutio officii prædicationis per ipsas conclusiones eveniet; sed major frequentatio, verior et famosior elocutio, et largior pro-

fectus per prædicationes ad populum ratione illarum conclusionum provenire valebit, prout satis clare patebit in quodam libro *De Prædicatione* super ipsis conclusionibus scribendo.¹ Hæc coram paternitate vestra ad præsens propono et allego, reservans mihi potestatem ad agendum et prosequendum et ad obtinendum alias coram vobis aut in curia audientiæ vestræ aut alibi (prout mihi justum visum fuerit) remedia contra gravamina mihi a quibuscunque illata, et ad impugnandum falsa documenta nuper in pulpitis seminata. *Explicit.*

¹ *lucetbit satis clare* follows in MS., but is cancelled by dots placed over the words.

EXTRACT

FROM

GASCOIGNE'S THEOL. DICT. MS. Vol. II. (Lincoln
Coll. Oxon. pp. 597-599.)¹

Et causa suæ confusionis fuit quod vituperavit dicta et scripta sanctorum doctorum Hieronymi, Ambrosii, Augustini, et Gregorii et aliorum, et parum vel nihil ponderavit de eis nisi probarent scripta sua ratione, ut ipse Pecock dixit sæpe et scripsit; et audiente doctore Thoma Eboral dixit *Vath!* de dictis eorundem² Hieronymi et Augustini; unde incidit in ruinam magnam. Deus pro sua misericordia nunc illuminet nos et eum gratia sua. Plures ei adhærentes et oleo adulationis eum unguentes coram eo et in ejus absentia vocabant eum maximum scientificum mundi. *Popule meus* (inquit Deus per Isaiam), *qui te beatum dicunt ipsi te decipiunt*. Ipse enim Pecok episcopus Cicestrensis anno Domini Jesu 1457, secunda dominica adventus Domini, quæ fuit quarto³ die Decembris, in præsentia 20,000 hominum inductus in habitu episcopali ad pedes archiepiscopi Cantuariensis domini Thomæ Boucer, et episcopi Londoniensis Kemp, et episcopi Roffensis Low, doctoris

Pecock's abjuration at Paul's Cross, Dec. 4, 1457, before Archbishop Bouchier. His books publicly burnt there. His erroneous and concealed opinions. Sent to Canterbury and thence to Maidstone, after his abjuration.

¹ This extract follows immediately after the words "mensis Decembris" in Hearne's Extracts in the Appendix to Hemingford, vol. 2, p. 548, l. 29.

² *eorum*, MS.

³ *quarta*, MS.

in theologia Oxoniæ, et episcopi Dunelmiensis, abjuravit ibi sua scripta et conclusiones suas scriptas abjuratas per eum pridie in manerio archiepiscopi Cantuariensis de Lamheth in præsentia 24 doctorum in theologia, et tres magnos libros suos erroneos, cum undecim aliis in quaternis existentes, tradidit cuidam viro propriis manibus, qui igni ingenti ibidem præparato committeret, et sic factum tunc fuit Londoniis in cœmeterio ecclesiæ cathedralis sanctissimi Pauli apostoli Jesu Christi. Et dixit etiam idem episcopus Pecok publice, "*Superbia mea et præsumptio mea induxerunt me ad hæc mala et opprobria.*" Et postea archiepiscopus Cantuariensis Thomas Bourcer mandavit eum ad Madiston judicium expectaturum. Iste Pecok episcopus, qui Wallicus origine fuit, quondam socius in collegio de Oriel in Oxonia, vocavit in scriptis suis prædicatores publicos *clamatores in pulpitis*. Ipse enim episcopus Pecok actum prædicandi postquam fuit episcopus non frequentabat, et quando revocavit conclusiones suas erroneas et hæreticas ad Crucem S. Pauli apostoli, fama fuit si ipse descendisset ad ignem, in quo libri sui comburebantur, populus ibi eum projecisset in illum ignem. O Domine Deus, qui "posuisti terram quondam fructiferam in "salsuginem pro malitia habitantium in ea" (Ps. 106), tu scis omnia, tu enim scis qualiter iste idem Pecok episcopus vituperavit et indigne appretiavit dicta et scripta SS. doctorum S. Hieronymi, S. Ambrosii, S. Augustini, S. Gregorii papæ, et aliorum sanctorum et doctorum. Unde ipse vituperator illorum sanctorum merito vituperabatur a millibus hominum, et ego vocatus magister Thomas Gascoigne, doctor theologiæ et cancellarius Oxoniæ, credo firmiter quod ipse episcopus Pecok qui ita vilipendit scripta SS. doctorum Hieronymi, Ambrosii, Augustini, et Gregorii, et aliorum plurimorum sanctorum, merito fuit a millibus hominum in sua præsentia existentibus verecundatus.

Fatuus est enim homo qui sagittat, ut destruat solem; sic fatuus fuit ille Pecok qui verba evomebat contra SS. doctores Hieronymum, Ambrosium, et alios sanctos patres et eorum scripta; nam sagittæ suæ contra scripta eorum emissæ ceciderunt super caput ipsius sagittantis, quando justo Dei judicio errores suos et hæreses et libros suos proprios abjuravit, et ipsos comburi optavit et præcepit coram Cruce S. Pauli Londoniis anno Christi 1457, quarto die Decembris, in quo fuit tunc secunda dominica adventus Domini; et sic in eodem loco ubi ipse Pacok¹ episcopus Cices-trensis prædicaverat prius, quod episcopi non tenentur prædicare populo suæ diocesis, in eodem loco abjura-vit libros suos proprios, in quibus ille magnus horror scriptus est per eum. Et demandatus ad Cantuariam post suam abjurationem dixit:

"Wyt hath wundur that reson not tel kan,"¹

"How a Moder is Mayd and God is Man.

"Leue resone, beleue the wonder.

"Beleue hath mastery, and reson is under."

Prædictus Pocok² episcopus Cices-trensis in tempore archiepiscopi Cantuariensis Stafford nomine, quando in ejus præsentia doctores theologi Oxonienses et Canta-brigienses legebant apud Lamhith publice et sæpe in præsentia ipsius archiepiscopi et ipsius Pecok contra hoc quod ipse Pacok prædicaverat, quod episcopi non tenentur publice prædicare, et sanctorum patrum sanctionibus contra ipsum episcopum Pacok allegatis, respondebat ipse Pacok *Tuch!* (*id est, Vath!*) de dictis doctorum. Et alias sic dixit: *Quare vos non alle-gatis vosmet, cum estis doctores ut Hieronymus et Augustinus?* Et sic non curavit de scriptis SS. doc-

Disputations held before Archbi-shop Stafford, at Lambeth, against Pecock's position, that bishops are not bound to preach. His contempt for the authority of the Fathers poured upon his own head. His books burnt at London and Oxford. They contravene several articles of the Apostles' Creed.

¹ *kan not tel*, MS. But see *Eng-lish Chron. from 1377-1461*, p. 77. (Camden Soc. 1855.) The MS. writes "Gascoigne" before the third

line, as though he wrote the last couplet. This error has misled Wood.

² So the MS.

torum. Ergo justo Dei judicio libri ipsius Pacok fuerunt reprehensi et combusti Londoniis ante Crucem Beati Pauli apostoli; et etiam in generali processione Universitatis Oxoniæ in quadrevio A.D. 1457, 17^o die mensis Decembris, in die Sabbati, in præsentia tunc cancellarii Oxoniæ doctoris Thomæ Chaundler, tunc etiam custodis Novi Collegii Wintoniensis in Oxonia. Plures enim hæreses et errores posuit iste Pacok episcopus in suis libris propriis Anglicanis; quarum aliquæ magnæ hæreses contra symbolum duodecim apostolorum patent in actu suæ abjuracionis, quam ipse Pacok episcopus legebat in scriptis ad Crucem S. Pauli, anno Domini prædicto quando libri ejus fuerunt ibi combusti coram xx. millibus hominum et ultra. Lex Angliæ est quod domini parlamenti accusati de magno crimine per duodecim pares suos dominos barones debent pro accusato a crimine ei imposito excusari, vel in crimine sibi imposito finaliter pro reo pronuntiari; sed iste episcopus Pacok, Wallicus natiuitate, accusavit sanctos antiquos doctores magnos de falsitate seu insufficientia scriptorum eorundem doctorum, sed nec eis in sancta vita nec in eorum magna scientia et eorum miraculis fuit ipse Pacok probatus eis æqualis. Ideo eos reprobans sagittavit contra solem, et sagitta sua propria justo Dei judicio cecidit super caput proprium ipsius episcopi Cicestrensis Reginaldi Pacock.

GLOSSARY.

R R

GLOSSARY.

A.

A, AN, prep. On. 78, 138, 336, where *see* note.
ABIDE, v. a. and n., 238; *pres.* 3rd *pers. sing.* ABIDITH, 204; *pl.* ABIDEN, 20; *pret.* ABODE, 281; *pl.* ABODEN, 206; *subj.* ABIDE, 297; *imp. pl.* ABIDE, 481; *pres. part.* ABIDING, 341; *past part.* ABIDE, 387.
 (1) To remain. 204.
 (2) To wait for.
 "Whom alle holi men . . . *aboden*." 206.
See also p. 318.
ABIE, v. n. To suffer punishment. 331.
ABILTE. Ability; power. 547.
ABLE. Skilful. Lat. *habilis*.
 "Thou; he be *able* into othere deedis." 90.
ABLING, pres. part. Enabling. 324.
ABOUTE-WRITING. The legend of a coin. 140.
ABRODE. Abroad; at full length.
 "*Strel; t abrode*" (on the cross). 209.
ABSTENE, v. a. and n., 228; *imp. pl.* ABSTENE, 228; ABSTEYNE, 194; *subj. pl.* ABSTENE, 228; *pres. part.* ABSTEYNING, 314. To abstain (joined with *vs* or *ȝou*; but also *intrans.*, p. 188).
ACCEPCIOUN. Acceptance (of persons). 63.
ACCORDING, adj. Fit 824.

ACCORDINGLI. Concordantly.

"To gidere, *accordingli*." 94.

ADAUNTE, 37; past part. ADAUNTID, 51, 150. To put down (presumption, &c.)

ADVOUTRIE, AVOUTRIE. Adultery. 64, 506.

AFER. Remotely; by remote reasoning.

"Witnessid *afer* and in general by Holi Scripture." 231.

AFFECTE, AFFECT. Affection. Explained by *will*. 94. Pecoock (after the school-men, *e.g.*, Henricus Gandavensis in his *Quodlibeta*, *passim*.) opposes *affect* to *effect*, *i.e.*, the inward feeling to the outward manifestation of it. *See* pp. 510, 511.

AFORE BARRITH, pres. of AFOREBARRE. To prevent. 502. *See* BIFOREBARRE and FORBARRE.

AFTER. Behind.

"In the maner *after* before seid," *i.e.*, further back in the book. 184.

A clerical error, however, is to be suspected; and *after* should probably be cancelled.

AISCHIS. Ashes. 230.

AKNOWE, always joined by Pecoock with "to be," *e.g.*,

"Is *aknows* to God," *i.e.*, acknowledges. 348.

See also 149, 300, 472, and Gloss. Chaucer.

AL, 1 (more rarely ALLE in *sing.*, 331); *pl.* ALLE, 8 (more rarely AL, 70.) All. (The form "all" occurs p. 422, but is corrected to "alle." See also p. 342.)

More peculiar usages :

(1) Every.

"*Al* thing that entrih." 465.

(2) Both.

"With *alle* the knees." 204, 206.

(but perhaps for "all on their knees.")

Position in the sentence :

(1) "The *al* fulnes." 313.

(2) "The *al* hool substaunce." 11.

(3) "The hool *al* werk." 39.

(4) "*Al* the hool proces." 177.

ALABOUTE, 138; AL ABOUZTE, 333.

Completely round.

ALGATIS. Altogether. 130, 188, 395, 403. Explained by *omnino*, *omnimode* in Prompt. Parv. p. 9. (Camden Soc. Edited by Mr. Way.)

ALIENE, 407; *past part.* ALIENED, 225. To alienate.

ALIZTING, *pres. part.*, Alleviating. 550.

ALMES, (always *sing.*), 376; *pl.* ALMESSIS, 550. Alms.

ALMESFUL, 326; ALMYSFUL, 335. Charitable.

ALOON, 11; ALOONE, 67; also very often AL OON, 10. Alone.

ALTO. Completely. 484. (In composition with *broke*.)

ALWISE. At all. 472.

AMAGREY. In spite of.

"*Amagrey* his heed (*i.e.* head)." 52.

See Gloss. to Chaucer, s. v. *maugre* for the same phrase; and Richardson for the expression

"*maugre* his nose;" also Prompt. Parv. p. 319.

AMANG. Among. 422. (Once only, and probably by a clerical error; this being a northern form.)

AMBULER. An ambling horse. 525. See Prompt. Parv. p. 19.

AMENDIS. Amends. (But used as a *sing.*)

"A sufficient *amendis*." 110.

Similarly *riches* and *almes*.

AMONG. At intervals.

"*Seelde among*." 231.

AMYS. See MYS.

AN. And, (but very rarely).

"*An* whi not thanne." 140.

ANCHON, *n. pr.* ANCONA, 359.

AND, (emphatic, as *καὶ* in Gr.) Also.

"If thin answer is good, *and* such thanne a lyk answer schal be good." 519.

ANENTIS.

(1) In the eyes of; *coram*. 63.

(2) Towards. 377.

(3) In respect of. 1, 106, 129.

ANSWERINGLI. Correspondingly. 351.

APAIED (*past part.*) Contented. 276. See PAIED.

APOCRIF, 356; APOCRIFE, 366; *pl.* APOCRIFIS, 358. A fabulous story.

APOSTILHODE. State or office of an apostle. 295.

APPEIRE, *v. a.* and *n.*, 110; APFERRE, 305; *pres.* APPEIRITH, 338; *pret.* APPEIRID, 338.

(1) To injure; impair. 305.

(2) To become worse, or im-
paired. 338.

APPEIRING, *n. s.* Deterioration. 338.

APPERE, 227; *pret.* APPERID, 225.

To appear.

APPOSID (*past part.* of APPOSE).

Examined (in texts).

APPRISE, 51; *pres. pl.* APPRISEN,
p. 51; *past part.* APPRISID, 51.

To appreciate, value.

APPRISING. Appreciation. 26.

APPROUABLE. Worthy to be ap-
proved. 540.

APPROPRID, APPROPRID, *past part.*

Appropriated. 368, 369. *See*

Jamieson, *s. v.* APPROPRE.

ARAIÉ, *v. a.* To put on.

"Louȝer submissioun thei myȝten not
arais for to bisette vpon Crist him self." 207.

"To *arais* a bokeler."

Foll. to Donet, MS. fol. 31.

Compare p. 171.

ARCHIBISCHOPHODE. Office of an
archbishop. 426.

ARERE. Backwards, (or rather per-
haps,) loose, at random.

"Prechingis rennen *arere*." 90.

AROMBE. At a distance. 271. *See*
ROMBE; *also* Prompt. Parv. *s. v.*

AROUME, and Waterland's Works,
vol. x. p. 262.

As. Sometimes used almost re-
dundantly.

(1) Equivalent to the Latin *qua*.

"What euer thing onli . . . counsellith
men forto kepe certein gouernauncis,
groundith not *as* in that (*i. e.* in so far as it
does that) tho gouernauncis." 21.

See also pp. 43, 84.

(2) Equivalent to *quod attinet*
ad.

"Thus myche *as* here," (*i. e.* so far as the
present place is concerned). 435.

See also p. 35.

"Which *as* for thilk euidence is not
to be grantid." 108.

See also pp. 35, 67, 113.

(3) Indicating an aspect.

"Her blamyng . . . muste needis be had
as for vnjust and vntrewe." 455.

ASAIER. Attempter. 58.

ASCAPING; *n. s.* Avoidance. 165.

ASCHAPE, 175; *part. pass.* ASCAPID.
439. To escape.

ASCRYUE, *pres. pl.* ASCRIUEN, 476;
past part. ASCRYUED, 361; ASCRI-
UED, 362. To ascribe.

ASKE; 443. *pres. 2nd pers. sing.*

ASKIST, 293; *pret.* ASKID, 317;

ASKIDE, 362; *subj. 2nd pers.*

sing. ASKE, 170. Require;
deem necessary.

"In the multitude which the good reule
of the chirche bi resoun wolde *aske*." 443.

See also p. 253.

ASPIE, 92; *pret.* ASPIED, 354;

pl. ASPIEDEN, 242; *past part.*

ASPIED, 227. (*See also* pp. 119,
274, 341, 369, 514.) To dis-
cover; ascertain.

ASSAIE, 9; *pl.* ASSAIEN, 274; *pret.*

pl. ASSAIEDEN, 245.

(1) To make an attempt.

"Into whos making . . . y purpose forto
assaie." 9.

(2) To strive to know.

"Wolde God that thei wolden *assaie* per-
fitli what tho now seid bokis ben." 48.

ASSAIE, *n. s.*, 41; ASSAY, 514. Trial.

ASSAUT. Assault. 71.

ASSERER. Asserter. 411.

ASSIGNE, 225; *also* ASSIGNED, 225;
past part. of ASSIGNE.

ASSOILE, 16; *imp.* ASSOILE, 72;

past part. ASSOILID, 208. To
solve; refute.

ASSOILING. Refutation. 208.

At, *prep.*

(1) Turning the adjective which it governs into an adverb, *e. g.* *AT FULLE*, *i. e.* fully. 377. *AT NEXT*, *i. e.* next, directly. 177, 369 (in different senses).

(2) In presence of.

'We ben *at* thee,' translation of "Adsumus ecce tibi." 205

(3) With.

"*At* God it is possible." 296.

"Eting tho thinges whiche ben *at* hem." 388.

"Her meede is *at* the Lord." 389.

ATTORNEY. One who acts in the place of another. 396.

ATWYNNE, 33; *A TWYNNE*, 51; *ATWYN*, 11; *ATWIN*, 32. *Asunder*.

AUCTORITE, 531; *AUTORITE*, 69. Authority.

AUTIR, 151; *AUTER*, 563; *AUCTIR*, 409; *pl.* *AUTERIS*, 460. An altar.

AUTENTIK. Authentic. 435.

AVAUNCING, *n. s.* Advancing. 431.

AVAUNTEN, *pres. pl.* To vaunt. 123.

AVENTURE. Adventure; mischance. 393.

AVISE, *n. s.* Advice; counsel. 532.

AVISEMENT. Deliberation; set design. 124.

"Bi ooth and so bi *avisement*." 344.

AVISID (*past part.* of *AVISE*). Considered; deemed. 3, 80.

AVISIDLI. Advisedly; deliberately. 403.

AVISING, 75; *pl.* *AVISINGIS*, 75. Deliberation.

AVORTH. To afford., 306, 336, 377, 562. (Joined in each case to

an auxiliary verb. *AVORD* still occurs as a vulgarism, and *FORTHE* is used by Wiclif. See Lewis' Life of Wiclif, p. 120. The etymology seems to be *worth*; to be of so much worth, as to be able.)

AVOUTRERIS, *pl.* Adulterers. 103.

AWAITE, 421; *past part.* *AWAITID*, 226.

(1) To take heed, *u. s.*

(2) To await (in modern sense), 318.

AWAITE, *n.* Heed; caution. 226.

AWORTH. Worthily, according to Jamieson, (following Tytler), who quotes King's Quair, i. 6, where it is joined with the verb *to take*, as it also is in both places in this book, pp. 371, 382. It corresponds with the later form *in worth* :—

"Force made me take my grief *in worth*." Surrey, quoted in Richardson's Dict. In the MS. of the Folger to the Donet (fol. 44) the word is written *a worth*, which shows *a* to be a preposition.

"To the vertu of pacience it longth to take the greunsaunce *a worth*."

In every case the general sense is *with resignation*, but the literal meaning seems to be *according to its worth*, or *what it calls on a man to do*, *i. e.* *with advised submission*.

AZEN, Again. 397.

AZENBIE, 261; *pret.* *AZENBOUȝTE*, 261; *2nd p.* *AZENBOUȝTIST*, 261. To redeem.

AZENBIER. Redeemer. (Tr. of *redemptor*). 205.

AZENHOLDE, 381; *past part.* AZENHOLDE, 385. To withhold.

AZENS. Against. 8.

AZENSEIYNG. Gainsaying. (Translation of *contradictio*, in Judo, v. 11, Vulg.) 480.

AZENSTONDE, 102; *pres.* AZENSTONDITH, *pl.* 7; AZENSTONDEN, 479; *pret.* AZENSTODE, 254; *pl.* AZENSTODEN, 479; *past part.* AZENSTONDUN, 431. To withstand.

AZENWARD.

(1) Contrariwise. 33.

(2) Almost like *azen*. 398.

B.

BACUL. Episcopal staff, crosier. 386.

BAPTYM, 460; BAPTEM, 563; BAPTİM, 220. Baptism.

See Way on Prompt. Parv. p. 23.

BARUNRIE; *pl.* BARUNRIES, 400. A barony.

BATEIL, 431; *gen.* BATEILIS, 198; *pl.* BATEILIS, 482. Battle; resistance.

"The freelnes of the wil is . . . to be leid aside with greet bateil." 323.

BATEILFULLER, *comp.* Rougher (ways). 348.

BAWME. Balm. 358.

BE. The tenses formed immediately from this verb are thus inflected by Pecock:—

Inf. BE. 2.

Ind. pres. sing. The first two persons wanting, being always supplied by AM, ART. 6, 442.

3rd pers. sing. BEN. Once only, 162; if it be not a clerical error. Pecock has indeed—

"Ech of these deedis mowe to doon and *ben* doon," 120;

but he intends the verb to be plural, as does also Shakspeare, Cymb.,

"Every thing that pretty *bin*."

He also quotes from Wiclif:

"These thingis it *ben*," 468; and, "Tho it *ben*," 466.

But in these cases also the verb is really plural. See Guest in Phil. Tr. vol. 1, p. 156. Pecock everywhere else uses *is*. 1, &c.

Pl. BEN 1, 69, 205. BE, 319, 468. (*Are* does not occur.)

Imp. sing. and *pl.* BE. 72, 88, 201, 252.

Pres. subj. sing. BE, 1st and *3rd pers.* 8; also BEN (before a vowel), 257; *pl.* BE, or BEN. 94, 97, 177, 179, 216, 510.

Pres. part. BEING. 1, 511. BEYNG, 44.

Past part. BE. 216.

(*Been* is not found; *ben* occurs, p. 335, but has been corrected into *be*.)

BE, *prep.* By. 542. (Very rare form in the MS. of Pecock, but occurring repeatedly in Bury's citations from him.)

BEEME. Bohemia. 86, 87.

BEING, 159, 196; BEYNG, 268; *pl.* BEINGIS, 30, 51. Essence; existence.

BELDING; *pl.* BELDINGIS, 198. A building. (BILDINGIS also occurs 554, and BILDE seems to be Pe-

cock's only form of the verb, 183, &c. *See* KISSE, *also* Nares' Gloss. *s. v.* BLIST; but such variations are not confined to the poets; compare *gistis, gestis, &c.*)

BENEFET, 224; BENEFETE, 333; *pl.* BENEFETIS, 161. Benefit, gracious gift.

BENEFETER, 333; *pl.* BENEFETERS, 550; BENEFETOURIS, 511. Benefactor.

BENEFETING, *n. s.* Benefiting. 216.

BENEFICIE. Benefit. 200. (Tr. of *beneficium*.)

BERDIS, *pl.* Beards. 119.

BERE, 2; BEERE, 151; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* BERITH, 230; *pl.* BEREN, 202; *pret. 2nd pers.* BARIST, 200; *3rd pers. pl.* BARE, 205; BAREN, 530; *subj. sing. and pl.* BERE, 237, 253; *pres. part.* BERING, 201; *past part.* BORN, 203; BORNE, 205; BORE, 205. To bear.

Peculiar usage: *Bere an hond upon.*

(1) To accuse. 2, 253, 385.

(2) To ascribe to. 150, 339, 360, 362.

Also in the latter sense without "an hond," 362, 363. *See* Dyce on Skelton, vol. ii. pp. 241, 360.

BEWTE. Beauty. 255.

BI, *prep.* By. *See* BE.

Peculiar usage:

For. "Word *bi* word." 137, 144.

It is frequently disjoined from its case, with which in the mo-

dern language it is amalgamated, as *bi cause*: *bi kinde* and *bi fore* are examples of the same sort. *See* p. 1.

BICLIPPE, 271; *pret.* BICLIPPED, 271. To embrace.

BICLIPPING, *n. s.* Embracing. 271.

BIDDE, 112; *pres.* BIDDITH, 111; *pret.* BADE, 138; *subj.* BIDDE, 16; *pres. part.* BIDDING, 113; *past part.* BEDE, 115; BEDEN, 23; BEDUN, 111. To bid.

BIDOTE; *past part.* BIDOTID, 145. To cause to dote; deceive.

BIER. A buyer. 469.

BIFALLE, 469; *pres.* BIFALLITH, 541; *pret.* BIFILLE, 86, 447; *subj.* BIFALLE, 177. To happen.

"As if any newe thing *bifalle* to you." 177.

BIFOREBARRE; *pres.* BIFORBARRITH, 477; *pl.* BIFOREBARREN, 478. To prevent, preclude. *See* FORBARRE.

BIGETE, 499; BIGETUN, 497; BIGETEN, 413; *past part.* of BIGETE, 375. To beget.

BIGGE, 280, 493; BIE, 303; *pret.* BOUȝTE, 488; *pres. part.* BIȝNG, 468; *past part.* BOUȝT, 329. To buy. *See* AȝENBIE.

BIHEEST, *n. s.* Promise. 405.

BIHETE, 398; *pret.* BIHIȝTE, 276, 404; *pres. part.* BIHETING, 124; *past part.* BIHIȝT, 114, 181, 404. To promise. *See* Way on Prompt. Parv. p. 29.

BIHOLDE, *v. a. and n.*; *pres. sing.* BIHOLDITH, 280; *pl.* BIHOLDEN, 45; *pres. part.* BIHOLDING, 85, 436; *past part.* BIHOLDE, 138.

- (1) To concern, relate to, 45, 85.
 (2) Joined with *azens* or *to=* To be opposite to. 280, 546.
 (3) To behold (in the modern sense). 138.
- BIHOLDEABLE (expl. by *speculable*, 134). Theoretical, speculative. 37, 134. (Epith. of *truths*.)
- BIHOLDING, *n. s.* Reference. 17.
- BIHOUE. Behoof, profit. 16, 66.
- BIHOUEFULLI. Profitably. 47.
- BILEEUE. Belief. 242.
- BINDE, 557; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* BINDITH, 317; *pl.* BINDEN, 506; BYNDEN, 557; *pret.* BONDE, 317; *past part.* BOUNDE, 18; BOUNDEN, 57; BOUNDUN, 494; BONDE, 297; To bind.
- BICUATHE (*pret.* of BICUETHE). To bequeath. 361. Cf. *Chese, chase; stele, stale; speke, spake.*
- BIREWE, *v. a.* To pity. 253.
- BIRIE, 178; *past part.* BIRIED, 39; *but also* BURIED, 31. To bury.
- BIRIYNG, *n. s.* A burying. 181.
- BIRTHEN, 19; BIRTHAN, 155; *pl.* BIRTHENS, 201. A burden.
- BISCHOP; sometimes used for the Jewish high priest, 436. Similarly *Levites* are called *Deacons*, 279, &c., from the analogy of the Jewish and Christian hierarchies, insisted on by St. Jerome and others.
- BISCHOPHODE. The office of a bishop. 380, 426, 529.
- BISETTE, *v. a.* 195, 207; *pret.* BISETTID, 295; *past part.* BISETT, 256. To employ (labour).
- BISITTITH, *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* Beseemeth. 73. This is the true reading, and both the alterations mentioned in the note are wrong. See Prompt. Parv. p. 367.
- BISYNES, 90; *pl.* BISYNESSIS, 9. Labour; trouble.
 "To sette . . . *bisynes* forto conquere Ynglond." 90.
- BITAKE, 107, *past part.* Committed. 40, 43.
- BITAKING, *n. s.* Taking. 128.
- BITHENKE, 166, 230; *pl.* BITHENKEN, 164. To bethink oneself of a thing.
 "We *bithenken* the persoonen." 184.
- BITOKENE, 141; BITOKEN, 144; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* BITOKENETH, 389; *pl.* BITOKENEN, 273; *subj.* BITOKENE, 144; *past part.* BITOKENED, 81. To signify.
- BITOKENYNG, *n. s.* Signification. 389.
- BITTE, *n. s.* A bite. 204.
- BITWIX, 69; BITWIXE, 69, 77. Between; betwixt.
- BIZONDE, 280; BIZENDE, 436. Beyond; above.
 "Ouer and *bizende* the citees." 281.
- BLESSID, *past part.* Guarded. 411. Properly the verb signifies to guard by the power of a charm, as in Milton's *Il Penseroso*—
 "Or the bell-man's drowsy charm
 To *bless* the doors from nightly harm."
 So too the proverb—
 "A penny to *bless* oneself with," *i.e.* to keep out the foul fiend hunger.
 (The type of the cross on the reverse of the penny has probably

- no connexion with the phrase). Spenser also has—
 "From blame him fairly *blast*,"
 quoted by Nares, who needed not to have hesitated at all about rendering it "secured."
- BOCHERI.** The craft or art of the butcher. 49.
- BODIED.** *past part.* Embodied. 245.
- BODILI,** *adj.* Material (said of a church, as an edifice). 392. *See also* p. 243.
- BODILICH,** *adv.* **BODILI,** 268. **Bodily.** 195.
- BOHEMERS.** Bohemians. 87.
- BOISTOSE.** Boisterous; rude. 9.
- BOISTOSENES.** Rudenes. 9. *See* Prompt. Parv. p. 42.
- BOKELER.** A buckler. 71.
- BOLK.** Bulk. 565.
- BOLLUN,** 479; **BOLNED,** 481; *past part.* of **BOLN**, **BOLNE**, or **BOLLEN.** To swell. *See* Gloss. to Wiclif's Bible.
- BOOCE,** *pres. part.* **BOOCING.** **Bossing**; projecting out (of carved work), 138. *See* Gloss. to Wiclif's Bible.
- BOOK,** 213; *pl.* **BOOKIS,** 15; **BOKIS,** 213. A book.
 Peculiar usage:
 "The *book* of mannys soule." 25.
- BOOLD.** Bold. 227, (*Bold* also occurs 274).
- BOOND.** Command. 316.
- BOONYs,** *pl.* 150; **BONYs,** 155; **BONIS,** 182; **BONES,** 27. **Bones.** (The singular, which does not occur in this book, was no doubt *boon*. *See* *stoon*, *book*, which sometimes reject one *o* in the plural; but such forms as *stone*, *boke*, &c., where the *e* merely lengthens the vowel *o*, seem unknown or almost unknown to this MS., and are perhaps a little later in date. *See*, however, **GOOD**; also **ZEEL**. The whole question of the mute *e* requires much more investigation than it has yet received. Certain preterites are written both with and without a final *e*; e. g., *stood*, *stode*; *spak*, *spake*; *heng*, *henge*; *settid*, *settide*, &c.; also *lithe* and *gothe* occur (though very rarely) as present forms.
- BOOT**; *pl.* **BOOTIS.** A boat. 30.
- BOTHE.** Both.
 Position in the sentence:
 "His *bothe* eplatis." 86.
 "Whose *bothe* premissis." 75.
 "The *bothe* premissis." 76
- BOURDE,** *n. s.* Joke.
 "To take *bourde* at," to laugh at. 156.
See Prompt. Parv. p. 44.
- BOURDING,** *n. s.* Joking; jesting. 120.
- BOWEABLE,** (explained by *redi*). Propitious. 200, 262. (Tr. of *pronus*.)
- BOUz,** 29; *pl.* **BOWIS,** 160; **BowzEs,** 160. Boughs.
- BRECHE,** *n. s.* Breeches. 118.
- BREDE.** Breadth. 25.
- BREED.** Bread. 225.
- BRENNE,** *v. a.* and *n.*; *pret.* **BRENT,** 225; *pres. part.* **BRENNYNG,** 259; *past part.* **BREND,** 29; **BRENT,** 17, 86. To burn.
- BRENNYNG,** *n. s.* Burning. 358.
- BRIDDIS.** Brood; in this case = *young birds* (opposed to *foulis*.)

219. Apparently the plural of *brid* in the sense of *brood*, not of *bird*. Comp. *Gesta Rom.* p. 196. (Roxb. Club, 1838.)

"He . . . put therein eueri daye milke, that the serpent with his *briddis* myght like hit oute."

See also *Wicl. Bible Gloss.*, *s. v.*

BRID; and especially Jamieson's *Dict.*, *s. v.* *TOD'S BIRDS*.

BRIGGE, 338; *gen.* *BRIGGIS*, 338. Bridge.

BROCKE. A badger. "*Brockeskynnes*," 309. *Wiclif's* transl. of *melotus*, *Hebr.* xi. 37. (*Vulg.*), for which see *Way on Prompt. Parv.* p. 25.

BRODE, 485; *BROOD*, 374; *comp.* *BRODDIR*, 80. Broad.

BROTHER, 2; *pl.* *BRITHEREN*, 63. A brother.

BUT. Except.

"Thei eten not, but thei ben waischen." 465.

Quoted from *Wiclif*, where this use is very common. *Pecock* himself hardly ever joins it with verbs.

"And *but* ech . . . schulde haue." 303.

"Thei ben miche to be blamed, *but* thei . . . kepe." 348.

In both which places *if* may perhaps have been omitted.

BUT IF. Except. 8. Treated exactly as one word.

"Sawe whills and *but if* he entermete." 481.

"Whanne and *but if*." 431.

See *NO BUT*. (Obs. *But if* also occurs in its modern sense=*quod si*, p. 64).

C.

CAAS, 342; *CAACE*, 493; *pl.* *CAASIS*, 243; *CASIS*, 154. A

case. IN *CAAS*, in the case in which. 231. (But IN *CAAS* usually=*IF*, p. 30, as in modern English).

CAITIFIS. Captives. 479.

CAN (*pres.* of *KUNNE*). I know; am able.

"But if he *can* of moral philosophie." 43.
"The more that he *can* in moral philosophie." 44.

"Manye *kunnen* suche textis bi her te." 89, 129.

"Y, by what y *can*." 69.

Also used everywhere by *Pecock* as in modern English, for the auxiliary verb.

Inflection:

1st *pers. sing.* *CAN*. 69.

2nd *pers.* *CANNEST*, 3; *CANST*. 3, 119.

3rd *pers.* *CAN*, 213; *KAN*, 245; *CANNE*, 2;

Pl. *KUNNEN*, 2; *KUN*, 394.

CARECT. Character; letter. 166.

CARK, 377; *KARK*, 307. Care.

CARKFUL. Full of care. 377.

CARPENTRIE. The art of the carpenter. 50.

CARTIS, *pl.* Charters. 402.

CAST, *n. s.* Throw of a die.

From this the following phrase seems to be taken:

"At his last *cast*," i.e., term of existence, 338.

CASTE, 518; *past part.* *CAST*, 528;

CASTE, 122 (*pl. form?*); *CASTID*, 53. To cast.

Peculiar usages:

(1) To risk.

"Perel is *castid*." 58.

(2) To cast in mind, look forward. 518.

(3) To add. 306, 528.

CATEL. Substance; chattel. 309.

- CATHEZIZED, *past part.* Catechised. 426.
- CATHEZIZER. Catechiser. 427.
- CAUSELI, *adv.* By way of cause. 474.
- CAVILLACIOUN. Cavil. 534.
- CEESE, *v. a.* To make to cease. 4. (Intransitive at p. 350.)
- CENSE. To offer incense. 169.
- CERTEIN. A certain number. 338, 358. (*See* Gloss. to Chaucer.)
- CERYMONYALIS. Ceremonial laws. 526.
- CHAAST. Single (merely opposed to *weddid*). 492. Similarly, *chastite* is, "more monastico," used for *celibacy*. 311.
- CHAFFAR, 99; CHAFFARE, 100. Merchandize. (Used metaphorically, 100.)
- CHALENG, 152; CHALLENGE, 558; *pl.* CHALENGIS, 558. An accusation.
- CHALLENGE, *v. a.* 558; *past part.* CHALENGID, 558. To accuse. *See* Prompt. Parv. p. 68.
- CHALLENGEABLE. Worthy to be accused. 538.
- CHALLENGER. An accuser. 559.
- CHALLENGING, *n. s.* An accusing. 559.
- CHARGE, *v. a.*
"Nile thou litil charge," *i. e.*, neglect not. 445.
- CHAUMBRE, 166; CHAUMBIR, 150; CHAMBIR, 284. A chamber.
- CHAUMBRING, *n. s.* The furnishing of a chamber. 521.
- CHEEP, *n. s.* Cheapness; plenty. 108.
- CHEERTE, 274; CHERTE, 121.
(1) Cheerfulness. 274.
- (2) Merriment; jollity. 121.
(Used in a bad sense.)
- CHEFFARING; *pl.* CHEFFARINGIS, 16. Trading.
- CHIEPING. Market. 465, 468.
- CHERING. Entertainment (at feasts). 371.
- CHESE, 88, 184; *pres. sing.* CHE-SITH, 187; *pl.* CHESIN, 331; *pret.* CHASE, 278; CHAAS, 349; CHAS, 349; CHOSE, 185; CHEESE 483; *pl.* CHOSEN, 448; *subj.* CHESE, 113; *imper. pl.* CHESE, 267; *pres. part.* CHESING, 230; *past part.* CHOSE, 112, 448; CHOSUN, 244, 559. To choose.
- CHESING, *n. s.* A choosing. 184.
- CHILDE (pret. of CHILD or CHILDEN. *See* Coleridge's Gloss. Ind. and Gloss. Wicl. Bible *s. v.*). Brought forth. 293.
- CHILDLI. Childishly; absurdly. 65.
- CIRCUMCIDID, *past part.* Circumcised. 526.
- CISME. Schism. 2, 253. (Written also *scisme*. 139.)
- CLAUSTRAL. Cloistered (monks). 537. (Distinguished from *reclusis*, *i. e.* *anchorites*, whose *clussorium* "appears to have often immediately adjoined the church." *See* Prompt. Parv. pp. 83, 142.)
- CLAUSUL, 16; *pl.* CLAUSULIS, 441. A clause; verse of the Bible.
- CLAYNG. Tumult; trouble. 307.
- CLEERING, *n. s.* Manifestation. 316.
- CLENLI, *adv.* Without mixture of error. Lit. without spot.
"Clenli and cleerli disposed recoun." 539.

See also p. 167, where the note is right.

CLEPE, 48 ; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.*

CLEPIST, 153 ; *3rd pers. CLEPITH,*

527 ; *pl. CLEPEN, 150 ; pret.*

CLEPID, 466 ; *pl. CLEPIDEN, 150 ;*

imp. CLEPE, 389 ; subj. pl.

CLEPEN, 151 ; *past part. CLEPID,*

4 ; *YCLEPID or Y CLEPID, 16.*

(1) To call, *i.e.* denominate. 4, &c.

(2) To call, *i.e.* summon. 389, 466.

CLEREE, *v.a.* To make clear. 27.

CLERKHODE. Office of a clerk. 380.

CLOISTROSE. Pertaining to the cloister. (Cloistrose observancis), p. 517.

CLOOTH. 303 ; *pl. CLOTHIS, 271.*

(1) Clothes. 303.

(2) Cloth. 258.

CLOSID, *past part.* Enclosed. 441.

CLOSINGLI. Inclusively. 111.

COLORABLE. Plausible. 536.

COLORABILI. Plausibly. 444.

COLOUR, 282 ; COLUR, 432 ; *pl.*

COLOURIS, 281.

(1) A plausible argument. 282.

(2) A figure of rhetoric. 257.

COME. To bring, come with.

"And thet wolen not come her thankis." 563.

(Possibly, however, *with* may have been omitted by a clerical error, or rather *come* may have been written for *conne*.)

COMMODITE, 214 ; *pl. COMMO-*

DITEES, 215. Advantage, profit.

COMMUNAUNCE. Communion. 134.

COMOUNTE, 345 ; *pl. COMOUNTEES, 347. A community.*

COMPLEYNE. To complain ; but used in a middle sense.

"Compleyne hem (themselves) to the iugis," *i.e.* make their complaint. 396.

COMUNE, *v. n.* To have fellowship (with a thing). 177.

CONDEMPNE, *pl. CONDEMPNEN, 4. To condemn.*

CONFERMEDLI. In a confirmed manner. 249.

CONSIDERABLE. Capable of being considered. 134.

CONTRARITE. Contrariety. 455. (This seems to be Pecoock's form, but *contraritees*, p. 242, has been altered into *contrarietees*.)

CONTRARIETH. Contravenes. 437. *See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible.

CONTRARIOSE. Contrary. 537.

CONVERSIS, *pl.* Converts. 59. (The plural only seems to occur in Wiclif's Bible ; *see* Gloss. : A CONUERTID is found, Matth. xxiii. 15.)

COOT, 85, 231 ; *pl. COOTIS, 519. A coat.*

COPPID. Crested. Metaph. *haughty*. 123. (*See* Rich. Dict., *s. v.* COP.)

CORINTHEIS, 56 ; CORINTHIES, 56. Corinthians.

COROWN. Tonsure, or rather circlet of hair left by the tonsure. (Tr. of *corona*, and explained by *tonsura*, *see* note), 387. The dandelion (*i.e.* its calyx, the seed being blown off) was called Priest's Crown. Cotgrave Dict., *s. v.* DENT. The origin of the tonsure is thus given by St.

- Jerome:—"Hanc coronam habent ab institutione Romanæ Ecclesiæ in signum regni quod in Christo expectatur; rasio vero capitis est temporalium omnium depositio."—Quoted in Decr. c. xii. q. 1.
- CORREPCIOUN, 1, 2; *pl.* CORREPCIOUNS, 394. Rebuke. (Distinguished from CORRECCIOUN, 1; *q. v.*)
- CORREPTE. To rebuke. 2.
- CORREPTING. Rebuking. 1, 2.
- CORUEN, 212; CORUUN, 114, 163; (*past part.* of KERUE. See Gloss. Wicl. Bible.) Carved.
- COSSE. A kiss. 271.
- COST. See NEEDIS COST.
- COSTIOSE, 371; COOSTIOSE, 370; *comp.* COSTIOSER, 231. Costly.
- COSTIOSELL. Expensively. 193, 377.
- COSTIOSENESS. Costliness. 553.
- COUEITABLE, *adj.* To be coveted. 271.
- COUEITISE. Covetousness. 148, 303.
- COUENABLE. Convenient, suitable. 124, 125.
- COUENT, 345; *pl.* COUENTIS, 348. A convent. See Prompt. Parv. p. 97.
- COUERCHIEF, 118; *pl.* COUERCHIEFIS, 119; COUERCHIEFIS, 119, 125; KEUERCHIEFIS, 125. A headcloth; kerchief. See Prompt. Parv. p. 272.
- COUNTRE, *v. n.* To encounter. 72.
- COUPE. A cup; but here used for *the pix* (tr. of *pyxis*). 203. *Cuppe* occurs 126.
- COURSLE, *adv.* In the course of nature. 153.
- COUTHE (*pret.* of KUNNE), 78; KOUTHE, 351; *2nd pers. sing.* COUTHIST, 119; *pl.* COUTHEN, 68; more rarely COUTHE, 89, 149; see also p. 123; KOUTHEN, 366. Could. See Guest in Phil. Soc. Tr., vol. 2. p. 153.)
- CRAFTIOSE.
- (1) Artistic, skilful. 198.
- (2) Belonging to a craft or trade. 450.
- CREATURE. The Creation. 480.
- CREME. Chrism. 460.
- CRISTEN, *adj.* Christian. 153. (*Singular and plural.*)
- CRISTEN, *n.s.* 182; *pl.* CRISTENE, 149, 182, 511. Christiana. (Used substantively, but declined as an adjective.)
- CRISTENHODE. Christianity, *i.e.* the state of a disciple of Christ. 69.
- CRISTENTE. Christianity, *i.e.* the religion of Christ. 535.
- CRUELNES. Cruelty. 324, (where CRUELTE also occurs.)
- CUMBERAUNCE. Trouble; care. 537.
- CUMPENYING, 534; CUMPANYNG, 159. Intercourse.
- CURIOSITE. Niceness. 553. Explained by *artificiositas*. Prompt. Parv. p. 93.
- CURTEIS. Courteous. 244.
- CUSTOMABILI. Customarily. 413.
- CUSTOMABLE. Habitual (sinner). 414.
- CUTLERI, 50; CUTELLERIE, 50. The art of the cutler.

D.

DAI, 250; *pl.* DAIES, 250; DEIES, 250. A day.

DAMAGEFUL. Injurious. 182, 244.

DAMPNACIOUN. Damnation. 275.

DAUNCE, *n.s.* Metaph., Disturbance, or rather, perhaps, sport. 86. (Possibly a clerical error for *chaunce*, but?).

DEEDLI.

(1) Mortal, *i.e.* subject to death (of man). Tr. of *mortalis homo*. 205.

(2) Mortal, *i.e.* subjecting to death (of sin). 276.

DEEME, 63; DEEM, 106; *pres.* 2nd *pers.* DEEMEST, 63; DEMEST, 63; 3rd *pers.* DEEMTH, 450; DEEMETH, 231; *pl.* DEEMEN, 417; DEMEN, 110; *pret.* DEEMED, 244; *subj.* DEME, 311; *imper. pl.* DEEME, 420; *past part.* DEEMED, 63. To judge.

DEETH, 204; *pl.* DEETHIS, 376. Death.

DEFAUTE, 2; *pl.* DEFAUTIS, 2.

(1) Fault. 2.

(2) Fail, lack. 6, 9, 343.

DEFAUTI. Faulty. 72, 563.

DEFOULE, 466; *pres.* 3rd *pers.* DEFOULITH, 464; *pl.* DEFOULEN, 465. To defile.

DEFOULING, *n.s.* Defilement. 466.

DEINTE. Fondness. 66, 251. See Coleridge's Glossarial Index, *s.v.* DAINTY.

DEKEN, 173; *pl.* DEKENIS, 280; DEKENYS, 277; DEKENES, 279.

(1) A deacon. 332.

(2) A Levite. 280.

See BISCHOP.

DEKENHODE. Office of (a Christian) deacon. 332.

DELICIOSITE. Delectableness. 255.

DELUYNG *n.s.* Usually explained by *digging*, but apparently distinguished from it in several passages quoted in Richardson's Dict., *s.v.* DELVE. *Delf* is used for a mine, and *to delve* appears to mean to dig deep. 228. See Prompt, Parv. p. 118.

DELYUERANCE. A discharge of a thing; (said both of the giver and the receiver). 404.

DEMENE, *v.a.* To manage (land); conduct (reasoning). 87, 312.

DEMENTYNG, *n.s.* Managing (of land). 288.

DEMENYS, *pl.* Managements. 289, 290.

DENARIE. A Roman *denarius*; the tribute-penny. 140.

DENOUNCE; *pres. part.* DENOUNCING, 398; *past part.* DENOUNCED, 398. To announce.

DEPART, *v.a.* and *n.*; *pres.* 3rd *pers. sing.* DEPARTITH, 134; *pret.* DEPARTID, 276; *pl.* DEPARTIDEN, 309; *past part.* DEPARTID, 34.

(1) To separate; divide. 134, &c.

(2) More rarely, to depart.

"Whannesche *departid*." 174.

"Whanne he were *departid* frothens." 197.

(The latter example shows the origin of the modern usage.)

DEPARTABLE. Separable. 282.

DEPARTING, *n.s.* Partition. 278, 407.

DEPE, 38, 541; *comp.* DEPPIR, 159.

Deep; low.

"Summen wolen knele *deppir*." 159.

DESPENSATOURIS, *pl.* Dispensers. 409.

DETECTE, *v. a.* To accuse. 88.

DETRACTE, *v. a.*; *pres. pl.* DETRACTEN, 417. To vilify.

"Thei *detracten* the clergie."

The active use occurs also in Drayton, cited in Richardson's Dict., *s. v.*

DEVISELI, *prop.* Dividedly; but used technically in law to express the testamentary gift of lands (not chattels) by partition. (Opposed to *jointly*). 398.

DIDE, *n. s.* A deed. 159. (But *deede* and *dede* also occur, 259.)

DIFFAME, *n. s.* Evil report. 78, 110.

DIGNE. Worthy. 90.

DISCIPLEHODE, 295; DISCIPILHODE, 295. The state or office of a disciple.

DISCORDE, *v. n.*, 320; *pl.* DISCORDEN, 320. To disagree.

DISCOVER, *pres. part.* DISCOVERYNG, 206; *past part.* DISCOVERED, 206. To uncover; make bare (a crucifix).

DISCRIUYNG, *n. s.* Description, 526.

DISCRYUE, *pres. part.* DISCRYUYNG, 277; *past part.* DISCRYUED, 408; DISCRIUED, 401; DESCRUED, 408. To describe.

DISESID, *past part.* Put out of one's ease. 370.

DISGISINGIS, *pl.* Pastimes of performers in disguise.

"Nyse *disgisings* of arales." 371. *i.e.* pastimes performed in *disguised* array.

"There see I many an uncouth *disguising* in the array of thilke knightis proud."

Chaucer's Flower and Leaf.

See also Richardson's Dict., *s. v.*

DISGUISE.

DISPERCLID (*past part.* of DISPERCLE or DISPARCLE. See Richardson's Dict., *s.v.*) Dispersed. 318.

DISPLESAUNT. Unpleasant; displeasing. 522.

DISPREISABLE, *verb adj.* Unpraiseworthy. 325.

DISTRUYED, 234; DESTROYED, 86; *past part.* Destroyed. (DISTROIE and DISTROIED also occur 110, 234.)

DISTURBLAUNCE, 2, 87, 253; *pl.* DISTURBLAUNCIS, 401. A disturbance.

DISTURBLERS, *pl.* Disturbers. 139.

DISTURBLID, *past part.* Disturbed. 329.

DO, 96; *pres. sing. 2nd pers.* DOOST, 63; *3rd pers.* DOOTH, 9; DO-ITH, 223; DOTH, 34; *pl.* DOON, 75, 39; *pret. sing. 2nd pers.* DIDIST, 259; *3rd pers.* DIDE, 34; *pl.* DIDEN, 35; *subj.* DO, 2; *pl.* DOON, 416; *imper.* DO, 198; *pres. part.* DOING, 237, 420; *past part.* DOON, 14; DOUN, 111; DON, 13; DO, 1. (Three of these forms occur in the same sentence, 236). To do.

Peculiar usages:

"Doing to wite." *i.e.* explaining. 1.

"Doon into her deeth," *i.e.* put to death. 564.

DOABLE. Capable of being done. 134.

DOCTOURMONGERS, *pl.* A nickname for a certain class of Lollards. 87.

DOD, (*past part.* of DODDE. See Levit. xix. 27, Wicl. Bible). Clipped short; '*decomatus*,' (of the head). 135. See Way on Prompt. Parv. p. 125.

DONATOURIS, *pl.* Donors. 412.

DONET. A grammar; so named from the grammarian Donatus. (See Cotgrave's Dict., *s. v.* DONAT.) *The Donet into Cristen religioun*, and *The folewer to the Donet*, are titles of two works of Pecock, often quoted in The Re-pressor (see Index), who says, (Donet, MS. fol. 1):—

"As the comoun *donet* berith himsilfe towards the full kunnyng of Latyn, so this booke for Goddis laws: therefore this booke might be conveniently called The Donet, or key to Cristen religioun."

(quoted in Lewis' Life of Pecock, p. 317). See also Waterland's Works, vol. x. p. 236, Gloss. to Chaucer, and Prompt. Parv. p. 126.

DOOLE, *n. s.* Dole; distribution. 375.

DOOM, 17; DOM, 473; *pl.* DOOMYS, 179; DOOMES, 485; DOMES, 179.

(1) Judgment (of reason). 179, &c.

(2) Condemnation. 421.

DOSSERS. Expl. by *paniers*. 30. See Way's note on Prompt. Parv. p. 125.

DOTID, *past part.* of DOTE. Befooled. 145.

DOUBLE. Guilty of duplicity. 152.

DOUTABLE. Doubtful. 88.

DOUȝTIR, 176; *pl.* DOUȝTRIS, 500. A daughter.

DOUȝTY. Active (into good works). 14.

DOUȝTYNES. Activity, perseverance. 342.

"The principal circumstance of *douȝtines* . . . is excellent hardness."

Follower to the Donet, MS. fol. 99.

DRAWE, 228; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* DRAWITH, 66; *pret.* DROWE, 194; *past part.* DRAWE, 277, 305; DRAWEN, 343; DRAWUN, 163. To draw.

DREDE, 87, 165; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* DREDITH, 507; *pl.* DREDEN, 522; *imp. pl.* DREDE, 482; *pres. part.* DREDING, 224; *past part.* DRAD, 249. To dread, fear.

"It is ful micheto *drede*," *i. e.* to be feared 331.

DREEDFUL. Full of fear. 509.

DRENCH, 274; *pres. pl.* DRENCHEN, 303 (prop. to drown, see Gl. Wicl. Bible, but metaph.) To destroy (a man, leisure).

DRESSE, 42; *pres. part.* DRESSING, 251; *past part.* DRESSID, 2.

(1) To address, 2.

(2) To guide, direct, 42, 73.

DRYUE, 291; *pres. pl.* DRYUEN, 8; *pres. part.* DRYUYNG, 372; DRIVING, 373; *past part.* DRIUEN, 373; DRYUE, 443.

(1) To compel. 253.

(2) To conclude, prove. 443, &c. Sometimes joined in this sense with "out." 8.

DUCHENODE. Office of a duke 429.

DUKE, 197; *pl.* DUKIS, 381, 460. A leader of any kind. (Joshua and bishops so called, *n. s.*)

S S

DURE, *v. n.*, 326 ; *pret.* DURID, 525.
To endure.

E.

EELDE, *adj.* 269 ; EELD, 479 ;
comp. ELDRE (men), 464, 465 ;
EELDIR (story), 356 ; ELDIR, 210 ;
sup. ELDIST (ordinauncis), 394 ;
EELDIST (time), 406. Old,
ancient. (Pecock also uses the
form *oolde*, 269 ; *oold*, 307.)

EELDE, *n. s.* Old age. 303. *See*
Prompt. Parv. p. 137.

EENDLI, *adv.* Finally. 462.

EFTSOONE. Again ; for the second
time. 142, 172, 201, 254, 262,
294, 540. (*See* Waterland's
Works, vol. x. p. 226.)

EIR, *n. s.* The air. 350.

EKE (rarely used by Pecock).

(1) Also. 209, 389.

(2) Therefore also. 8.

ELLIS.

(1) Else (in various senses).

"Sumwhere *ellis*." 32.

"For *ellis* God had ben, &c." 137.

(2) Often almost redundant, but
in the sense of "otherwise."

"But if (*i.e.* unless) the bothe parties
schulden be herd . . . *ellis* myscheuys
. . . wolde ofte falle." 896.

See also p. 410.

ENAMELING, *n. s.* Enamel. 126. On
the art of enamelling, *see* Mr.
Way on Prompt. Parv. p. 260.

ENCENSE, *v. n.* To burn incense.
169.

ENCENSIS, *pl.* of ENCENSE. Incense.
162. *See* Exod. xxv. 6. (Wicl.)

ENCERCHE, *v. a.* To ensearch.

(1) To look into a thing, in
order to discover the object of
search. 71.

(2) To discover. 360.

See Richardson's Dict., *s. v.*

ENSEARCH.

ENCREECE, *v. n.* To increase. 347.

ENFORMYNG, *v. n.* (*pres. part.*)
Teaching.

"*Enformyng* and tising therto." 66.

ENHABITE, *v. n.* To dwell (on the
earth). 146.

ENHAUNCE, *v. a.* 63 ; *pres. pl.* EN-
HAUNSEN, 59 ; *pret. 2nd pers.*
sing. ENHAUNCIDIST, 63 ; *pl.* EN-
HAUNCIDEN, 59. To exalt.

ENQUERE, *v. n.* 238 ; *past part.*
ENQUERID, 187. To inquire,
inquire into.

ENQUIRAUNCE, 134 ; ENQUERAUNCE,
227 ; *pl.* ENQUIRANCIS, 188. In-
quiry.

ENSAMPIAL, *adj.* Setting an ex-
ample. 293.

ENSAUMPLAL, *adj.* Setting an ex-
ample. 309.

ENSAUMPLE, *v. a.* and *n.* 168, 235 ;
pret. ENSAUMPLID, 301, 310, 311 ;
ENSAMPLID, 311 ; *pl.* ENSAMPLI-
DEN, 314 ; *pres. part.* ENSAUMPLI-
NG, 127 ; *past part.* ENSAUMPLID,
311.

(1) To set an example of (a
thing). 311.

(2) To set an example. 314.

ENSAUMLERS, *pl.* Setters of ex-
amples. 412.

ENSAUMLING, *n. s.* 309 ; *pl.* EN-
SAUMLINGIS, 309. The setting
of an example.

ENTIRCOMUNE, *v. n.* To intercommunicate. 49.

ENTERMEENE, *v. n.* 49; *pret. pl.* ENTERMEENEDEN, 50. To intervene. Distinguished from ENTTERMETE :
 "Not to entirmete, neither to *entermeeens*." 49.

ENTERMETE, or ENTIRMETE, *v. n.* 7, 49, 50, 145, 470; *pres.* ENTERMETITH, 431; *pl.* ENTERMETEN, 470; *subj.* ENTERMETE, 431; *pres. part.* ENTIRMETING, 145, 431. To intermeddle, interfere, come into contact, meet (with a thing).

ENTERMETING, *n. s.*, 220, 556, 557; *pl.* ENTERMETINGIS, 220, 556. A coming into contact.

ENY, 7; ENI, 441. Any.
 "What *eni* thing thou schalt loue vpon erthe," 441,
 is probably a clerical error for *euer*. Also INY, p. 292 (note), can hardly be regarded as anything but a mistake for *eny*.

Peculiar usage :

"*Eny* of hem bothe," 558, *i.e.* either.

EPHESIE, 56; EFFESI, 56. Ephesus.

ERING, *n. s.* Ploughing. 228.

ERRE, 66, 74; *pres. pl.* ERREN, 564; *pret.* ERRID, 66; *pl.* ERRIDEN, 241; *pres. part.* ERRING, 480. To err.

"*Erring* steris," *i.e.* wandering. 480.

"The gouernaunce, aȝens which summe of the lay peple *erren*," *i.e.* stumble.

ERST, *adv.* Before; first.

"Thanne, . . . and not *erst*," 403.

ESEMENT. Relief. 120.

ESIER, *adv.* More easily. 268.

ESILIER, *adv.* (*comp.* of ESILI). More easily. 370.

ETE, 500; *pres. sing. 2nd pers.* ETIST, 68; *pl.* ETEN, 465; *pret. pl.* ETEN, 342; *subj. pl.* ETE, 124; *imp.* ETE. 68; *pres. part.* ETING, 13; *past part.* ETE, 498. To eat.

EUANGELIE, 54; EUANGELI, 60; EUANGELY, 59. The Gospel. (Pecock dislikes to apply the word to any book of the New Testament. See the places referred to).

EUEN, *adj.*, 280; *pl.* EUENE, 90.

(1) Equal. 280, 326, 424.

(2) Exact. 313.

(3) Fellow.

"Myn *eueno* Cristen," my fellow-Christians. 90.

EUEN, *adv.*, 229; *comp.* EUENER 215.

(1) Equally. 229, 313.

(2) Evenly. 215.

EUENLIER, *adv.* More appropriately. 496.

EUEREITHER, 8; EUER EITHER, 391; EUEREYTHE, 256. Both one and the other; *uterque*. See also p. 558, and Gen. xv. 10. (Wiclif's Tr.) See NEUERNEITHER.

EUERLASTINGTE. Immortality. 7.

EXAUMPLE, *v. n.* To set an example. 452. (Possibly a clerical error for *ensaumple*, but?).

EXPERIMENTAL. Having individual experience.

"*Experimental* witnessers," *i.e.* eye-witnesses. 448.

EXPOWNE, *v. a.*, 47, 470; *subj.*
EXPOWNE, 65; *pres. part.* EXP-
POWNING, 87; *past part.* EXP-
POWNE, 25. To expound.
EXPOWNERS, *pl.* Expounders. 56.
EXPROPRIACIOUN. The divesting
oneself of property. 505.
EXPROPRIAT, *past part.* Divested
of property. 477.

F.

FADIR, or FADER, 372; *gen. sing.*
FADIRIS, 339; FADIRIS, 250; *pl.*
FADIRIS, 397. A father.
FALLE, 87; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*
FALLITH, 77; *pl.* FALLEN, 199;
pret. FIL, 66; FILL, 286; FILLE
285; *pl.* FILLIN, 199; *subj. sing.*
FALLE, 236; *pl.* FALLE, 69;
pres. part. FALLING, 9; *past part.*
FALLE, 9.
(1) To fall. 9.
(2) Fall out, happen. 344.
FALSHEDE. Falsehood. 373.
FALSIFIE, *v. a.* To prove false (a
conclusion). 50.
FALSNES. Deceit. 7.
FEBLE, *v. a.*; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.*
FEBLIST, 275. To enfeeble (an
argument).
FEELD, 28; FELD, 28; *pl.* FEELDIS,
275. A field.
FEELDI, *adj.* Plain, open (country).
280.
FEELE, *v. a.* and *n.*, 412; *pres. pl.*
FEELIN, 27; *pret.* FEELID, 243;
pl. FELEDEN, 448; *subj.* FEELE,
27; *past part.* FEELID, 448. To

think; be of opinion. (In the
common sense, 146.)
FEELING, *n. s.*, 173; *pl.* FEELINGIS,
87. Conviction.
FEEND, 500; *pl.* FEENDIS, 240. A
fiend; the devil.
FEERD, 51; AFEERD, 51; *past*
part. Frightened.
FEFFERS, *pl.* Presenters; putters
into possession of a fief. 399.
FEFFID, *past part.* Enfeoffed, 398.
FELAWSCHIP, *n. s.*, 376; FELASCHIP,
377. Company; comrades; fel-
lows.
FELOW, 285; *pl.* FELAWIS, 397,
401.
(1) A companion. 285.
(2) A fellow of a college. 401.
FER, *adv.* Far. 154.
FERFORTH, *adv.* Far forward, far.
"As ferforth as it were doon." 73.
See also p. 372.
"In so ferforth that." 368.
FERME, *n. s.* Occupation (of land).
290.
FERSLI, 450; FERSELY, 533.
Fiercely.
FIX, *adj.* (properly *past part.*).
Fixt. 242, 392.
FLAOUR. Savour (of fame). 90.
FLEISCHLIHODE. Fleshliness, gra-
tification of the flesh. 319, 476.
FLOTERE, *v. n.*; *pres. 3rd pers.*
sing. FLOTERETH, 91. To flut-
ter.
FOWLE, 132; FOWLE (very rarely;
perhaps once only), 314; *pres.*
3rd pers. sing. FOWLEWITH, 115;
pl. FOWLEWEN, 361; *pret. pl.*

- FOLEWIDEN, 248; *subj. pl.*
 FOLEWE, 313; *past part.* FOLE-
 WID, 236. To follow.
 FOLEWINGLI. Consequently. 191.
 FOLILL. Foolishly. 171.
 FONNED, *past part.* Befooled. 145.
 FONNYS, *n.s. pl. and gen. sing.*
 Dotards, fools. 129, 156.
 FONNYSCH. Foolish. 156, 241.
 FOODE, 304; *pl.* FOODIS, 303. Food.
 FOOL, 442; *pl.* FOOLIS, 198; FOLIS,
 198. An idiot, fool.
 FORBARRE, *v. a.*; *pres. 3rd pers.*
sing. FORBARRITH, 487; *past*
part. FORBARRID, 487. To pre-
 clude. Compare BIFOREBARRE;
 and see Capgr. Chron. p. 136,
s.v. FORBARRE.
 FORBEDABLE. Worthy to be for-
 bidden. 470.
 FORBEDE, 275; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*
 FORBEDITH, 211; *pl.* FORBEDEN,
 457; FORBEDUN, 457; *pret.*
 FORBADE, 279; *imper.* FORBEDE
 ('God forbede'), 157; *subj.* FOR-
 BEDE, 253; *pres. part.* FORBED-
 ING, 478; *past part.* FORBODE,
 211; FORBODUN, 211; FORBO-
 DEN, 291. To forbid.
 FORBEDERS, *pl.* Forbidders. 492.
 FORBEDING, *n.s.*, 495; *pl.* FORBED-
 INGIS, 495. A prohibition.
 FORBERE, *v. a. and n.* 188, 228;
 FORBER, 78; *pres. pl.* FORBEREN,
 505; *pret.* FORBARE, 376; *pres.*
part. FORBERING, 341; *past part.*
 FORBORE, 228; FORBORN, 192.
 To forbear; abstain from.
 "Summe forberes al lynnen," 505.
 FORBODE, 291, 372; *pl.* FORBODIS,
 472. A prohibition.
 "Goddis forbode be it." 537.
 For which the abbreviated ex-
 pression "Goddis forbode" more
 often occurs. See 25, 98, 99,
 228, 253, 537.
 FORTH, *adv.* Forwards, in advance
 of.
 "The processis forth and afore the textis
 liggig." 52.
 FORTHERAUNCE. Furtherance, as-
 sistance. 308.
 FORTHERID, *past part.* Advanced.
 171.
 FORTHWARD. Forward. 13.
 FORWHI. Because. 11. (Not inter-
 rogative, though often so printed
 in modern editions of the Prayer-
 book, &c.) Usually written con-
 junctim in the MS., and treated
 syntactically as one word; thus,
 "Forwhi whi schulde he thanne more cor-
 recte . . . than be correctid?" 445.
 FORȜETE, *v. a.*, 163; *pres. 3rd pers.*
sing. FORȜETITH, 334; *past past.*
 FORȜETE, 83. To forget.
 FORȜETEFUL. Forgetful. 165.
 FORȜETING, *n. s.* Oblivion. 236.
 FORȜEUEIS, *pl.* Forgivers. 306.
 FOUNDEMENT. A foundation. 418.
 FREEL. Frail. 165.
 FREELNESS, 431; *pl.* FREELNESSIS,
 431. Frailty.
 FREELTE. Frailty. 314.
 FRERE, 558; *pl.* FRERIS, 555. A
 friar.
 FRO. From. 7. (The modern
 form seems not to occur in
 Pecoock, unless a vowel follows,
 as *from yuel*, 553, and that but
 rarely.)

FROTHENS, *adv.* From thence forward. 197.

FUNDACIOUN. Foundation. 250.

FUNDAMENT, 10; *pl.* FUNDAMENTIS, 11; FUNDAMENTIS, 76. A foundation.

FUNDAMENTAL. Original (historian), 350; (research), 413.

FYNDE, *v. a.* and *n.*, 242; FYNDE, 376; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.*, FYNDIST, 491; FINDIST, 49; *3rd pers. sing.* FYNDETH, 48; *pl.* FYNDEN, 102; *pret.* FONDE, 365; *pl.* FONDEN, 242; FOUNDEN, 249; *subj. pl.* FOUNDE, 346; *past part.* FOUNDEN, 249; FOUNDE, 534; FOUNDUN, 192.

(1) To find. 242, &c.

(2) Find out. 249, 531, 534.

(3) Maintain. 376, 377.

FYNDEABLE. Capable of being found out. 41, 97.

FYNDING, 390 (*q. v.* for a definition); FINDING, 391; *pl.* FYNDINGIS, 391.

(1) Maintenance. 305.

(2) Supply (of balm). 358.

(3) Discovery. 70.

G.

GADERE, 296; *past part.* GADERID, 201. To gather.

GADERERS, *pl.* Gatherers. 29.

GARNEMENT, 203. *pl.* GARNEMENTIS, 231. Dress, garment. (*Tr. of stola*).

GASTFUL. Dreadful. 224.

GASTFULLI. Dreadfully. 421.

GEET. A goat. 309.

GENERALTE. Generality.

"In *generalite*," i.e. in general, generally. 130.

GESTIS, *pl.* Deeds. 361.

GETE, 507; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

GETITH, 271; *pl.* GETEN, 67;

pret. GATE, 226; *pres. part.*

GETING, 304; *past part.* GETEN,

105; GETE, 192; GETUN, 42.

To get.

GILEFUL. Deceitful. 151, 484.

GILOURIS, *pl.* Deceivers. 480.

GIST, 284; *pl.* GISTIS, 406; GESTIS, 521. A guest.

GLEYME, *n. s.*; lit. *gluten*; metaph. Attraction. 377. (*See* Prompt. Parv. p. 198.)

GLEYMED, *past part.*; lit. smeared; *viscatus*; metaph. caught (as it were by bird-lime); captivated. 314, 376. (*See* Prompt. Parv. p. 198.)

GLOSE, *v. a.*, 47; *past part.* GLOSID, 31. To interpret.

GLOSE, *n. s.*, 65; *pl.* GLOSID, 55. A gloss; interpretation.

Go, 238; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.*

GOOST, 329; *3rd pers.* GOOTH,

238; GOITH, 237; GOTHE, 299,

(but in a later hand; *see* note: however, *LITHE* is written by the first hand, p. 27); *pl.*

GOON, 52; *pret.* ZEDE, 225,

(but quoted from Wiclif's version, where *wente* also occurs,

480. Pecoock himself always

uses the *pret.* of *to wend*; e.g.

wente, 328; *pl.* *wenten*, 180);

imp. sing. and *pl.* Go, 60, 175;

subj. 2nd pers. sing. Go, 175;

- 3rd pers. GO, 131; *pl.* GO, 236; *also* GOON, 378; *pres. part.* GOING, 476; GOYNG, 167; *past part.* GOON, 204. To go.
 "Which . . . hast *goon* *under* for us the lawis of deeth." 204, *i.e.* undergone.
- GODHEDE. Godhead, 498.
- GOLDSMYTHI. The art of the goldsmith, 50.
- GOOD, 69; GODE (rare in the singular, and possibly by a clerical error. *See* BOONYS, above) 44; *pl.* usually GODE, 14; *also* GOODE, 7, 96; and more rarely GOOD, 239, 498. Good.
- GOODIS, *n. s.*, *pl.* 290; GODIS, 296. Goods.
- GOOSTLI, *adj.* Spiritual (deeds), 307.
- GOOSTLI, *adv.* Spiritually. 561.
- GOVERNAUNCE, 1; *pl.* GOVERNAUNCIS, 67; GOVERNAUNCES, 105.
 (1) An ecclesiastical ordinance, 4, (and generally; rendered *gubernatio* in this sense by Bury).
 (2) Practice of any kind. 67, 371, 463.
 (3) Practical truth. 1, 11.
- GRACEFUL. Agreeable. 66.
- GRACIOSELI, *adv.* By the help of grace, (opposed to *naturali*). 305.
- GRAFFID, *past part.* Grafted. 68, 69.
- GRAMERCI (grand merci). Thanks. 130.
- GRAUNT FADIR. A grandfather. 150.
- GREE, *pl.* GREES. A degree (of any kind).
 "Grees goon out of gree," *i.e.* men of school-degrees go astray. 90.
- GREET, 247; GRET, 248; more rarely (in *sing.*) GRETE, 244; GREETE, 375; *pl.* GREETE, 358; GRETE, 248; *comp.* GREETER, 230, 244, (*sing.* and *pl.*); more rarely GREETER, 344; *sup.* GRETTIST, 248. Great.
- GREW. Greek. 438.
- GROUNDABLE. Capable of being grounded. 125.
- GROUNDE, 125; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.* GROUNDIST, 6; 3rd pers. GROUNDITH, 33; *subj. pl.* GROUNDE, 46; *past part.* GROUNDID, 125; GRONDID, 122; GROUND, 29. To ground.
- GROUNDLI, *adj.* 78, 88, 90; GROUNDLY, 413. Well-grounded (clerks, considerations, &c.)
- GROUNDLI, *adv.* Profoundly. 101.
- GRUCHE, *v. n.* To murmur. 369, 394. Similarly *grudge* in Ps. lix. 15. *See* Prompt. Parv. p. 217.
- GRUCCHERS, *pl.* Murmurers. 480.

H.

- HABOUNDIDEN, *pret. pl.* Abounded. 337.
- HABUNDAUNCE. Abundance. 307.
- HABUNDAUNT, 357; HABUNDANT, 359; *comp.* HABUNDAUNTER, 306. Abundant.
- HALEWE, 460; *pres. pl.* HALEWEN, 258; *past part.* HALEWID, 563; HALOWID, 479. To hallow, consecrate.
- HANGE, *v. a.* and *n.*, 197; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* HANGETH,¹ 17, HANGITH,¹ 172; *pl.* HANGE, 238;

pret. neut.; HENG, 199, 261; HENG, 139; *pl.* HENG, 22; *subj.* HANGE, 166; *pres. part.* HANGING, 221; *past part.* HANGID, 221. To hang.

(¹) These forms are written at length in the MS. by the original scribe in each case. To speak generally, however, the same verb has not both terminations, in this MS. at least; *m*, *u*, &c., being followed by *e*; *k*, *w*, &c., by *i*; e.g. *zeueth*, *spekith*. Other letters, as *d* and *g*, are not quite so constant; they are usually followed by *i*, but sometimes by *e*. See FYNDE, GROUNDE. At p. 46, *bringith* and *bringeth* are both found, and are written at length in the MS., but the former is in another hand. Such a form as *zeuith* is a corroborative proof that the correction was not made by the original scribe. See 264, note.

(²) The transitive preterite (not occurring in this book) is *hanged*; but this, also, is intransitive in Ps. xii. 9.

HANGEMENT. Hanging, execution. 324.

HAPPILI. Haply. 392.

HAPPLIS. Apples. 160. (But APPLIS below.)

HARNEISID, *past part.* Harnessed, i.e., dressed; said here of knives ornamented with gold. 556. *Harneys* is explained in Prompt. Parv., p. 228, by *paramentum*; where the verb also occurs.

HAUE, 1; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.* HAST, 68; *3rd pers.* HATH, 95; *pl.* HAN, 2, 6, 82; *pret. sing.* HADDE, 296; *pl.* HADDE, 279, 288; HADE, 433; HADDEN, 279, 288; *imper. sing.* and *pl.* HAUE, 226, 177; *subj.* HAUE, 2; *pl.* HAUE, 168; *pres. part.* HAVING, 252; HAUYNG, 34; *past part.* HAD, 12. To have.

Peculiar usages:

(1) To maintain.

"3it we mowe *have* that his 3iftis," &c. 95.

(2) To prove.

"Thou; it may be *had* bi the textis." 96.

See also p. 227, 343.

HAUNT, *n. s.* Practice. 103, 248.

HAUNTE, *v. a.*, 214; *subj. pl.* HAUNTE, 273. To practise. 214, 252.

HAUNTING, *n. s.* Practising, frequenting. 188, 236.

HAAUOUR, *n. s.* 'Having,' goods, wealth. 110, 281, 344, 345. See Prompt. Parv. p. 231.

HAYWARD. A foreman, 383, where it is explained by *overseer*. See Vision of Piers Ploughman, v. 13,624; and Prompt. Parv. p. 234.

HE, *pers. pron. nom. m.*, and sometimes, when emphatic, *n.*; he, 1; it, 4, 8. (The nominative plural used by Pecoek in all genders is THEI, 3, 5, 67.)

HEED, 52, 437; *pl.* HEEDIS, 439; HEDIS, 28, 52. A head.

HEEDHODE. The state or office of head. 439.

HEER, 118; *pl.* HEERIS, 118; HERIS, 124. Hair of the head.

- HEERE, 200; HERE, 242; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* HEERITH, 156; *pl.* HEEREN, 148; *pret.* HERDE, 221; *pl.* HERDEN, 187; *subj. pl.* HEERE, 6; *pres. part.* HEERING, 74; *past part.* HERDE, 253; HERD, 208. To hear.
- HEEREABLE, 74, 209; HEREABLE, 210. Capable of being heard.
- HEESTIS, *pl.* Commands. 465.
- HEET, *past part.* Heated, kindled. 330.
- HEGGE, 541; *gen.* HEGGIS, 184; *pl.* HEGGIS, 517. A hedge.
- HEGGE, *v. a.* To hedge in; to inclose. 517.
- HELPE, *v. a.*, 160; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* HELPITH, 263; *pl.* HELPEN, 211; *imper.* HELPE, 261; *pres. part.* HELPING, 261; *past part.* HOLPUN, 383; HOLPE, 284. To help.
- HEM. Them (in all genders). 2, 4, 67. (Properly *dat. pl.* and *acc. pl.* of HE, SCHE, IT, which are the nominatives used by Peacock, pp. 1, 7.)
- HER, *poss. pron.* (strictly *gen. pl.* of HE, but used in all genders, 3, 67, 22), 9; *gen.* HERIS, 397; HERN, 479; *pl.* HER, 3. Their, theirs.
- HEREMYTIS, *pl.* Hermits. 838.
- HERTID, *past part.* Encouraged, 165. See Gloss. Wicl. Bible, and Skelton's Works, vol. 1, p. 317, Dyce's Edition.
- HILDID, *past part.*, 323; HILD, 350; HILDE, 356. Poured. (Tr. of *infusus*). See Gloss. Chauc., *s. v.* HYLDE.
- HILDING, *n. s.* Pouring (out of texts). 89.
- HILID, *past part.* Covered. 303. See Gloss. Wicl. Bible, *s. v.* HILE, and Prompt. Parv. p. 240.
- HIR, *pers. pron.* (*obl. case or cases* of SCHE). Her, 495, 499.
- HIR, *poss. pron.* (strictly *gen.* of SCHE), 230; *pl.* HIR, 483; HER, 495. Her.
- HIS, *poss. pron. m. and n.*, 1; *pl.* HISE, 15; (and more rarely) HIS, 9. His, 1; Its, 10, 22.
- HISTORIERS. Historians. 366.
- HISTORIAL. Historical. 66, 293.
- IIȝED, *past part.* Raised. 249.
- IIȝING, *n. s.* Elevation. (Tr. of *exaltatio*). 201.
- IIOLDE, 8; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.* HOLDIST, 175; *3rd pers.* HOLDITH, 153; HOLDETH, 93 (but by another hand. See HANGE); *pl.* HOLDEN, 5; HOLDUN, 117; *pret.* HELDE, 494; *pl.* HELDEN, 233; *subj. pl.* HOLDEN, 91; *pres. part.* HOLDING, 481; HOOLDING, 71; *past part.* HOLDEN, 10; IIOLD, 144; HOLDE, 5. To hold.
- HOLDING, *n. s.* 5; *pl.* HOLDINGIS, 5. A tenet.
- HOMELI, *adj.* Intimate (with a man). 105, 352. (With a book). 150.
- HOMELI, *adv.* Intimately. 53.
- IIOMELYNES. Intimacy (with a god). 244.
- IIOND, 2; HOOND, 150; *pl.* HONDIS, 28; HOUNDIS, 30. A hand. (For *Bere an Hond*, see BERE).

HOOLE, 2; HOOLE (but in a later hand), 66. Whole.

HOOLSUM, 68; HOLSUM, 67
Wholesome.

HOSIL, *v. a.*; *past part.* HOSILID, 35;
HOOSILID, 135. To administer
the eucharist to a person.

"Ech man ouȝte be *hosilid*." 35.

HOSIL, *n. s.* The eucharist. 461,
563.

HOW, 94; more rarely HOU, 336,
393.

Peculiar usages:

(1) "As soone may a viciouse man . . .
finde the dew vnderstanding of Holi Scrip-
ture, *how* soone mai a vertuose man finde;"
i.e., as a virtuous man may. 94.

(2) "Thei ben stabill endewid, *how*
stabill," &c., *i.e.*, as stably as. 394.

HURTE; *pret.* HURTID, 227; *past*
part. HURTID, 110. To hurt.

HUSEWIJFSCHIP. Housewifery. 230.

I.

IAPERI, *n. s.* A mockery, piece of
buffonery (equivalent to "feigned
trifle" above). 138. *See* Gloss.
to Chaucer, and Junius.

IEWEN, *adj.* Jewish. 291.

IEWRY. Judaism, *i.e.* the state of a
disciple of the Jewish faith. 69.

If (never *ȝif* in Pecock), joined
with an *ind.* and *subj.* together
in the following sentence:

"If eny man knowith not or putte not."
53.

ILK. Every. 481.

IMPLIEDLI. By implication. 127,
164, 232.

IMPROUE or INPROUE, 70; *pres.*
part. IMPROUYNG, 96; *past part.*

IMPROUED, 5, 63, 103, 562. To
disprove. Explained by "*to*
prove untrue." 562.

IMPROUYNG, *n. s.* Disproving. 5.
In, prep.

Peculiar usages:

(1) On.

"Hangid *in* the cros." 563.

(2) In.

"For to vce imagis *into* the seid dew
maner." 253.

"A vertu caused of God *into* a creature."
153.

(3) With respect to.

"The prouer of treuth is *in* hem worthier
than the rehercer of hem; as the lord of
money is worthier *in* the money than he that
hath it by mustring and schewing it conli."
82.

(4) It is joined to many nouns
where an adverb is now employed,
e.g. in special, i.e. specially. 562;
though this use is still retained
in other cases, as *in general*.

INCLUDINGLI. Inclusively. 111,
127.

INCLYNABLE. Propitious (*Tr.* of
pronus). 262.

INCONUENIENT, *n. s.* Inconvenience,
79, 81. (INCONUENIENCE also
occurs; *see* pp. 263, 411.)

INFERME, *v. a.*; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.*

INFIRMYST, 175; *3rd pers.* IN-
FERMETH, 365. To weaken.

INFOLEWING, *n. s.* Following, imi-
tation. 313.

INGRAFFID, *past part.* Introduced
(said of a quotation). 563.

INLASSE THANNE, or IN LASSE THAN.
Unless. (*See* p. 175.)

"Hou ellis schulde eny man be boid, &c.
... *in lasse* than he hadde a stable riȝt
for to ask . . . his lifhode of his paraschens?"
393.

See also pp. 51, 113, 386. *In lasse thanne* corresponds to *In as much as*; and hence emerges at once the etymology of the word *unless*, which has hitherto been the *cruz lexicographorum*. *See* Richardson's Dict., s. v. *UNLESS*.

INREDING, n. s. Diligent reading; research. 37.

INTELLECCIOUN. Intellect, reason, (as distinguished from *affecioun*). 67.

INTERESSE. Concernment. 87.

INTO, prep. (often written *divisim in to*).

Peculiar usages :

(1) Until.
 "Pro Petir *into* the dai of Damasus." 360.
 "Is *to* tyme he be sure." 76.
See also pp. 86, 536.

(2) Towards.
 "Sche dide a good werk *into* him." 181.

(3) For the furtherance of, for.
 "Joun *into* religioun." 552.
 "Sche dide it *into* the biring of him." 181.
See also p. 210.

IOLITE. Noisy mirth. 121. Used in a bad sense; explained by *lascivia* in Prompt. Parv. p. 264. *See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible.

IOWSTING, n. s. Fighting in a tournament. 256.

IUDICIALIS, n. s. pl. Judicial laws. 18, 19, 526.

Iȝe, 3; pl. Iȝen, 74, 153. An eye.

K.

KAN. 245. *See* CAN.

KARK, n. s. 307. *See* CARK.

KEPE, n. s. Watch, heed. 583.

KETE. Bold. 5.

KEUERCHEFIS. 125. *See* COUERCHIEF.

KINDE, n. s. Nature; natural reason, 13 (*q. v.*), 153.

KINDELI, adj. Natural. 132.

KINDELI, adv. Naturally. 63, 94;

KINREDE, 278; **KINRED,** 173; *pl.* **KINREDIS,** 278. A tribe (of the Jews). *See* Ps. xcvi. 7.

KISSE, 207; *pres. pl.* **KISSEN,** 207; *pret. pl.* **KISSIDEN,** 270; **KESSIDEN,** 270 (*bis*); *pres. part.* **KISSING,** 555; *past part.* **KISSID,** 562. To kiss.

KNOULECHE, 92; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* **KNOULECHITH,** 344; *pl.* **KNOULECHEN,** 104; *pret.* **KNOULICHID,** 178; *pres. part.* **KNOULECHING,** 387; *past part.* **KNOULECHID,** 92. To acknowledge.

KNOWE, v. a. 10; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* **KNOWITH,** 53; *pl.* **KNOWEN,** 199; *pret.* **KNEWE,** 349; *pl.* **KNEWE,** 14; **KNEWEN,** 14; *subj. sing.* **KNOWE,** 313; *pl.* **KNOWEN,** 272; *pres. part.* **KNOWING,** 6; *past part.* **KNOWE,** 15; **KNOWEN,** 21; **KNOWUN,** 53. To know.

The Lollards called each other "*knowun men*," as being *known of God, or elect*, *see* p. 53; and Foxe's Martyrs, *passim*.

KNOWEABLE. Capable of being known. 41.

KNOWING, *n.s.* Knowledge. 2, 93.
KNYT, *past part.*, 82; KNYȝT, 82.
Knit, joined.

KUNNE, *infin. v.a. and n.*, 36, 131;
pres. part. KUNNYNG (*see below*);
past part. KUNNEN, 16; KUNNE,
25. To know.

"Thet schulen *kunne* rede." 183.

See CAN, COUTHE.

KUNNYNG, *adj.* (strictly *pres. part.*)
93; *comp.* KUNNYNGER, 335.
Clever, cunning.

KUNNYNG, *n.s.*, 2; *pl.* KUNNYNGIS,
49. Knowledge, science. *See*
also p. 7, 10, 16, 54, 61, 81.

KUTTEABLE. Capable of being cut
away. 160.

KUTTE, 153; *pret. pl.* KUTTIDEN,
534; *imper.* KUTTE, 306; *past*
part. KUTT, 328; KUT, 515. To
cut.

L.

LANGAGE. Language. 61, 66.

LASSE, *v. n.* 344; LASSEE, 345. To
diminish, grow less.

LAUDE, *n. s.* Praise. 197.

LAUMPE, 258; *pl.* LAUMPI8, 169.

A lamp. (This vowel change is
almost constant where the *a* is
long, as *aungel*, *aungelis*, 8, 112,
&c., but occasionally the modern
orthography is found even here.
See CHAUMBIR.)

LAUȝE, 156; LAWȝE, 156; LAUȝWE,
120; *pret.* LAUȝED, 120. To
laugh.

LAYFE, 444; (*see* 91, note); more
rarely LAIFE, 136, 275. The
laity; lay people. *See* Capgr.
Chron., pp. 102, 260; Waterl.
Works, vol. x. p. 219.

LECCHERIES, *pl.* Sensual courses.
(Tr. of *luxurias*.) 478.

LECCHOURIS, *pl.* Fornicators, sen-
sualists, (distinguished from
AVOUTRERIS). 103.

LECHE, 3, 508; LECHE, 507.
Usually explained by *physician*
in glossaries, but expressly dis-
tinguished from *physician* by
Maundevile, p. 238: he seems to
be inferior to the physician;
much like our *apothecary*. The
leche gave medicines (*see* p. 507),
but was also a surgeon. (*See*
Spenser, quoted in Richardson's
Dict. s. v.; and Prompt. Parv.
p. 291).

LEDE, *v. n.* 113; *pres. 2nd pers.*
sing. LEDIST, 329; *3rd pers.*
sing. LEDITH, 344; *pl.* LEDEN,
479; *pret.* LADDE, 35; *imp.*
LEDE, 264; *pres. part.* LEDING,
155; *past part.* LAD, 20, 214;
LED, 479. To lead.

LEEFER, *adv.* 78, 85; LEFER, 91.
(*comp.* of LEFE). Sooner, rather.

LEEFUL. Lawful. 135. For the dis-
tinction between *leeful* (*licitus*)
and *lawful* (*legitimus*), *see*
Prompt. Parv. p. 366.

LEEFULNES, 136; LEEFFULNESS,
451. Lawfulness.

LEERID, *past part.* Learned. 64,
426. *See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible.,
s. v. LEEREN.

- LEERNE, 58; LERNE, 58; *pres. pl.*
 LEERNEN, 54; *pret. 2nd pers. sing.* LEERNEDIST, 62; *pl.* LEERNEDEN, 18; *pres. part.* LEERNYNG, 59; *past part.* LEERNED, 59; LERNED, 50. To learn.
- LEEVIS, *pl.* 212; LEEUYS, 213. Leaves.
- LEIE, *v. a.* 52, 145; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* LEIETH, 258; *pret.* LEIDE, 224; *pl.* LEIDEN, 309; *past part.* LEID, 158. To lay (a wager 145; siege to a place, 258; one's self, or anything, down, 224, 309; aside, 158; enamel on a cup, 126; out expense, 91).
- LEISERFUL, *adj.* Leisurely. 541.
- LEIT, *n. s.* Lightning. 482. Not the same word as LIȝt, *q. v.*, the orthography of which is uniform, apparently. See Gloss. Wicl. Bible, *s. v.* LEIT.
- LESE, *v. a.* 229, 400; *subj. pl.* LESE, 307; *pres. part.* LESING, 54; *past part.* LOST, 307. To lose.
- LESING, *n. s.* 51, 351; LEESING, 359; *pl.* LESINGIS, 150. Falsehood.
- LETE, 90, 160; *pret.* LETE, 355; *pl.* LETEN, 120; *imp.* LETE, 516; *pres. part.* LETING, 279; *past part.* LETE, 158. To let, *i. e.* permit; let out to farm.
- LETTE, 309; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* LETTITH, 309; *pl.* LETTEN, 3, 208; *pret. pl.* LETTIDEN, 245; *subj. sing. and pl.* LETTE, 178, 253; *pres. part.* LETTING, 340; *past part.* LETTID, 171. To let, *i. e.* to hinder.
- LETTERS, *pl.* Hinderers. 3.
- LETTRID. Learned. 355.
- LEUE, 123; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* LEUETH, 125; *pl.* LEUEN, 67; *pret.* LEFTE, 325; *pl.* LEFTEN, 233; LEFT, 247; *subj. pl.* LEUE, 4; *pres. part.* LEUYNG, 177; *past part.* LEFT, 158; LEFTE, 158. To leave.
- LEUKE REMEMBRAUNCIS. Slight or lukewarm remembrances. 184.
- LEWID, 96, 198, 241; *comp.* LEWEDIR, 96; LEWDER, 488. Ignorant.
- LEWIDLI, 415; LEWDELI, 65. Ignorantly.
- LEWIDNES. Ignorance. 241.
- LEYSER, 9; LEISER, 129; *pl.* LEYSERS, 395. Leisure.
- LIE, *v. a.* To utter falsely.
 "Many lesingis y haue herd hem lie."
 150.
- LIFT, *adj.* Left (hand). 530.
- LIGGE, *v. n.* 272; *1st pres.* from TO LIGGE; *3rd pers. sing.* LIGGITH, 113; LEGGITH, 29; *pl.* LIGGEN, 27, 150, 233; *2nd pres.* from TO LIE. *3rd pers. sing.* LIETH, 150; LITHE, 27; LIJTH, 165; *subj.* LIGGE, 6; LIE, 272; *pres. part.* LIGGING, 24, 31, 40, 52. To lie (prostrate; in a chamber or grave, &c.; in wait; together.)
- LIJF, 539; *gen.* LYUYS, 536; *pl.* LIJFIS, 323. Life.
- LIJFLODE. Livelihood. 342.

- LIKE**, *v. n.*, 142; **LIKITH**, 186; **LIJKITH**, 267; *pret.* **LIKID**, 151.
 To please.
 "Whanne it *likith* to God." 186.
LIKELI, *adv.* In a likely manner. 133, 246.
LIKINGLI. Probably. 305.
LITIL, *adj.* and *adv.* 16; **LITLE**, 16; *comp.* **LASSE**, 84 (*see* **INLASSE**); *sup.* **LEESTE**, 147; **LEEST**, 272; **LESTE**, 213; **LEST**, 158. **Little**.
LIȝT, *n. s.* 16, 48, 97, 482; *pl.* **LIȝTIS**, 170. **Light**. (*See* **LEIT**.)
LIȝT, *adj.*, 100; *comp.* **LIȝTER**, 294; **LIȝTIR**, 268. **Easy**.
 "It is *liȝt* for to answer." 100.
LIȝTLI. Easily. 353.
LIȝTNES. Thoughtlessness. 344, 357.
LOGGE, 521; *past part.* **LOGGID**, 521. To lodge.
LOKE, 135; *imper. sing.* and *pl.* **LOKE**, 482, 539; *past part.* **LOKID**, 77. To look.
LOLLARDIS, **Lollards**. 128. For the derivation, *see* Hardwick's Gloss. to Elm. Hist. Monast. Cant. Seemingly identified with Wicliffites by Pecoock, however Elmham may distinguish them, p. 501. "Wycliviani, qui et "Lollardi dicti sunt." Knyghton quoted in Prompt. Parv. p. 311, *q.v.* *See also* Pict. Hist. of Eng. vol. 2, pp. 140, 141.
LOLLID, *pret.* Dangled. 374.
LOMB, 203; *pl.* **LAMBREN**, 388. A lamb.
LOND, 184; *pl.* **LONDIS**, 306. A land.
LONG, *adj.* and *adv.*, 121, 562; **LONGE**, 249; *comp.* **LENGER**, 64, 121; *sup.* **LENGIST**, 133. **Long**.
LONGE, *v. n.*, 34; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* **LONGITH**, 1; *pres. part.* **LONGING**, 183. To belong.
LONGING, *n. s.*; *pl.* **LONGINGIS**, 16. An appurtenance.
LOONE. Loan, money on loan. 16.
LOORE, 68, 86; **LOOR**, 293. Doctrine.
LOTHEE. To loathe. 342.
LOTHINESSIS, *pl.* Disinclinations ("into good.") 114.
LOTING, *n. s.* Allotment. 198, 278.
LOUCE, 441; *past part.* **LOUSID**, 441. Loosed.
LOUȝE, *v. a.*, 302; *imper.* **LOUȝE**, 302. To humble.
LOWTID, *v. a.*; *past part.* Bowed down to (said of images). 562. *See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible, *s. v.* **LOUTE**, and Prompt. Parv. p. 316.
LOWTING, *n. s.* Obeisance. 562. *See* Chaucer's Test. of Love (quoted in Rich. Dict.).
LOWȝE, 207; *comp.* **LOUȝER**, 207; *sup.* **LOUȝIST**, 207; **LOUȝEST**, 207. Low.
LUSSCHE, *v. a.* To pour forth (texts). 129. Compare 89.
LUSTI. Vigorous (speeches). 255.
LYUEREY. An allowance (of victuals from an abbey). 392.
 "Corrodium, a *lyuerrey* in an abbaye."
 Med. Gramm., MS., quoted in Prompt. Parv. p. 309, where *see*

Mr. Way's note on this use of the word, and on the practice of certain abbeys in dispensing liveries. *See also* Blount's Glossogr., s. v. LIVERY.

M.

MAISTRIE, *n. s.*

- (1) Mastery, victory.
"To haue the *maistrie*." 25a.
- (2) A feat.
"He dide a *maistrie* passing his power." 26.
See also p. 539.
- (3) Force.
"More . . . than this can not be had by
maistrie of Poules procease" (*i.e.* text). 333.
(*See* Gloss. to Chaucer.)

MAISTRIS LIERS, *pl.* False teachers.
(An inverted tr. of *magistri mendaces*. For the double plural *see* Guest in Philol. Trans. vol. 1, pp. 74-76). 478.

MAKE, *v. a.* 3; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

MAKITH, 154; *pl.* MAKEN, 3;
pret. MADE, 146, 519; *2nd pers. sing.* MADIST, 152; *pl.* MADEN, 69; MAIDEN, 447 (but corrected by a later hand); *imp.* MAKE, 200; *subj. sing. and pl.* MAKE, 25, 190; *pres. part.* MAKING, 249; *past part.* MAAD, 2; MAD (¹), 4; more rarely MADE, 8, 399. To make.

(¹) Always written in the MS. *md*; but *caas* is never written *ēs*; *waarnyng* and *warnyng* are both written at length; so that *mad* is probably the true interpretation of the contraction. In Capgrave's Chronicle both *pret.*

and *part. past* are written *mad* at length. *See* p. 5, and fac-simile (or MS. pp. 1, 175. Bibl. Univ. Cant.).

MAKEABLE. Capable of being made. 134.

MAKING, *n. s.*, 47; *pl.* MAKINGIS, 45. An institution.

MANER, 471; *pl.* MANERS, 471. A manner.

Peculiar construction:

"What *maner* men." 516.

But Pecoock has also the common expression; *e. g.* "*maner of clerhis*," p. 88. *See* Gloss. to Chaucer.

MANERS, *pl.* MANORS. 401.

MANHEDE, 245; MANHODE, 246, 500. Manhood, human nature (of Christ).

MANKINDE. Human nature, the human race. (Abstractedly and concretely).

"God descended into *mankinde* (*i.e.* among men), and . . . couplid to him a singular *mankinde* (*i.e.* the nature of one of them)." 245.

MANLI, *adj.* Human (opposed to *godly*). 330.

MANLI, *adv.* In a manly manner. 341.

MANSLEER. Manslayer. 177.

MARCHAUNDIE. Merchandize. 478.

MARCHAUNDIS, *pl.* Merchants. 480.

MARCHAUNDISING, *n. s.* Trading. 158.

MARCHIONAT, *n. s.* Marquisate, (Anglicised from *marchionatus*, for which *see* Ducange):

"The *marchionat* of Anchon," *i.e.*, the *marche* of Ancona. 359.

- MARKABLE.** Remarkable (words). 447.
- MASE, v. a. ; pres. part.** MASING, 230 ; *past part.* MASID, 145. To bewilder.
- MASONRY, 50 ; MASONRIE, 49.** The art of the mason.
- MAUNDEMENT, 100 ; pl.** MAUNDEMENTIS, 464. A commandment. (*Comaundement* also occurs, pp. 538, 464.)
- MAWMET.** An idol. 140, 141. (Probably derived from *Mahomet*, not from *maim*, a scare-crow. See Selden quoted in Richardson's Dict. and Prompt. Parv. p. 330, and on the other side Coleridge's Gloss. Ind. and ref. to Prof. Key.)
- MAWMETRIE.** Idolatry. 64.
- MEDLID, past part.** Mixed. 545.
- MEEDE, n. s., 389 ; MEDE, 388.**
 (1) Properly, reward, hire.
 (2) Improperly, finding or maintenance, according to Pecock, but with a view to effect a special purpose. See his disquisition on the word, pp. 389, 390.
- MEENE, n. s., 164, 263 ; pl.** MEENIS, 332. A medium, a means.
- MEENE, adj.** Mediatory ; intervening. 332.
- MEENE, v. a. and n., 332 ; pres.** 3rd pers. sing. MEENETH, 263 ; subj. MEENE, 250 ; *pres. part.* MEENYNG, 263 ; *past part.* MEENED, 390.
 (1) To mediate.
 "Iohun meeneth or helpith." 263.
 (2) To signify, intend. 332, 391.
- MEETE, n. s., 347 ; MEET, 347.** Measure.
- MEETENES.** Measurement. 347.
- MEETH, n. s.** Mead, metheglin. 121.
- MEIR, 215 ; MEYR, 518.** The lord mayor.
- MEMORIALIS, n. s. pl.** Shrines (explained by *mynde-placis*). 4.
- MENGID, past part.** Mingled, mixed. 242, 252. See Coler. Gloss. Ind., s. v. MING.
- MENTENE, 68 ; MENTEYNE, 69 ; past part.** MENTENED, 5. To maintain.
- MENYNGLI, adv.** In one's intention. 444.
- MERCIMENTIS, pl.** Amercements, deprivations. 367 (distinguished there from several allied words, from *fines* among the rest, by which it is commonly explained, as by Nares, for example, s. v. AMERCE.) *Deprivation* is, perhaps, the most correct rendering of *amercement*. See Johnson's Dict., s. v. AMERCE.
- MERELS, pl.** The game of nine-men's morris. 120.
 "A particular table with black spots at the angles and intersections of the lines. Each party had nine men. Strutt gives a figure with a full description of the game. Strutt, pl. 80, p. 237."
 Fosbr. Encycl. Antiq., p. 680. (The game is still played in some places).
- MERYTORIE.** Meritorious. 561.
- MERYTORILI, adv.** Meritoriously. 120, 235.
- METE TABLE.** Dinner-table. 267.

- MEYNE**, 235, 237, 375, 545; **MEYNEE**, 108. Retinue, train, household. *See* Gloss. Maund., Wicl. Bible, and Chauc.; *also* Coleridge's Gloss. Ind., Prompt. Parv. p. 332., and Nares. (From the Fr. *mesnie* or *maignée*, or rather from the A. S. *menegu*.)
- MICHE**, **MYCHE**, **MOCHE** (all on p. 130); **MICH**, 195; *comp.* **MORE**, 14; **MORRE**, 65; **MO**, 14; *sup.* **MOOST**, 480; *adj.* and *adv.* **Much**. Often joined with adjectives and adverbs, as:
- "*Myche* likeli evidencis." 227.
 "To *miche* homeli dele." 53.
- MORE** is occasionally added to a comparative, apparently for emphasis.
- "For *more* pleyner understanding," 344.
 (Compare *Most Highest* in the Prayer-book).
- MIDDIS**, *n. s.*, 142; **MYDDIS**, 142. Midst.
- MIRACLE**, 186; **MYRACLE**, 186; *pl.* **MIRACLES**, 187; **MYRACLES**, 187; **MIRACLES**, 187; **MYRACULIS**, 188. A miracle.
- MO**, *n. s.* **More** part, greater number.
- "The *mo* of the peple." 522.
See **MICHE**.
- MODIR** or **MODER**, 159, 555; *gen.* **MODIRIS**, 9; **MODRIS**, 66; *pl.* **MODRIS**, 397. A mother (literally and figuratively). Used also as an *adj.*, **modir tunge**. 159.
- MONASTIK**. Solitary, *i.e.* referring to a single person, opposed to *politik*. 107.
- MONESTE**. To admonish. 445.
- MONKEHODE**. Office of a monk. 460.
- MORALTE**. Morality. 155.
- MOREWE**, *n. s.* **Morrow**, following day. 24.
- MORNTIDE**. Morning. 24.
- MORTHER**, *n. s.* **Murder**. 516.
- MOTYUES**, *pl.* **Reasons**.
- "He muste take his euydencis and hise *motyues*." 489.
- MOWE**, *v. n. infn.* To be able.
- "To *mowe* lawfull be." 147.
 "No man schal *mowe* putte it down." 69.
See also pp. 104, 141, 297.
- The *pres.* and *pret.* are used as auxiliary verbs.
- Pres. sing. 1st pers.* **MAI**, 147;
2nd pers. **MAIST**, 117, 175; *3rd pers.* **MAI**, 8, 13, (agreeing with two singular nominatives); **MAY**, 12; **MAIE**, 250; *pl.* **MOWE**, 125, 120 (agreeing with *ech*); **MOWEN**, 253, 262, 263; very rarely **MOUN**, 273; also **MAY** (agreeing with *peple*). 182; *pret.* **MYȝTE**, 1, 17; *2nd pers. sing.* **MYȝTIST**, 271; *pl.* **MYȝTE**, 279; **MIȝTEN**, 120. (*See* Guest in Phil. Trans., vol. 2, p. 156, and Prompt. Parv. p. 346).
- MYLDE**, 203; **MYILDE**, 205.
- (1) **Mild** (Tr. of *mansuetus*). 203.
- (2) **Pious** (song; Tr. of *pious*; cf. *milde-gaben*, Germ., *i.e.* pious gifts). 205.
- MYNDE**, *n. s.* **Remembrance**.
- "The *mynde* of the benefet." 236.
See also p. 114.
- MYNDE PLACIS**. Shrines of saints. 4, 49. *Memoriae* (August).
- MYNDING**, *n. s.*; *pl.* **MYNDINGIS**, 191. A reminding; act of calling to mind.

MYNDING, *adj.* Reminding. Explanation of *rememoratiyf*. 137.

MYNYSTRE, *v. a.*, 85; *past part.*

MYNYSTRID, 49, 91. To administer, apply.

"Whanne a treuthe is *mynystrid* to hem." 49.

"Expensis therto leld out and *mynystrid*." 91.

MYS, *adv.* 564; MIS, 60; AMYS, 57. Amiss, mis- (in composition). Occasionally written as part of a word, *e. g.* :—

"This *myschaunce*." 68;

but more usually written and construed as a distinct word.

"This now rehercid foule and *mys* bering." 564.

"Thei vndirstonden thilk text *amys*." 57.

"To hem that *amys* treten the Apocalipsa." 64.

"Aȝens the *mis* vndirstonding." 60.

MYSTI, *adj.* Mystic (Tr. of *mysticus*). 203. See Capgr. Chron. p. 107, where it similarly signifies *mystical*; Prompt. Parv. p. 340.

N.

NAMELICH, 2; NAMELICHE, 188. (Changed into *namely* in Bury's citations.)

(1) Especially. 2.

(2) (More rarely) At any rate.

"ȝounn or *namelich* bihiȝt." 404.

See also pp. 25, 394.

NE.

(1) (As *disjunct. particle*.) Nor, (used to disconnect *small* clauses.)

"Not the lasse dyuerse, *ne* neuer the lasse," &c. 50.

"Neither mete *ne* drink, *ne* hors *ne* asse *ne* man *ne* womman." 227.

"Thei schulden drinke no wijn, neither ale *ne* bere, neither sider, neither any drinke which mai make drunke." 292.

(2) (As *cond. neg. particle*.)

"*Ne* were that," &c., *i. e.*, were it not that. 394.

"If *ne* were this forbering fro touche of money, y schulde loue money more." *i. e.*, if there were not, &c. 559.

See also 100.

NEDID, *past part.* Necessitated, compelled (to live in a certain manner). 320.

NEDITH, *impers. v.* It is necessary.

"That mannys lawe forbedith not the seld endewing *nedith* not to proue." 320.

But also—

"*It nedith* not that," &c. 151, 152.

NEEDIS, *adv.* 9; NEDIS, 188. Necessarily. The full expression is *needis* (or *nedis*) *cost*, (occurring also in Chaucer, Cant. Tales, v. 1479).

"And therefore *needis* cost it muste be grauntid." 301.

See also pp. 141, 372, 393, 399; and Notes and Queries, vol. 5, p. 338 (New Series), where it is explained, *by way* (cost) of *necessity*, the *needis* being properly a genitive.

NEEDISLY, 192; NEDISLY, 295; NEEDISLI, 372. Necessarily.

NEIȜBOREHODE. Neighbourship, relationship. 512.

NEIȜE, *v. n.* 479; *imper.* NEIȜE, 225; *subj. pl.* NEIȜE, 276. To approach, come near.

NEIȜING, *n. s.* 554; NYȜING, 555; *pl.* NEIȜINGIS, 556. The act of approaching.

NEOMENYE. Feast of the new moon. 481.

NETHERER, 1; *pl.* NETHERERS, 424; NETHERERIS, 426. An inferior.

NETHERTE. Inferiority. 416, 425.
NEUERNEITHER, pron. Neither the one nor the other. 14. (Also written disjunctim **NEUER NEITHER**, 52, 53.) See **EUEREITHER** and **NOT EER NEITHER**.

NEUERTHELATIR. Nevertheless. 374.

NEUTRALIS, pl. An appellation or nickname of a certain party among the Lollards, who probably held some matters of belief or practice to be indifferent. 87.

NEWE, adj. New.

Peculiar usages :

("To reherce a thing) of the *newe*," i.e. over again, anew. 366, 378.

"Religiosite foundun of *newe* by men." 532. i.e. lately, newly.

NILE, 98 ; NYLE, 52. (Formed from *ne* and *will*, as *nolo* from *volo*.)

Subj. pr.

"Whoenere wole or *nyle*." 428.

"Wole he, *nyle* he." 53.

"Wole thei, *nile* thei." 98.

Imper.

"*Nile* 3e deeme." 109.

See also pp. 176, 418 ; but all the instances of the imperative are Scriptural quotations.

See Gloss. Wicl. Bible, s. v.

NYL ; Coleridge's Gloss. Ind., s. v. WILL.

NO BUT. Except. 224.

No. Used redundantly with a negative.

"Thei be not necessarie, neither thei ben in no notable degree better." 469.

"No text gooth not so far." 277.

See also pp. 44, 361.

NOBILITEES, pl. Noble qualities. 114.

NOBLE. The gold coin so called, from the purity of its material, first struck by Edward III., and weighing in the time of Henry VI. 108 grains. 402.

NOIOSE. Noxious. 303.

Noo. Occasionally written for **No.** (*adj.*)

"*Noo* bischop." 102.

(where *no* also occurs.)

NOON, adj. (sing. and pl.) ; pl.

NOONE, 124. No.

"*Noon* newe prouyng." 40.

"*Noon* opener treuthis." 97.

"*Noon* othere 13en . . . and *noon* other power." 74.

In combination with *One* :

"Sithen *noon* oon kinde." 186.

In composition = *Non* in modern English :

"Withoute *noon* being." 242.

(Perhaps only a lengthened form of *noo*.)

NOTABILITE, 471 ; p.. NOTABILITEES, 474. An observation.

NOT EER NEITHER. Neither the one nor the other. 447. See **NEUERNEITHER**.

NOU3WHERE. Nowhere. 42, 118, 211. (*Nowhere* also occurs 208).

NURISCH, n. s. A nurse. 219.

NYCE. Fastidious.

"*Nyce*, fonned scisme sowers." 139, 534.

See Prompt. Parv. p. 355.

NY3E, adj. and adv. 361 ; *comp.*

NEER, 511 ; NY3ER, 272 ; sup

NEXT, 369. Nigh. "At next

Immediately. 369.

NY3NES. Proximity. 272.

O.

OBEISCHE. To obey. 420. (*Obeie* also occurs 421).

OBSERUAUNCE. Cautious observation. 226.

OCCASIONARILI. Occasionally. 158, 340.

Of, *prep.*

Peculiar usages :

(1) With.

"To loue God *of* al thin herte." 293.

(2) Joined to certain words it makes them equivalent to adverbs.

"*Of* hard"=hardly. 294.

Of, *adv.* Off. 52, 109.

OFFICE, *v. n.* 173 ; *pret. pl.* OFFICIEDEN, 174 ; *pres. part.* OFFICIYNG, 173. To officiate, perform divine service. (*Officiating* and *officiieden* also occur on pp. 173, 174, which are probably mere clerical errors : if not, they must, of course, be referred to a present *officice*.)

OFFICIYNG, *n. s.* Performance of divine services or offices. 173, 522, 538.

ON LYUE. Alive. 535. See Gloss. Wicl. Bible, and Jamieson's Dict., *s. v.* Gloss. Chaucer, *s. v.* ON and A.

OON. One. 4.

OONE ; *pres. part.* OONYNG, 271 ; *past part.* OONED, 41. To unite. See Prompt. Parv. p. 365.

OONHEED, 449 ; OONHEDE, 505. Unity.

OONIS, 359 ; OONYS, 363. Once.

OONLI. Only. 1.

OOTH, 344 ; *pl.* OOTHIS, 484. An oath.

OPEN, *adj.* Evident. 1, 232.

OPENED, *past part.* Made open, or evident. 232.

OPENYNG, *n. s.* Explanation. (Expl. by *doing to wite*.) 1.

OPINIOUN-HOLDERS. An appellation of a party among the Lollards. 87.

OR . . . OR=Either . . . or. 516.

ORDINALIS, *pl.* Service-books (containing the directions for celebrating the mass). 203.

OROLOGIS. Dials. 119. (Distinguished from CLOK).

OSTRIES, *pl.* Inns. 521, 523.

"*Ostries clepid innes forto logge gistia*." 521.

OTHIR, 4 ; OTHER, 2 ; *pl.* usually OTHERE, 2 ; OTHIRE 45 (so written at length, but in a later hand) ; more rarely OTHER, 68. Other.

Also used as *ἀλλος* in Greek, for *besides*.

"Both *preestis* and *othere* laymen." 199.

OUER, *adv.* Besides.

"And *ouer* 3e suffren not him do eny thing." 466.

This word is also used adverbially (= *nimis*), and is prefixed to many adjectives and adverbs, and sometimes written as part of the same word ; *e. g.*,—

"*Ouer* thouȝtful, and *ouer* carkful, and *ouermuche* louyng toward them." 377.

It hardly seems worth while to include these in a glossary, because the words are really distinct.

OUER, *prep.*, 2 ; OUERE, 428. Besides.

"Rememoratijs signes *ouer* and with heerable signes." 309.

See also pp. 2, 13, 47, 358.

OUERER, 1, 2; *pl.* OUERERS, 105, 299, 393. A superior. (*See* Peacock's Book of Faith, p. 29.)

OUERTE, 299; *pl.* OUERTEES, 426. Superiority.

OUERTHROWE, 256; *past part.* OUERTHROWE, 208. To overthrow. (The *pret.* of the simple verb is *threwe*. 260.)

OUERTHWERT. Perverse. 479. *See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible.

OUERWAITE, *v. a.* To look after. 449.

OURNED, *past part.* Adorned. 193.

OUT, *prep.* Apart from.

"More wijldell than thei schulden be sufrid for to write *out* of these now seid causis." 72.

"Not oonli in . . . writings *out* of Holl Writ, but also Holl Writt usith," &c. 287.

OUTBOOCING, *n. s.* A bossing out in relief. 138. *See* BOOCE. Also Prompt. Parv. p. 41, which explains BOCYNE OWTE by *turgeo*.

OUTDRAUȝT. Abstract.

"In the extract or *outdrauȝt* of The Donet," i. e. in The Poor Men's Mirror. 541. *See* Introduction, p. lxi.

OUTHER, *adv.* Either. 395.

OUTRE; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* OUTRITH, 471; *pres. part.* OUTRING, 89, (where *uttring* also occurs); *past part.* OUTRID, 90. To utter.

OUȝWHERE. Anywhere. 6, 26, 47, 211, 444.

OWE (*See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible, *s. v.*); *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* OWITH, 295; *pret.* OUȝTE, 7; OUT, 218; *2nd pers.* OUȝTIST, 3; *pl.* OUȝTE

or OUȝTEN, 71, 142, 157 (*see* note), 232 (*see* note).

From this preterite (used sometimes then for a present = *debeo*, as also now,) came a second *pret.*, which occurs in the *pl.* OUȝTIDEN, 157: *I owe, ought*. Compare *στῆκα*, formed from *ἴστηκα*; and *wonted* from *wont*, *q. v.*

OYNEMENT. Ointment. 162.

P.

PAIED, *past part.* Contented. 271, 303, 528, 552. *See* APAIED. (But *paie* and *paied* occur in the modern sense. 382).

PAMENT. Pavement. 215. *See* Prompt. Parv. p. 387.

PARASCHENS, *pl.* 391; PARACHENYS, 393; PARASCHENIS, 394; PARISCHENYS, 416. Parishioners.

PARCELLINGIS, *pl.* Partitions. 400.

PARCHEMYN. Parchment. 25.

PAREABLE. Capable of being pared away. 160.

PARTI, 39; PARTY, 39; *pl.* PARTIES, 1. A part.

PASSING, *adv.* 181; PASSING, 181. Surpassingly.

PEES. Peace. 204.

PEISE. Weight, pendulum of a clock. 118. *See* Prompt. Parv. p. 390.

PEPLE, 4; *pl.* PEPLIS, 464, 493. People. Joined to a *sing.* and *pl.* verb in the same sentence.

"The *peple* . . . witnessith . . . and crien." 204.

"Whanne the *peplis* weren clepid." 464. (From Wiclif.)

PERAVENTURE, 3; **PERAVENTUR**, 72.
Perhaps.

PERFIT, 196; *pl.* **PERFITE**, 233;
comp. **PERFITER**, 193, 348;
PERFIZTER, 560. Perfect.

PERFITING, *pres. part.* Making
perfect. 549.

PERFITLI, 12, 52; *comp.* **PERFIT-
LIER**, 253. Perfectly.

PERFITNES. Perfectness, perfec-
tion, 348.

PERSEN, *pres. pl.* Pierce, enter
(houses). 479.

PERSOON, 1; *pl.* **PERSOONES**, 2, 393;
PERSOONS, 394; **PERSOONYS**, 470.

(1) A parson. 393, 394.

(2) A person.

"A lay persoon." 2, 3.

PESIBILI. Peaceably. 363.

PESIBLE. Peaceable. 88.

PEYNE, 424; **PEINE**, 212; **PEIN**,
213, *n. s.* Punishment.

(1) Correction (used to explain
zerde). 424, 425. *See also* 429,
where however it may signify
pain, anguish.

(2) Labour. 214.

PHASE. The Passover. 527.

PHILOSOPHI, 7; **PHILOSOPHIE**, 24.
Philosophy. (*Philosophie* occurs
p. 39, but in a later hand.)

PHILOSOPHIR, 27, 308; *pl.* **PHILSO-
PHIRIS**, 14. A philosopher. "*The
philosophir*" (pp. 27, 308) is the
title given to Aristotle exclu-
sively, and he is similarly called
Philosophus by Aquinas in in-
numerable passages, and perhaps
by the schoolmen generally.

PILIOUN, 88; **PILLEOUN**, 89; *pl.*

PILIOUNS, 88; **PILLEONS**, 92. A
doctor's hat. "Et tunc solum
"doctores in theologia uteban-
"tur rotundis pileis cum prædi-
"cabant clero seu populo, et
"quale ornamentum capitis est
"pileum declarat S. Hieronymus
"in Epistola ad Fabiolam. Sed
"heu! jam sunt signa sine sig-
"natis seu significatis in pluri-
"bus," &c. Gascoigne, Dict.
Theol. in Append. ad Hemingford.
Ed. Hearne, vol. 2, p. 541.

PISTLE, 21 (where *epistle* also oc-
curs), 30; *pl.* **PISTLIS**, 118. An
epistle, letter.

PITE, 124; **PITEE**, 303.

(1) Piety. 124, 303, 262 (where
"*hauing pitee*" is equivalent to
"*piteful*," *q. v.*)

(2) More rarely used in the
modern sense = Pity, p. 324
(where it is contrasted with
cruelnes).

PITEFUL. Pious. 200, 262. (Tr.
of *pius*.)

PLEGGE, *n. s.* Pledge. 495.

PLENTEUOSE. Plentiful. 89.

PLENTEUSELI. Plentifully. 94.

PLESAUNCE. Pleasure, *i. e.*:

(1) Subjectively, Liking (of
the people). 6, 89.

(2) Objectively, Pleasurable
service (both in a good and bad
sense).

"Into *pleasaunce* bi which y wolde please
God." 90.

"Prechers þauen hem to flaterie and to
pleasaunce." 305.

(3) Caprice. 393, 426.

PLESAUNTIS, *pl.* Conveniences.
523. Probably an error for *ple-
sauncis* (*c* and *t* being scarcely
distinguishable).

PLITE, 286; PLIJT, 517; PLIJTE,
307; *pl.* PLITES, 220.

(1) Plight, *i.e.* State, condi-
tion. 286, 307, 517.

(2) Plight, *i.e.* Engagement.
220.

POINTE, 184; POINT, 236; *pres.* 3rd
pers. sing. POINTITH, 125; *pret.*
pl. POINTIDEN, 552; *past part.*

POINTID, 125, 184. To appoint.

POINTING, *n. s.* Appointment. 184.

POPEHODE.

(1) The state or office of a
pope. 426, 439.

(2) The reign of a pope. 357.

PORE. Poor. 6.

POWRE, *v. n.* To pore (in a book).
87.

POWRING, *n. s.* Poring. 85.

PRACTIK, *n. s.* Practice. 269.

PRECE, *n. s.* Press (of people).
271.

PRECHEABLE. Capable of being
preached upon (as process or
texts). 89.

PRECHER, 88; *pl.* PRECHERS, 159;
PRECHOURIS, 159. A preacher.

PRECIOSITE. Expensiveness. 553.

PREESTIAL. Priestly. 450.

PREISEABLE. Worthy to be praised.
173.

PRENT, *n. s.* Imprint; image. 38.

PRESENTLI, *adv.* By way of pre-
sence.

"God is lijk *presentli* every where," *i.e.*,
in an equally present manner. 183.

PREUED, *past part.* Approved.
306.

PRINCEHODE. The state or office
of a prince. 429.

PRISONED, *past part.* Imprisoned.
56.

PRISONYNG, *n. s.* Imprisonment.
57.

PROBABILNES. Probability. 133.

PROCEDE, 453; *pres. pl.* PROCEDEN,
453; *past part.* PROCEDID, 380.
To proceed, argue.

"Aȝens al this blamyng it is *procedid*,"
i.e., argued. 535.

PROCES, 55; PROCESSE, 355; *pl.*
PROCESSIS, 93. A part or pas-
sage in a book.

"Eny *proces* or parti writen in Holi
Writt." 55.

"Eny other book or *processe* or text of
the Newe Testament." 65.

"A long *proces* of feith writun in the
Bible," *i.e.*, a long doctrinal passage, or ar-
gument. 30.

"That it (the Tripartite History) schulde
be contynued in progresse and in *processe*
to The Chirchis Storie" (of Eusebius), *i.e.*,
so as to form a part of it. 355.

"It stondith well with the *proces* (text)
of Poul in this present *processe*" (chapter).
304.

See also p. 52, 396.

PROCUTOUR.

(1) Steward. 389.

(2) Explained by *attorney*.
396, *q. v.*

PROPICIATORIE. Mercy-seat (*ἱλα-
στήριον*). 174.

PROPRE, 49; PROPRI, 389; *superl.*

PROPRIST, 189; PROPERIST, 166;

PROPIRIST, 431. Peculiar, proper.

"His *propre* to him boundis." 40.

PROSE. The second part of a re-
sponse in a divine office, a se-
quence. 200, 262.

"*Prose* quas nunc vulgo sequentias no-
minant."

Orth. Grat. in Br. Fasc. Rer.,
p. 461.

"Neque enim Romana ecclesia ullas novit *prossas*."
 Eras. in Br. u. s. The *prose* mentioned by Pecock is written in rhyming *verse*.
 PROWER. Provider. 467. (Explained by *purueier*, 468.)
 PSEUDO (used occasionally as a distinct word by Pecock). Counterfeit.
 "What so greet myscheef schulde . . . haue come bi . . . riches in tho *pseudo*, as came bi her pouerte in hem, whanne thei diffameden the trewe apostilis?" 343.
 See also p. 493. Similarly Schol. Par. De peric. Eccl.
 "Sic ergo patet ex prædictis, qui sunt penetrantes domos et qui sunt *pseudo*."
 App. ad Br. Fasc. Rer., p. 22, and in other places of the same treatise. Elsewhere Pecock uses it in composition or connexion with *Apostilis*, p. 342.
 PURE, *adj.* Alone, by itself.
 "The rewme of *pure* Englund." 436.
 A modification of the common use in such expressions as "*pure volunte*," p. 457, i.e. mere caprice.
 PURSING, *n. s.* The bearing in a purse. 555.
 PURTENANCIS, 212; PURTENAUNCIS, 226. Appurtenances, (furniture of the temple, 226; ornaments of an image, 164, 212.)
 PUTTE, *v. a.* and *n.*, 55; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* PUTTITH, 73; *pl.* PUTTEN, 199; *pret.* PUTTID, 486; *pl.* PUTTIDEN, 67; *imper.* PUTTE, 55; *subj. sing.* and *pl.* PUTTE, 166, 102; *pres. part.* PUTTING, 340; *past part.* PUT, 96; PUTT, 117. To put; add.
 "If eny man schal *putte* to hem, *putte* Godde upon him . . . veniauncis." 55.

PURUEIE, *v. n.*, (and more rarely *a.* 523), 278, 375; *pret.* PURUEIED, 210, 279, 523; PURVEIED, 523; *past part.* PURUEIED, 66; PURVEIED, 337. To provide.
 PURUEIER. Provider. 468.
 PURUYAUNCE, 439; *pl.* PURUYAUNCIS, 334. Provision.

Q.

QUEER, 205; *pl.* QUERIS, 183. A choir.
 QUERELIS, *pl.* Quarrels. 393.
 QUESTMONGERS, *pl.* Informers, persons who make a trade of law-suits. 516, 540. Distinguished by Pecock from *jurors*, though sometimes used in that sense. See Nares' Gloss., *s. v.* QUESTMAN, QUESTMONGER. Lewis (Life of Pecock, p. 142) understands Pecock to mean by this word *pardon-mongers*; but this is impossible: they were indeed called *questores* (see Prompt. Parv. p. 383), and thus Lewis' error may be accounted for.
 QUYK, *adj.*, 221; *pl.* QUYKE, 151; *comp.* QUYCKER, 243.
 (1) Alive.
 "A *quyk* man." 221.
 (2) Lively.
 "Quyk remembraunce." 183.
 "No *quyk* foot forto go." 221.
 QUYKEE, 237; *subj.* QUYKEE, 7. To revive, quicken.
 QUYKLI, *adv.* In a lively manner 47, 235.
 QUYTE, *v. a.* To requite. 382.

R.

RATELER. A rattling spouter (of texts). 88. See Jamieson's Dict.

RATHIR, *comp.* of RATH. (See Coler. Gloss. Ind.)

(1) Sooner.

"*Rathir* or *latir*." 94, 95.

(2) More.

"*Lijk miche* or *more* and *rather*." 11.

RAUEYN, *n. s.*, 409; RAVEIN, 429.

Rapine. (Tr. of *rapina*.)

RECCE, 7; *past part.* RECKID, 182. To care for, reck.

RECHELES. Reckless. 307.

RECHELESNES. Recklessness. 344.

RECLAIME, *n. s.* 386; RECLAYME, 386. A protest against a thing.

RECLAME, *v. n.*, 398; *pres. part.*

RECLAYMING, 398. To protest; so explained, p. 398; this sense, however common now, is not the ordinary one in the older writers.

RECLUSIS, *pl.* Anchorites. See Prompt. Parv. pp. 142, 425.

RECONUENCIOUN. Covenant. 397.

REDE, 213; REEDE, 52; *pres.* REDITH, 6; *pl.* REDEN, 107; *imper.*

REDE, 255; *subj. sing.* and *pl.*

REDE, 58, 59; *pres. part.* REDING, 277; REEDING, 59; *past part.* RED, 496; RAD, 496. To read.

REDIER. Easier. 336. (*Redi* occurs in the common sense in the next sentence.)

REDILI. Evidently.

"The first premiss is *redili* trewe." 129.
"Ful ofte *redili* thei discorden." 320, *q. v.*

REDRESSING, *n. s.* A dressing up again. 86.

REGNE, *v. n.*, 299, 315; *pret. pl.*

REGNIDEN, 363; *past part.*

REGNED, 362. To reign (joined with *upon*).

REIATED, *past part.* Rejected? 139. Explained by *chidden* in Lewis' Life of Pecoock, p. 89.

REIOICE, 341, 398; *pret.* REIOICED, 362. To enjoy. See Water-

land's Works, vol. x. p. 266, and Coleridge's Gloss. Ind., *s. v.*

REIOSHE. (Pecoock does not use the word in the modern sense, but employs IOIE instead, p. 28.)

RELEEF, 182; *pl.* RELIFIS, 114. A relic (of a Saint). So explained in both places. See Prompt. Parv. p. 428.

RELIGIOSE, *adj.* and *subst.*, 319; *pl.*

RELIGIOSIS, 504; RELIGIOSES, 504.

(1) Living under monastic rule, a regular, *u. s.*

(2) Religious, pious. 485, *q. v.* When used substantively it has of course a plural, *e. g.*

"*Suche religioses maken*." 504.

When taken as an adjective the plural form is properly the same as the singular, thus:

"*The religioses persoonen*." 544.

But Pecoock has also "*religiosis persoonen*," p. 523.

See Guest in Philol. Trans. vol. 1, pp. 74-76.

RELIGIOSITE, 453; *pl.* RELIGIOSITEES, 531. A system of monastic observances.

RELIGIOUN.

(1) Properly (according to Pecock, 484, 485.) A restraint imposed by God or man additional to the restraint of reason, *i. e.* a monastic or other rule. See p. 525, for a discussion on the word.

(2) Improperly, A restraint imposed only by reason, 485, *i. e.*, religion (in the modern sense).

(3) In both these senses combined. 486, *q. v.*

RELİK, 182; *pl.* **RELİKIS**, 182, 203; **RILİKIS**, 203. A relic (of a Saint).

REMANENT, *adj.* (or rather *pres. part.*) Remaining.

"The *remanent partil*." 38.

Also used substantively, as the modern *remnant*.

"The *remanent* of . . . Goddis lawe." 40

REMEMBRATIUF. Used in the same sense as *rememoratiyf*, pp. 546, 547, and probably a clerical error for it. See note. The word, however, occurs in Pecock's Poor Men's Mirror, MS. p. 19.

REMEMBRER.

(1) One that recalls to the mind of another. 26, 219.

(2) One that recalls to his own mind. 171.

REMEMORACIOUN. The act of recalling to mind. Not quite synonymous with *remembrance*, with which Pecock associates it:

"Into *rememoracioun* and *remembrance*." 210.

See also p. 182.

REMEMORATIUF. Reminding. Explained by "*mynding*." Epithet of *signs*. 136, 209, 210.

REMEMORAUNCE. Remembrance, (a strict synonym). 171.

RENNE, 41, 71; *pres. pl.* **RENNEN**, 90; *pres. part.* **RENNING**, 120, 346. To run. (The *past part.* **RUNNE** occurs in Pecock's Donet, quoted in the Introduction, p. xxi.)

RENNYNGLI. Explained by *concurrently*. 463. See p. 464.

REPE MAN. A reaper. 383.

REPREUE, *imp. pl.* To reprove. 481. (Quoted from Wiclif; Pecock himself uses the modern form, p. 488.)

REPROUABILI. In a manner to be reprov'd. 49, 50.

REPROUES (*pl.* of **REPROUE**, which is used by Gower). Reproofs. 476. Compare **BILEEUE**.

REPUGNANT, *adj.* Inconsistent. 408.

REPUGNE.
(1) To fight (joined with *azenset*). 254.

(2) To be inconsistent ("bitwixe hem silf"). 408.

REPUGNERS, 208, 211; **REPUNGNERS**, 208. Impugners.

RERE. Back again?

"For to hem aske *rere* haue tho tithis." 392.

i. e. to ask them to return the tithes back, apparently.

RESTREYNE, *n. s.* Restraint. 394.

REULE, 416; **REWLE**, 297; *pres. sing.* **REULITH**, 297; *pl.* **REULEN**, 67; *pret. pl.* **REULIDEN**, 242; *past part.* **REULID**, 242.

"It *reulith* . . . prelatys into pouerte," *i. e.* obliges. 207.

REULEABLE. Capable of being ruled. 242.

REWARD, *n. s.*

(1) Properly, Pay for work done. *See* Pecock's remarks, p. 389.

(2) Improperly, Maintenance, according to Pecock, p. 390. *See* MEEDE.

(3) In reward of=in respect of; in comparison of.

"In an vnpropir maner in *reward* of the first maner." 225.

"Tho han be fewe in *reward* of the othere." 541.

See also p. 251.

REWE, 233, 491; *pl.* REWIS, 215.

A row.

"Sewyng in *rewe*," *i.e.* in order. 401.

Cf. AREWE, which is explained by *seriatim* in Prompt. Parv. p. 14.

REWME, 86; *pl.* REWMES, 370. A realm.

REYNY, *adj.*, 183; also REYNE, 146, 554. Rainy.

RIAL. Royal. 40.

RIALTE. Royalty.

"In his moost *rialte*," *i.e.* at the height of his power. 354.

RICHES, 326; RICCHES, 99;

RICHESSSE, 343; *pl.* RICHESSES, 296. Riches.

"Ech *riches*." 345.

"The *riches* is." 326.

RICHING, *n. s.* Enrichment. 327.

RISCHE, 166; *pl.* RISCHEIS, 230. A rush. In the latter place the *Acorus Calamus*, L. is probably intended.

RIZTWISNES, 17, 181; RIZTWISNESSE, 450. Righteousness.

RODY, *adj.* Ruddy. 24.

ROMBE, *adj.* and *adv.*, 272, 553; *comp.* ROMBER, 78, 79, 559. Remote, remotely.

"Thet knelen *rombe* fer ech from othir."

553.

"The *romber* and fether reule." 78.

"Fether fro thens in *rombe*." 366.

"More or lasse, nyzer or *romber*." 272.

See Waterland's Works, vol. x. p. 262. Compare AROMBE.

ROODE, 194; RODE, 194. A cross.

S.

SACRILEGI, 409; SACRILEGIE, 409.

Sacrilege.

SAD. Grave, solid. 68, 91, 129.

SADELARIE. The craft of the saddler. 49.

SADNES. Gravity. 232.

SAREZENIS, *pl.* Saracens. 99.

SAUORY. Agreeable (delivery of a sermon). 89.

SAUTER. The Psalter. 247.

SCANT, *adj.* Scanty; few. 184, 530.

SCANTLI, *adv.* Scarcely. 15, 88.

SCHAFT, 29; *pl.* SCHAFTIS, 28. Main stem or trunk of a tree. Explanation of *tronchon*.

SCHAL, *v. aux.*, 1st and 3rd *pers. sing.*, 4; 2nd *pers. sing.* SCHALT, 119; SCHALTE, 175; *pl.* SCHULEN, 6; SCHULE, 342. Shall. *Schal* occurs once, p. 293, (but certainly by a clerical error,) for 2nd *pers. sing.*; *see note*.

SCHAME, *v. n.* To be ashamed. 177.

SCHAMEFASTNES. Modesty. 124. (From N. T., where our version retains it in a corrupt form Shamefacedness).

SCHEEP, 118; *pl.* SCHEP, 225; SCHEEP, 225. A sheep.

SCHERPLI. Sharply. 2.

SCHILINGIS, *pl.* Shillings, but only used as money of account, till the time of Henry VII., who first coined the shilling.

'Thei couthen not rekene a summe into an hundrid *schillingis*.' 306.

SCHO, 225, 231; *pl.* SCHOON. 347. A shoe.

SCHULDE, *v. aux.*, 1st and 3rd *pers. sing.*, 120; SCHUDE, 176; 2nd *pers. sing.* SCHULDIST, 444; *pl.* SCHULDEN, 34, 120; SCHULDE, 30, 123, 182; SCHUDEN, 440. Should.

SCLAUNDRE, *n. s.*, 348; *pl.* SCLAUNDRIS, 514. Scandal, offence.

SCLAUNDRE, *v. a.*, 307; *pres. part.* SCLAUNDRING, 534; *past part.* SCLAUNDRID, 513. To scandalise.

SCOLE, 328; *pl.* SCOLIS, 90.

(1) A school for academical exercises. 90.

(2) A school of heretics. 90.

(3) Schooling; discipline. 328.

See also Pecock's Book of Faith, p. 17.

SCROWIS, *pl.* Scrolls. (Tr. of *pictacia chartarum*). 530.

SE, 74; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* SEETH, 450; *pl.* SEEN, 32; *pret.* SIE, 186, 225; SIȝE, 34, 425; SIȝ, 225; SAUȝE, 305; *pl.* SIEN, 187; SAWEN, 246; *imper. sing.* and *pl.* SE, 143, 253; *pres. part.* SEING, 74; SEYNG, 232; *past part.* SEEN, 143. To see.

Peculiar usage:

"Alle thingis *seen*." *i. e.*, being duly considered. 186.

SEABLE. Capable of being seen. 74, 162, 545.

SEELDE, 221; SEELD, 537; SEELDEM, 77. Seldom.

SEIE, 16; SEI, 62; SEYE, 163; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.* SEIST, 172; 3rd *pers.* SEITH, 63; *pl.* SEIEN, 258; *pret.* SEIDE, 63; *pl.* SEIDEN, 198; *imper.* SEIE, 16; *pl.* SEIE, 86; *subj. sing.* SEIE, 264, 317; 2nd *pers. pl.* SEIE, 31, 253; *pres. part.* SEIYNG, 204; *past part.* SEID, 23; SEIDE, 200; SEYDE, 179. To say.

SENDE, 388; SEND, 127; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* SENDITH, 52; *pret.* SENDE, 360; *pl.* SENDEN, 376; *subj.* SENDE, 158; *pres. part.* SENDING, 181; *past part.* SENT, 360; SEND, 174; SENDE, 364 To send.

SENGIL, 184; SYNGIL, 155. Single.

"This (account) . . . is ful *sengil* to be bileued," *i. e.*, too unsupported by other testimony. 356.

SENTENCE. Meaning, sense, or substance of a passage. 30, 31, 322.

SEQUENCE. A jubilant hymn, sung in the Mass, 201. See PROSE; also Ducange, *s. v.* SEQUENTIA, who cites from Alcuin,

"*Sequitur jubilatio quem sequentiam vocant.*"

SERMONYNG, *n. s.* Sermonizing, preaching. 88, 89. See Gloss. to Chaucer.

SETTE, 461; SETT, 55; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* SETTITH, 64; *pl.* SETTEN, 192; *pret.* SETTID, 127, 530; SETTIDE, 461; *pl.* SETTIDEN, 531; *imper. sing.* SETTE,

- 257 ; *subj. sing.* and *pl.* SETTE, 155, 169 ; *pres. part.* SETTING, 121 ; *past part.* SETTE, 153 ; SETT, 147 ; SET, 178 ; SEET, 3, 486. To set.
- SEUERALTE. State of separation. 50.
- SHONED, *past part.* Shunned. 227.
- SIDE, 78 ; *pl.* SIDES, 515. A side.
- Peculiar usages :
- (1) "Probabilite, a this *side* suerte," i. e., short of certainty. 78.
- (2) "In othere *sides*," i. e., in other respects, or points of view. 515.
- SIGNIFICAT, *n. s.* The thing signified by a sign. 163.
- SIJK, 194 ; *pl.* SIKE, 201. Sick.
- SIKIR, 8, 76, 91 ; SEKIR, 76 ; *comp.* SIKERER, 560 ; SIKIRER, 216.
- Safe ; generally joined with *sure* by Pecoock :
- "If y be *sikir* and *suer*." 78.
- "The *sikerer* and *surer* good." 560.
- SIKIRLI. Safely. 132 (joined with *sureli*).
- SILF, *refl. pron.* Self. Not inflected by Pecoock, who uses it in the following combinations :
- My silf, 285. It silf, 16.
- Thi silf, 3. Us silf, 164.
- Him silf, 87. 3ou silf, 87.
- Hir silf, 230. Hem silf, 3, 50.
- Peculiar usage :
- "A book is maad by *him silf*," 561, i. e. separately, apart.
- SILLE, *v. a.* 289 ; *pret. pl.* SEELDEN, 309 ; SELDEN, 309 ; SOOLDEN, 309 ; *imper. pl.* SILLE, 473 ; *pres. part.* SILLING, 468 ; *past part.* SOLDE, 493, 562. To sell.
- SILLER. A seller. 469.
- SINGE, 206 ; *3rd pers. sing.* SINGITH, 330 ; *pres. pl.* SINGEN, 205 ; *pret.* SONGE, 205 ; *pl.* SUNGEN, 205 ; *pres. part.* SINGING, 204 ; *past part.* SUNGUN, 199. To sing.
- SIRE. Syriac. 438.
- SISTREN, 63, 298 ; SISTRIS, 155, 298. Sisters.
- SITHEN, 5 ; SYTHEN, 73. Since.
- SITHIS, *pl.* Times. 15, 130, 172.
- See Coler. Gloss. Ind., *s. v.* SITHE.
- SITTE, *v. n.*, 123 ; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* SITTITH, 300 ; *pret.* SATE, 300 ; SAAT, 196 ; *subj.* SITTE, 267 ; *pres. part.* SITTING, 123.
- (1) To sit, *u. s.*
- (2) To beseem, 333, where the MS. reading (in the note) is correct. See Prompt. Parv. p. 367.
- SKILE, 9 ; SKIL, 169 ; *pl.* SKILIS, 98. A reason.
- SLE, 113 ; SLEE, 540 ; *pres. part.* SLEING, 527 ; SLEYING, 527 ; *past part.* SLEIN, 246 ; SLAYN, 157 ; SLAIN, 56. To slay.
- SLYUE. A sleeve. 231.
- SMAL, 442 ; *pl.* SMALE, 360, 400 ; *comp.* SMALER, 360. Small.
- SMELLEABLE. Capable of being smelt. 162.
- SMERT. Pert, smart. 5.
- SMERTLI, *adv.* Quickly. 47, 194.
- SMOTHE. Smooth. 525.
- SMYTHIYNG, *pres. part.* Forging on an anvil. 256.
- SOCORER. Succourer, helper. 244.
- SOILE ; *pres. part.* SOILING, 255. To refute. See ASSOILE.
- SOLEMPNE, 184 ; *sup.* SOLEMPNEST, 31. Solemn.
- SOLEMPNELI. Solemnly. 445.

SONDIS, *pl.* Presents sent. 376, 377. *See* Gloss. to Chaucer.

SOOLNES. Soleness, solitariness. 235. *See* Chesterfield, cited in Richardson's Dict.

SOOR, *adj.* Sore. 295.

SOPER. Supper. 461.

SOTHELI. Surely, of a surety. 53, 66, 76.

SOUREYRN, *adj.*, 244 ; *sup.* SOUREYNEST, 244. Sovereign.

SOUN, *n. s.* Sound. 187.

SOWDIERS, *pl.* Soldiera. 516.

SOWE ; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

SOWITH, 228 ; *pret. pl.* SEWEN,

319 ; *pres. part.* SOWING, 228.

TO SOW. *See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible.

SOWNE, 437 ; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

SOWNETH, 27, 61 ; SOWNITH,

124 ; *pl.* SOWNEN, 288, 417 ;

subj. SOWNE, 312 ; *pres. part.*

SOWNYNG, 71, 419.

(1) To sound, *i.e.* (1) *agree*, 61, 288 ; or (2) *disagree*, 71, as it is joined with *to* or *against*.

Also absolutely, p. 419.

SPECIAL, *n. s.* A particular.

"A *special* and a *parti*." 512.

SPECIALTE. Speciality, particularity. 130. (Opposed to *generalte*.)

SPECULABLE. Theoretical, speculative. 134. (Epithet of *truths*.)

SPEDI, 220 ; SPEDY, 219 ; *comp.*

SPEDIER, 219. Advantageous, ready. (Epith. of *image*, and *condition*.)

SPEDITH, *def. v.* It is profitable, *expedit*, 307 ; *past part.* SPED, Advanced, profited, 362. *See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible.

SPEEDFUL. Advantageous, ready.

"It is profitable and *speedful* . . . *forto speke*." 27.

"A good and a *speedful* way." 111.

SPEKE, 202 ; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

SPEKITH, 23 ; *pl.* SPEKEN, 23 ;

pret. 3rd pers. sing. SPAK, 23,

202 ; SPAKE, 24, 226, 339 ; *pl.*

SPAKEN, 206 ; *subj.* SPEKE, 267 ;

imper. SPEKE, 226 ; *pres. part.*

SPEKING, 1 ; *past part.* SPOKEN,

51 ; SPOKUN, 203, SPOKE, 226.

To speak.

SPENDE, 283 ; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

SPENDITH ; *pl.* SPENDEN, 370 ;

past part. SPEND, 213 ; SPENDE,

87. To spend.

SPICE, 194, 228 ; *pl.* SPICIS, 17, 41.

Species, kind.

SPILLE, *v. a.* and *n.* ; *pres. pl.*

SPILLEN, 54 ; *past part.* SPILLED,

307.

(1) To perish. 54.

(2) To destroy. 307. *See*

Gloss. Wicl. Bible, and Coler.

Gloss. Ind.

SPORIER, 50 ; *pl.* SPORIERS, 50. A spurtier.

SPORIORIE. The art of the spurrier. 50.

SPORIS, *pl.* Spurs. 50.

SPREDE, 129 ; *past part.* SPRAD, 213 ; SPRED, 216. To spread.

SQUYER, *n. s.* A square. 135.

SQUYER, 371 ; *pl.* SQUYERIS, 396 ;

SQUYERS, 370. A squire.

STABILI. Constantly. 548.

STABILING, *n. s.* Establishing. 91.

STABLE, *v. a.* ; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

STABILITH, 461 ; *past part.* STA-

BILID, 432, 548. To establish.

STAPPIS, *pl.* Steps. 313.
 STARYNG, *adj.* Gaudy; or rather, perhaps, impudent. 371.
 STELE, 64, 344; STEELE, 146; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.* STELIST, 64; *pret.* STALE, 155; *subj.* STELE, 343. To steal.
 STERERS, *pl.* Exhorters. 324.
 STERRE, 243; *pl.* STERRIS, 242. A star.
 STIDE, *n. s.* Stead. 196.
 STIE, *v. n.*; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* STIETH, 414; *pret.* STIED, 60; *pl.* STIEDEN, 259. To ascend (with or without up).
 STIRE, 245; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* STIRETH, 177; *pl.* STIREN, 23; *pres. part.* STIRING, 263; *past part.* STIRID, 266. To stir up, exhort.
 STOLIS, *pl.* Long robes. 473.
 STONDE, *v. n.*, 246; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* STONDITH, 11; *pl.* STOONDEN, 394; STONDEN, 553; *pret.* STOOD, 11; STODE, 11; *pl.* STODEN, 286; *subj. pl.* STONDE, 184; *pres. part.* STONDING, 554. To stand.
 Peculiar usages:
 "Standing al the good," *i. e.* all the good being allowed to stand or remain. 554.
 "Porto stonde to deuocioun of the peple," *i. e.* depend on their contributions.
 STOON, 187; *pl.* STOONYS, 198. A stone.
 STOOR, *n. s.* Store. 303.
 STORIE, 351; *pl.* STORIES, 61.
 (1) A written history. 351.
 (2) A historical event. 225, 365.
 (3) A sculptured scene, "*sculptura storiata*." 139.

STORIE, *v. n.*; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* STORIETH, 299, 351. To record.
 STORIER. A historian. 350, 353.
 STORIYNG, *n. s.* A relation; history. 354.
 STRAWITH, *pres. 3rd pers.* Strews. 230.
 STRECCHIE, 49; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* STRECCHITH, 278; *pl.* STRECCHEN, 490; *pres. part.* STRECCHING, 324; *past part.* STRECHID, 280; STREIȝT, 269, 270, 372. To stretch.
 STRECCHING, *n. s.* Tendency. 431.
 STRENGTHIE, 282; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* STRENGTHITH, 67; *pres. part.* STRENGTHING, 561; *past part.* STRENGTHID, 165, 283. To strengthen.
 STRENGTHING, *n. s.* Strengthening. 515.
 STRONG, 14; *comp.* STRENGER, 77; *sup.* STRENGIST, 527. Strong.
 STURNE. Stern, rough. 146. (Epithet of *weather*.)
 SUBARBIS, *pl.* Suburbs, 280. (*Suburbis* also occurs, 279.)
 SUBSTANCIAL. Solid. 68, 85. (Epithet of *clerks*.)
 SUBSTANCIALI. Solidly. 85. (Joined with *learned*.)
 SUE; *imper.* SUE, 294; *pres. part.* SUYNG, 321; SEWYNG, 491. To follow.
 SUGET, 217; *pl.* SUGETIS, 218; SUGETTIS, 218; SUGGETTIS, 219. A subject; dependent. Used by Pecoock both in a civil and ecclesiastical sense. 218, 315.
 SUGET, *adj.* Subject. 443.
 SUM, 302, 561; *pl.* SUMME, 185. Some.

Peculiar usages :

"In oon place, and not in an other, and bfore *summe* ymage and not bfore an other," *i.e.* particular images. 188.

"And so forth of manye othere staryng gouernauncis, semyng *summe* wijlde woode," *i.e.* some raging mad ones. 371.

See also p. 15.

In Pecock's MS. it often coalesces with its substantive ; as *summen*, &c.

SUTIL. Subtle. 198.

SUTILING, *n. s.* Subtlety. 195.

SUYNGLI, *adv.* In manner following. 321, 417.

SWEETE, 66 ; *comp.* SWETTER, 67 ; *sup.* SWETTIST, 67. Sweet.

SWERD. A sword. 71.

SWOPE, *n. s.* Soap. 127.

SYMYLACRIS, *pl.* Idols. 141, 146.

T.

TAKE, *v. a.* 3 ; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.*

TAKIST, 68 ; *3rd pers.* TAKITH, 2 ;

pl. TAKYN, 159 ; TAKEN, 3 ; *pret.*

TOKE, 329 ; TOOK, 353 ; *2nd pers.*

sing. TOOKIST, 62 ; *pl.* TOOK-

EN, 173 ; TOKEN, 35 ; TOKE,

30 ; *imper. sing.* and *pl.* TAKE,

3, 68 ; *subj. sing.* and *pl.* TAKE,

3, 149, 165 ; *pres. part.* TAKING,

28 ; *past part.* TAKE, 2, 186 ;

TAKEN, 52 ; TAKUN, 278 ; TAK,

57.

(1) To take, (*u. s.*)

(2) To understand, 54, 58.

Sometimes used by Pecock where the moderns would say *make*,

though not exactly used for it, *e. g.*

"At whiche men mowe lawze and take bourde." 188.

TAKEABLE. Capable of being taken in, or comprehended. 11.

TALARIE. The art of the tailor. 49.

TELLE, 353 ; *pret.* TOOLD, 353 ; *pres. part.* TELLING, 118 ; *past part.* TOOLD, 122.

(1) To tell. 353.

(2) To count. 544.

TELLING, 557 ; TELLING, 557. *n. s.* Counting.

TEMPTATYUE. Tempting. 105.

TENTE, 218 ; TENT, 217, 478.

Heed, attention.

TERME, 280 ; *pl.* TERMES, 146 ;

TERMS, 70 ; TEERMS, 70. A limit.

THAN. Rather than. 307.

THANKE, 90 ; *pl.* THANKIS, 563.

Thanks.

THANNE, 1, 55 ; THAN, 57. Then.

THAT, *pron.* 4 ; *pl.* THO, 1. That, those.

THENKE, *v. n.*, 165 ; more rarely

THINKE, 99 ; *pret.* THOUZTE, 244 ;

imp. THENKE, 72 ; *subj.* THENKE,

166. To think.

THER (probably *pron. indet.* *See* Guest, in *Philol. Trans.*, vol. i. p. 159). In composition = *that*. Sometimes coalescing with a preposition in the MS. of Pecock, but more often written as a distinct word ; *e. g.* *ther with*, 2 ; *ther yn*, 2 ; but also, *therbi*, 2 ; *therfore*, 3 ; and the same inconstancy prevails with respect to many other combinations.

THILK, *pron.* 10; very rarely THILKE, 197 (second hand); *pl.* THILKE, 96; more rarely THILK, 57.

(1) That, those.

"This miracle and *thilk* miracle." 293.

"Chese the reder of this place and of *thilk* place whether this or *thilk* or bothe be wole holde." 273.

(2) Perhaps used for *this* (a sense assigned to it by Percy in his Gloss. to the second volume of Reliq. Anct. Engl. Poetry), p. 235, where "*thilk hil*" seems to be the same as "*this hil*," p. 234.

THIS, 2; *pl.* THESE, 1; more rarely THES, 145, 432, 531. This, these.

THORUȝ, *prep.* Through. 7.

THOUSIND, 88; *pl.* THOUSINDIS, 540; also THOUSIND, 540. A thousand. (Thousand also occurs 216).

THRIDDE. Third. 8.

THRIFT. Profit. 44, 86, 129.

THRIFTI. Profitable. 160.

THRIFTILI. Profitably. 43, 100.

THRITTI. Thirty. 516.

TICE, 548; *pres. part.* TISING, 66. To entice.

TILE, 284, 527; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* TILIETH, 228; *pl.* TILIEN, 275. To till.

TILIER. A tiller, husbandman. 258.

TILING, *n. s.* Tilling. 288.

TIME.

"Into tyme"=until. 246.

To, *adv.* and *prep.*

(1) Close to, next.

"Ligging to the same citees." 279.

(2) Into.

"To enter to lijf." 293.

(3) Of.

"To whiche the world was not worthl." 300.

(4) Before infinitives it converts them into nominatives.

"Pilgrimagis to be doon is not vnleeful." 190.

"It is not vnleeful pilgrimagis to be doon." 190.

See also pp. 147, 455.

To is joined with several verbs by Pecock, where it is now omitted; *e.g.*,

"Bileus thou to me." 231.

"Meeting to thee." 205.

"Obels to her lordis." 454.

"Remembrid to the lay peple." 193.

"Serue to God." 90.

("Serue God" also occurs, 165).

Contrariwise, he omits to before certain infinitives, where it would be now used.

"Thilk gouernaunce is leeful and not worthi be blamed and be reproued." 468.

"3e suffren not him do." 466.

"Ouzten be." 466.

(5) Used as prefix to the gerund. (See Guest in Phil. Trans. vol. 2, p. 245.)

"3eeris of hunger to coming," (from Wiclif's Bible,) explained by "next thanne comyng." 259.

where we should now say *to come*, an expression which Pecock himself uses. 344. See also p. 481.

TOGIDERE, 553, (where *to* is united to *gidere* in the MS. by an hyphen); much more usually TO GIDERE (divisim). 10, 20, 45, &c. Together.

TOLLE. To attract, allure. 523.

See Coler. Gloss. Ind.

TOWARD.

"Weel toward al," *i.e.* nearly all. 20.

TRANSMIGRACIOUN. A passing over (of emigrants). 17.

TRE, 197; TREE, 237. Wood.

"Image of tre." 197.

TRETING, *n. s.*, 26; *pl.* TRETINGIS, 26. A mode of treatment.

U U

TRIACLE. Antidote, remedy. 512.

See Coler. Gloss. Ind.

TRIBU. A tribe. 173.

TRONCHONS. Trunks or stocks of trees. 28.

TROTTE. To go (on pilgrimage). 194.

TROUBELOSE. Troublesome. 318.

TROUTHE, 71; *pl.* TROUTHIS, 74; TROUTHES, 12; also TREUTHE, 98; TREUTH, 71; *pl.* TREUTHIS, 74; TRUTHIS, 22. Truth.

TROWE, 187, 482; *pres. 2nd pers. sing.* TROWIST, 150; *3rd pers. sing.* TROWITH, 154; *pl.* TROWEN, 156; *pret. pl.* TROWIDEN, 154; *subj. sing.* TROWE, 154; *pl.* TROWEN, 157; *pres. part.* TROWING, 152; *past part.* TROWID, 174. To think, believe.

TROWING, 5; *pl.* TROWINGIS, 5. An opinion.

TRUAUNTIS, *pl.* Idlers. 219.

TURMENTID, *past part.* Tormented. 309.

TWEI, 477; TWEY, 8; TWEYNE, 15. Two.

TWEIES, 462; TWIES, 462. Twice.

TYRANNYS, *pl.* Tyrants. 250. (TIRANTIS occurs p. 296).

TYRANRIE, 302; TYRANRY, 426; TIRANRIE, 299; TIRANTRIE, 300.

Tyranny.

V.

VARIAUNCE. Variableness, inconstancy. 176, 177.

VELYM, 25, 81; VELIM, 81. Vellum.

VERRIFIE, 53; *part. past* VERIFIED, 96. To prove true.

"It . . . serueth neither forto grounde, neither forto cerrye the said firste opinioun." 53.

VERTU, 6; *pl.* VERTUES, 166.

(1) Strength. 6, 479.

(2) Virtue, in the modern sense. 10.

VERTUOSENES. Virtue. 96.

VILONIE. Injury. 67, 68, 100.

VISITING, *n. s.*, 96; *pl.* VISITINGIS, 96. Favour, regard. *See* Richardson's Dict.

VNACCORDAUNCE. Inconsistency. 263.

VNACCORDING, *adj.* Inconsistent.

"Vnaccording to preestis." 239.

See also p. 537.

VNACCORDINGLI. Inconsistently. 207.

VNATTENDAUNCE. Want of attention. 470.

VNAVISIDNES. Heedlessness. 357, 505.

VNAZENSEIABILI, 130; VNAZENSEIABILI, 380. Incontrovertibly.

VNAZENSTONDEABLI. Irresistibly. 533.

VNBODILI. Incorporeal. 134, 243, 246.

VNCHEREFUL. Cheerless. 244.

VNCONGRUITE. Incongruity. 255.

VNCONSIDERACIOUN. Inconsiderateness; want of consideration. 89, 474, 512.

VNCONSTAUNCE. Inconstancy. 177.

VNCONTYNENT. Incontinent. 479.

VNCOUENABLE. Inconvenient; unsuitable. 479.

VNCURTEIS. Uncourteous. 151.

VNCURTESIE. Want of courtesy. 151.

VNDECLARABLE. Ineffable. 245.

VNDEEDLI. Immortal. 243. *See* Prompt. Parv. p. 364.

- VNDEINTEOSE. Not nice ; unpleasant. 184.
- VNDEPARTABILNES. Indissolubility. 15.
- VNDIRNYME, *v. a.*, 2 ; *pres.* 2nd *pers. sing.* VNDIRNYMEST, 3 ; 3rd *pers.* VNDIRNYMETH, 2 ; *pl.* VNDIRNYMEN, 416, 476 ; VNDIRNEMEN, 562 ; *imper.* VNDIRNYME, 1, 3 ; *past part.* VNDIRNOME, 2, 97. To reprove ; find fault with. See Waterland's Works, vol. x. p. 231, and Gloss. Wicl. Bible.
- VNDIRNYMER, 3 ; *pl.* VNDIRNYMERS, 452 ; VNDIRNEMERS, 565. A re-prover.
- VNDIRNYMING, *n. s.*, 253 ; VNDIRNEMING, 453, 563 ; *pl.* VNDIRNYMINGIS, 8. Reproof.
- VNDIRSTONDE, 6 ; *pres.* 3rd *pers. sing.* VNDERSTONDITH, 61 ; *pl.* VNDERSTONDEN, 57 ; VNDERSTONDE, 464 ; *pret.* VNDERSTODE, 55, 137, 486 ; *pl.* VNDERSTODEN, 68 ; *subj.* VNDERSTONDE, 134 ; *imper. pl.* VNDERSTONDE, 464 ; *pres. part.* VNDERSTONDING, 380 ; *past part.* VNDERSTONDE, 8, 10, 26 ; VNDERSTONDEN, 274 ; VNDERSTONDUN, 116. To understand.
- VNDERSTONDING, *n. s.*, 54 ; *pl.* VNDERSTONDINGIS, 53. Understanding.
- VNDISCRETE, *pl.*, 3, 198. Indiscreet.
- VNDISPOSICIOUN. Indisposition. 308.
- VNDISPOSID, *past part.* Indisposed. 308. (*Indisposid* occurs in the same place.)
- VNDO, *past part.* Undone. 291. See Do.
- VNDOUTABLI. Undoubtedly. 26.
- VNDREBS, *pl.* Inferiors ; opposed to *Ouerers*. 393.
- VNEXPEDIENT. Inexpedient. 163.
- VNFAIR. Foul, ugly. 548.
- VNFORMAL. Informal. 9.
- VNFULLY. Defectively. 564.
- VNGEERD, *past. part.* Ungirded. 135.
- VNGROUNDABILI. Groundlessly. 104.
- VNGROUNDID, *past part.* Ill-grounded ; shallow (blamer). 3. See GROUNDLI.
- VNHAD, *past part.* Not had. 212.
- VNHANGINGLI. Unconnectedly. 441.
- VNHAUYNG, *n. s.* Want of having. "The *vnhauyng* and the *vnknowing* of this now seid consideracioun." 89.
- VNHELPIS, *pl.* Hindrances. 108.
- VNHONESTLI. Dishonestly. 325.
- VNHOOOSUMNES. Unwholesomeness. 68.
- VNIUERSITE, 243 ; VNYUERSITE, 243. The universe ("of thingis"), "*Universitas rerum.*" Ctc.
- VNIUSTNES. Injustice. 106.
- VNKNOWE, 55 ; *pres.* 3rd *pers. sing.* VNKNOWITH, 53 ; *past part.* VNKNOWUN, 53 ; VNKNOWEN, 55 ; VNKNOWE, 360. To be ignorant of ; not to know.
- VNKNOWING, *n. s.* Ignorance, 89, 474.
- VNKUNNYNG, *n. s.* Ignorance. 156.
- VNKUNNYNG, *adj.* (properly *pres. part.*) Ignorant. 51, 327.
- VNLACKEABLE. Indispensable. 44, 91.
- VNLACKEABLI. Indispensably. 35.
- VNLEEFUL. Unlawful. 136.

- VNLEEFULNES. Unlawfulness. 136.
 VNLIKELI, *adv.* Improbably. 361.
 VNMAAD, *past part.* Uncreated; eternal. 242.
 VNMEDLID, *past part.* Unmixed. 49, 50.
 VNMEKE. Proud. 96.
 VNMOUEABLE, 49; VNMOUABLE, 275; VNMOVABLE, 377. Immoveable, fixt (possessions). Pecoock has also *immouable*, 277.
 VNMYLDE. Cruel. 479.
 VNNETHIS. Scarcely. 88.
 VNOBEDIENT. Disobedient. 479.
 VNPERFIT, 560; *comp.* VNPERFITER 193. Imperfect. Pecoock has also *imperfiter*, 349.
 VNPERFITLI. Imperfectly. 564.
 VNPERFITNES. Imperfection. 349.
 VNPERSEUERANCE. Want of perseverance, fickleness. 177.
 VNPERTEYNING. Not appertaining. 552.
 VNPERTYNENTLY. Impertinently. 441. (*Impertinentli* also occurs, 442.)
 VNPITEE. Cruelty. 324.
 VNPITEFUL. Ungodly. 516. *See* Waterland's Works, vol. x. pp. 273, 274.
 VNPOSSESSID, *past part.* 386; VNPOSSESSYD. 380. Put out of possession, dispossessed.
 VNPROPIRLI. Improperly.
 "Takun *vnpropirli* and largell and not *propirly*." 72.
 Pecoock apparently distinguishes *vnpropirli* from *not propirly*, as being the direct contrary of *propirly*; but this distinction cannot be applied to such forms as *vnhad*, which is a mere negative.
 VNPROPRE, 27; VNPROPIR, 27. Improper.
 VNPROUE, 104; *pres. pl.* VNPROUEN, 104; *past part.* VNPROUED, 380. To disprove. *See* IMPROUE.
 VNPROUYNG, *n. s.* Disproof. 430.
 VNQUYK, 193; *pl.* VNQUYKE, 193. Lifeless (images).
 VNREDILI. Inconsiderately. 274.
 VNREDY. Ill-prepared, inconsiderate. 3.
 VNREMEMBRAUNCE. Forgetfulness.
 "The vnconsideracioun and the vnknowing and the *vnremembraunce* of these thre . . . notabilitees." 474.
 VNRESTFULNES. Disquiet. 537.
 VNREUERENTLI. Irreverently. 563.
 VNRIȝT, *n. s.*? Wrong. 498.
 VNRIȝT, *adj.* Wrong, or rather not right.
 "Ȝriȝt and wrong." 415.
 VNRIȝTID, *past part.* Put out of one's right. 386.
 VNROOTE, 8; *past part.* VNROOTID, 51. To eradicate.
 VNROOTING, *n. s.* A rooting out. 8.
 VNSAUORI, 89; *comp.* VNSAUERIER, 89. Insipid.
 VNSAUORILI. Insipidly. 564.
 VNSCAPABILI. Inevitably. 308, 516.
 VNSCAPEABLE. Inevitable. 514.
 VNSKILFULLI. Illogically. 49. *See* SKILE.
 VNSOILABILI. Unanswerably. 181.
 VNSOILABLE, 162; VNSOILEABLE, 539. Unanswerable, incapable of refutation.
 VNSPARABLE. Indispensable. 529.
 VNSPEDI, *comp.* VNSPEDIER, 89. Unprofitable.

VNSTABILNES. Instability. 505.
 VNTO, *adv.* Until.
 "*Vnto* thilk eeldir storyng be found.
 387.
 See INTO.
 VNTROUTHE, 234; *pl.* VNTREUTHIS,
 396. Untruth.
 VNVERTUOSE. Vicious. 324.
 VNWEMMED, *past part.* Undefined.
 477.
 VNWISDOM. Senselessness. 150,
 479. (The word seems to express
 more than the mere absence of
 wisdom, namely, also the presence
 of folly. *See* VNPROPIRLI.)
 VNWORSCHPE, *v. a.* 506; *pres.*
2nd pers. sing. VNWORSCHIPIST,
 64. To dishonour.
 VNWRONGINGIS, *pl.* Redressing of
 wrongs. 382.
 VOIDNESSIS, *pl.* Empty conceits.
 249. *See* Gloss. Wicl. Bible.
 VOLUNTARIE. Arbitrary. Expla-
 nation of *positive*, as an epithet of
law. 18.
 VOLUNTE. Arbitrary determina-
 tion. 210. Cf. Juv. Sat. vi.
 "*Stet pro ratione voluntas.*"
 UPBREIDING. *pres. part.* Reproving.
 247.
 VPBREIDINGIS, *pl.* Reproofs. 247.
 VPBREIDIS, *pl.* Reproofs. 247.
 UPDRAW. To draw up. 8.
 UPON, 193; VPON, 96.
 "*Remembrid upon the things,*" *i. e.* re-
 minded of. 193.
 "*Aske . . . resoun upon his feith,*" *i. e.*
 of. 98.
 UPPLUCKID, *past part.* Plucked
 up. 51.
 VPSETTING, *n. s.* The setting up.
 156. (Exactly contrary to its
 modern sense.)
 VYNER. Vineyard. 389.

W.

WAARNES. Caution. 92.
 WAARNYNG, *n. s.*, 89; WARNYNG,
 89. Notification.
 "*No mensioun and waarnyng of this*
 consideracioun." 89.
 WAAST.
 "*In waast,*" *i. e.* in vain. 21.
 WAGID, *past part.* Paid. 193.
 WAIOUR, *n. s.* A wager. 54.
 WAISCHE, 468; *pres. 3rd pers.*
sing. WEISCHITH, 230; *pl.* WAIS-
 CHEN, 464; *pret.* WAISCHID, 468;
past part. WAISCHEN. 464;
 WAYSCHEN, 465. To wash.
 WAITE, *v. n.*, 135; *pres. part.*
 WAITING, 405. To attend.
 Curiously coupled with *after*
 by Pecoock:
 "*That we waite not aftir to be hoosild,*"
 i. e. that we do not care, pay any attention,
 about receiving the sacrament, apparently.
 135.
 "*He may not waite aftir,*" *i. e.* care,
 trouble himself. 489, q. v.
 "*Waiting weel to ech word,*" *i. e.* attend-
 ing. 405.
 See QUERWAITE.
 WAKE, *v. a.* and *n.*; *pres. pl.*
 WAKEN, 91, 504; *pret.* WOKE,
 224. To watch; keep oneself
 awake by study.
 "*Among hem that in scolls waken,* stu-
 dion, and disputen." 91.
 See Gloss. Wiclif's Bible.
 WALLEN, *v. n.*, *pres. pl.* To spring
 up; well up. 432. *See* Coler.
 Gloss. Ind., *s. r.* WELL.
 WARDIS, *pl.* Guards (used meta-
 phorically). 517.

WARNE, *v. a.* To notify, advise, warn. 85. (Not the same verb as *to weerne*, *q. v.* See also Coler. Gloss. Ind.)

WAS, *v. aux.*, supplying the *past* tense of *to be*; *indic. 1st* and *3rd pers. sing.* WAS, 173, 205; *2nd pers.* WERE, 200, 262; *pl.* WEREN, 174; WERE, 174, 205 (*see note*); *subj. sing. 1st* and *3rd pers. sing.* WERE, 182, 166; *pl.* WERE, or WEREN, 1 (*see note*), 7, 25, 151.

WAWIS, *pl.* Waves. 480.

WEDRIS, *pl.* Weathers. 146.

WEEL, 1; WELE (very rarely, and in both cases by a later hand), 164, 188.

(1) Well.

(2) Added as an augmentative to various words, as *weelnyz*, 7; *weel toward*, 20, &c.

WEELDE. To have power over; possess. 276. (Quoted from Wiclif's Bible.)

WEELWILLING. Consent. 440.

WEEN, 166; *pl.* WEENEN, 6; WENEN, 6; *pret. pl.* WEENEDEN, 141; *pres. part.* WEENYNG, 69. To think.

WEERE, 122; WERE, 125; *pres. pl.* WEREN, 505; *pret. pl.* WERIDEN, 124; *subj.* WERE, 284; *pres. part.* WERYNG, 347; *past part.* WORN, 543; WORNE, 347. To wear.

WEERNABLE. Worthy to be forbidden, 470.

WEERNYNG, *n. s.*, 380; WERNYNG, 380; *pl.* WEERNYNGIS, 506. A prohibition, warning.

WEERNE, *v. a.*, 146; WERNE, 517; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* WEERNETH, 145; WERNETH, 161; *pres. part.* WEERNYNG, 325; *past part.* WEERNED, 471; WERNED, 471. To forbid; warn against.

"Forto weerne ymagis of God to be had." 146.

"Noon sufficient ground of feith reproueth and weerneth hem (images)." 147.

WELLID, *past part.* Welded. 141, 173.

WEIE, 113; WEY, 337; *pl.* WEIES, 348. A way.

WEIE, *v. a.* To weigh.

"To ouer weie and apprise a seiynge." *i. e.* ascribe too much weight to it. 335.

WEMMID, *past part.* Defiled. 174.

WEPEABLE. Deplorable. 86.

WERK, 229; *pl.* WERKIS, 229. A work.

WERRE, *n. s.*, War. 537.

WEX, *n. s.* Wax. 197.

WEKE, *v. n.*, *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* WEXITH, 481; *pret.* WEKE, 342; WEXID, 322; *pl.* WAXIDEN (sic), 243. To wax.

WEXING, *n. s.* Waxing. 339.

WHANNE. When. 17. Joined with *euer*, &c., but not coalescing into the same word with it.

"Whanne euer." 2.

WHAT (used as *adv. interr.*) Why? 162, 293, and so probably, where the note is questionable, p. 64. Both these instances are from Wiclif's Bible, and are perhaps only to be regarded as bald renderings of the classical idiom.

WHER, (probably *pron. indet.*) In composition equivalent to *which*; as in *wherof*, *wherfore*, &c., the

parts of which are written both conjunctim and disjunctim in the MS. of Pecoock. See **THER**.

Wherfore is occasionally used where the logical sequence of the clauses requires *therefore*; see especially p. 496, also p. 356. Similarly Maundevile, in the rambling and disjointed prologue to his *Travels*, makes *wherfore* the apodosis of *for als moche*, pp. 1-3. Ed. Lond. 1839, where see note. Conversely Chaucer has *ther* for *where*. See Glossary.

WHERE, *adv.*, 68; but also *n. s.*, 25; *pl.* **WHEREIS**, 27.

(1) *Adv.* Where, as in modern English,—

"Ellis *where*." 27.

"Whanne and *where*." 68.

"Whanne euere and *where* euere." 25.

Connected with the relative. Cf. *quò, quâ, j*.

(2) *n. s.* A place (by conversion of the adverb into the substantive, as τὸ πῶς, &c., in Greek).

"In othere *whereis*." 27.

"In other *whereis*." 68.

WHEREFRO, *adv.* Out of which. 467.

WHICH EUER, WHAT EUER. Any whatever.

"To lete hem not come into *what euere examynacioun*." 99.

"He allowith *which euere* of thilke weles to be take." 112.

WHIDIR. Whither. 353.

WHILE, *n. s.*, 506; *pl.* **WHILIS**, 273.

A time.

"For oon *while* . . . for an other *while*." 506.

"At certein *whilis*." 273.

"For his *while*," i.e. his time of office. 388.

See Gloss. Wicl. Bible.

WHILIS, *adv.* Whilst. 481.

WICCHE. Witch. 563.

WIJS, 302; **WIJSE**, 302; *pl.* **WISE**, 7; but also **WIJSE**, 420, and **WIJS**, 3; *sup.* **WISIST**, 241. **Wise**.

WIJTE; *pres. pl.* **WIJTEN**, 5, 136; *pres. part.* **WIJTYNG**, 155. To blame.

WIJTE, *n. s.*, 386; **WIJT**, 514, 515.

(1) Blame. 386.

(2) Fault? 514, 515.

WIJTERS, *pl.* Blamers. 143, 191.

WIJTING, *n. s.* Blaming. 4, 155.

WILFUL. Positive (law). 18.

WILLI, 6; *comp.* **WILLIER**, 496. Willing.

WILLE, *infin.*, 422? (where it may be a subjunctive), 304; *pres.*

3rd pers. sing. **WILLITH**, 111;

WOLE, 113, 114; *pl.* **WILLEN**,

467; *pret.* **WILLID**, 434; **WILL-**

ED, 473; *pl.* **WILLIDEN**, 447;

pres. subj. **WOLE**, 113, 114;

pl. **WOLEN**, 214; *pret. subj.*

or *opt.* **WOLDE** (God), 143; *pres.*

part. **WILLING**, 315; *past part.*

WILLID, 112. To will, desire.

See **WOLE** and **WOLDE**, which

are usually considered to belong

to the verb, when used as auxi-

liaries; also **NILE**. For a some-

what different classification, see

Coler. Gloss. Ind.

WILNE, 295, 348; *pres. 3rd pers.*

sing. **WILNETH**, 467; *past part.*

WILNED, 196. To wish, desire.

WILNYNGIS, *pl.* Intentions, 533.

WIRCHE, *v. a.* and *n.*, 222; *pres.*

3rd pers. sing. **WIRCHITH**, 223;

WORCHITH, 223; *pret.* **WROUȝT**,

334; *pl.* **WROUȝTEN**, 334, 342;

subj. **WIRCHE**, 224; *pl.* **WORCHE**,

97; *pres. part.* WIRCHING, 258;
past part. WROUȝT, 162, 229.
To work.

WIRCHER. A worker. 224.

WIRCHING, *n. s.*, 224; WORCHING,
257; *pl.* WORCHINGIS, 242. A
working.

WISE, 154; *pl.* WISIS, 430; WIJSIS,
548. A fashion, manner.

"In ȝ. *wisie*." 430

"Bi manye *wijete*." 548.

WITE, *v. a. infin.*, 186, 223; *pres.*
1st pers. sing. WOTE, 88, 136;
WOOT, 26, 78; *3rd pers. sing.*
WOTE, 144; WOOT, 103; *pl.*
WITEN, 24, 140; *pret.* WIST, 222;
WISTE, 346; *pl.* WISTEN, 240;
imper. sing. and pl. WITE, 51,
479; *pres. part.* WITING, 69;
past part. WISTE, 67; WIST, 227.
To know.

Peculiar usage :

"It is to *wite*," *i. e.* it is to be observed, the
reader must know. 223.

"Doing to *wite*," *i. e.* explaining. 1.

WITHINFORTH, 42; WITHINNE-
FORTH, 150, 214. Inwardly.

WITHOUT FORTH. Outwardly. 25,
150, 214.

WITINGLI. Knowingly. 399.

WITNESSER, 26; *pl.* WITNESSERS,
448. A witness.

WITT, *n. s.*

(1) Sense, knowledge.

"Philosophis bi her studie in natural
witt (science, objectively) . . . grauntiden
alle hem to be doon, and that . . . thei so
grauntiden bi her naturall *witt* (sense, sub-
jectively) it is to be holde." 14.

(2) Inmost thoughts. 295.

WITTI. Possessing any wit or
common sense. 25.

WLAPE, 306; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

WLAPPITH, 306. To wrap, lap.

See Gloss. to Wiclif's Bible,
which is here referred to, and
Prompt. Parv. p. 287.

WLATE, *pres. 2nd pers. sing.*
WLATIST, 64. To loathe. Quoted
from Wiclif's Bible: see the
Gloss. to that work.

WOLDE, *v. aux.*; (prop. *pret.* of
to wille, q. v.); *1st and 3rd pers.*
sing. WOLDE, 122, 174; *2nd pers.*
WOLDIST, 123; *pl.* WOLDEN, 8,
87; WOLDE, 245. Would.

WOLE, *v. aux.*; (prop. *pres.* of
to wilne, q. v.); *1st and 3rd pers.*
sing. WOLE, 167, 172; *2nd pers.*
WOLT, 172; WOLTE, 175; *pl.*
WOLEN, 171; WOLLEN (more
rarely), 123. Will.

Elliptic usage :

"Noman can telle . . . whens it came or
whidir it *wole*," *i. e.* will go. 353.

Cf. Shakspeare, As you like it.

"Wit, whither *wilt*?"

(Act iv., Sc. 1); and see Guest,
in Philolog. Trans., vol. ii. pp.
11, 12.

WOMMAN, 118; *gen.* WOMMANNIS,
119; WOMMANIS, 121; WOM-
MANNYS, 123; *pl.* WOMMEN, 118;
gen. WOMMENNYS, 118. A wo-
man.

WONE, *v. a.* To accustom.

"Forto sette thee and *wone* thee not to
loue money." 559.

WONED, *adj.* Wont. 26, 71. (This
form of the word, as well as the
forms *iwune, ywoned*, for which
see Coler. Gloss. Index, shows it
to be originally a *past part.* of the
preceding rare verb.)

WOOD, *adj.*, 141, 480 (the latter instance from Wiclif's Bible); *pl.*

WOODE, 371. Wild, mad.

WORLDLIHODE. Worldliness; state of living in the world. 319, 476.

WORSCHIFE, 376; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* WORSCHIPITH, 465; *pl.*

WORSCHIPEN, 465; *pret. pl.*

WORSCHIPIDEN, 240; *imp.* WORS-

SCHIFE, 510; *subj.* WORSCHIFE,

154; WORSCHIP, 154; *pl.* WORS-

SCHIPEN, 159; *pres. part.* WORS-

SCHIPING, 47; *past part.* WORS-

SCHIPID, 464. To worship (God,

men, images, &c., in various degrees).

"*Worschipe*, that is to seie, finde and nuriſche, tho wommen." 376.

WORSE. Worst. 286. (Perhaps by a clerical error).

WORTH, *n. s.* Value.

"To be in eny *worth* servaunts to God," *i.e.*, in any good degree, in anything worth speaking about. 46.

See also p. 325.

WORTH, *adj.* Worthy, worth talking of.

"He maie neuere in eny thing *worth* be aboute to reprove . . . the religions. 535.

The fuller phrase occurs, p. 285:

"Her of ſolewith not neither colour is *worth* forto seie."

See also p. 136, 428.

WORTHE, *v. n.*; *past part.* Become.

"What schulde haue *worthes* of the men." 518.

See Coler. Gloss. Index.

WRATTLE. To wrestle. 214.

WRINGE, *v. a.* To pinch. 347.

WRITE, 255; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

WRITITH, 446; *pl.* WRITUN, 410;

pret. WROTE, 55, 61; WROOT,

55, 62; *pl.* WROTEN, 57, 61;

subj. WRITE, 166; *pres. part.*

WRITING, 4; *past part.* WRITEN,

55, 61; WRITUN, 55, 60; WRITE, 250, 1 (*see note*). To write.

WRITHEN, *past part.* of WRITHE.

Twisted, plaited (hair). 124.

WRONGEE, *v. a.* To wrong. 70.

WRONGERS, *pl.* Doers of wrong. 549.

WROOTH, *adj.* (properly *past part.* of WRATHE). Wroth. 92. (The substantive is WRATHTHE. 329.)

WYNCING, *n. s.* Spurning ("in witt"). 129.

WYNCEY, *v. n.* 254. To kick, plunge; hence to oppose oneself to a thing.

See Richardson's Dict., *s. v.*

WINCE.

WYNNE, 507; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.*

WYNNETH, 521; *subj.* WYNNE,

507; *pres. part.* WYNNING, 403;

past part. WUNNE, 409; WONNE, 412. To gain.

WYNTER, 108; *pl.* WYNTIS, 128;

WYNTERIS, 151; also WYNTIR, 174.

(1) Winter, as opposed to summer. 108.

(2) A year. 128, 174.

"Men seien that thei han lyued xl. *wynteris*, meenyng therbi that thei han lyued fourti *ȝeeris*." 151.

WYNNING, *n. s.*, 165, 303, 345; *pl.*

WYNNINGIS, 391. Lucre.

Y.¹

YDOLATREY, 153; *pl.* YDOLATREYS, 153; YDOLATREY IS, 149. An idolater.

¹Y, as a participial prefix, is often written as a word by itself in the MS. of Pecoock, though not in the edited text.

YMPNE. A hymn. 199.
 YNOW, or Y NOW, 2; YNOWȝ, 117,
 295. Enough.
 YUEL, *n. s.*, 3; *pl.* YUELIS, 2.
 Evil.
 YUEL, *adj.*, also *adv.*, 48, 335; *pl.*
 YUELE, 4. Evil.
 YȝE, *adv.* High. AN YȝE. On
 high, 139 (more usually written
hiȝe, as 138).
 YȝEN, *n. s. pl.* Eyes. 186. *See*
 IȝE.

Z.

ZEEL, 2; ZELE, 71 (so written by
 the first hand in each case).
 Zeal. (*See* BOONYȝ).

ȝ.

ȝ, as a letter occurring in the mid-
 dle or end of a word, is generally
 replaced by *gh* in the modern
 language; *e.g.* in LAUȝE, 120;
 HIȝER, 1; THOUȝ, 1; but is
 occasionally combined with a *w*,
 which either = *u*, or is redun-
 dant, as in LAWȝE, 156; LAUȝWE,
 120; YNOWȝ, 117; or is now
 left unsupplied, as in SLIȝLI, 194.
 Conversely the modern *gh* is
 occasionally omitted without an

See p. 2, note. The last vestiges only of
 this formation of the past participle, so
 common even in Wiclif's Bible, survive
 in Pecock's language, *ȝclepid* and *ȝutte*
 being perhaps the only words so aug-
 mented in *The Repressor*; a few others
 (*ȝcallid*, *ȝmade*,) occur in *The Donet*.

equivalent, as in THOU (*i.e.*
though), 195. Sometimes, how-
 ever, the ȝ in the middle of
 a word is replaced by something
 else than *gh*, as in FORȝEUNES,
 266; FORȝEUYNG, 266; AȝENS,
 280; IȝEN, 270.

The words which commence
 with this letter are enumerated
 in the following list, none being
 intentionally omitted, where it
 will be observed that it is variously
 rendered in the modern forms.
 It deserves notice that in Pecock's
 time the use of this letter had
 begun to decline; thus *ȝif* or *ȝyf*,
 which is common from Robert of
 Gloucester down to Wiclif, is
 replaced by *if*, and a good many
 more instances may be supplied
 from a comparison of Dr. Todd's
 Glossary to the Apology for the
 Lollards, ascribed to Wiclif, with
 Pecock's language. Thus ȝED
 (heed), ȝEKUN (eke), ȝELE
 (health), ȝELD (gold), ȝEND (end),
 ȝERE (hear), ȝERE (ear), ȝERTHE
 (earth), ȝET (heat), ȝETE (*pret.*
 of eat), ȝETHUN (heathen), are
 words which occur in Pecock, but
 are written without the ȝ. At
 the same time it must be added,
 that a few words, into which this
 letter enters, are found in some
 later authors, where Pecock omits
 it. Thus in the Metrical Chro-
 nicles of Scotland we have ȝET, *pl.*
 ȝETTIS (a gate), where Pecock had
 already written *g* for ȝ, though
 retaining the archaism in his
 quotation from Wiclif. *See* the
 Glossary.

The *z* is represented in this MS. at least by a character very different to the *z*.

ȜATE, 224; *pl.* ȜATIS, 440. A gate. (Also written GATE, GATIS, 441, 550; the former is Wiclif's form, the latter Pecock's.)

ȜE (*nearly always nom., but oblique* 86), *pers. pron.*, 6; ȜOU (*always oblique*), 6; *pl.* of THOU, THEE, or THE. 1, 3, 15, 271.

ȜEDE, 225. See GO.

ȜEER, 258; *pl.* ȜEERIS, 3; also ȜEER, 56, 198. A year.

"Bi almost thritti Ȝeer." 56.

ȜEERLI, *adj.* Yearly. 216, 263.

ȜEERLY, *adv.* Yearly. 391.

ȜELDE, 140; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* ȜELDITH, 63; *imper. pl.* ȜELDE, 140, 315; ȜEELDE, 389. To yield.

ȜERDE. A rod.

"To cometo hem in Ȝerde, that is to sele in payne" (punishment). 424.

See Gloss. Wicl. Bible.

ȜERDIS, *pl.* Yards. VYNE ȜERDIS. Vineyards. 527.

ȜEUE, 5; ȜIUE (*very rarely*), 168; *pres. 3rd pers. sing.* ȜEUETH, 1; ȜEUYTH, 264; ȜEUIETH, 264 (*see note*); *pl.* ȜEUN, 3; ȜEUE; *pret.* ȜAUE, 211; ȜAF, 276, 332; *2nd pers.* ȜAUEST, 520; *pl.* ȜAUN, 281; ȜAUE, 287; ȜAUUN, 459; *subj. sing. and pl.* ȜEUE, 264, 265; *imper. sing. and pl.* ȜEUE,

262, 16; *pres. part.* ȜEUYNG, 398; ȜEUYNG, 265; *past part.* ȜOUEN, 23; ȜOUUN, 68; ȜOUE, 74; ȜEUN, 64; ȜEUN, 98; ȜEUE, 98.

(1) To give, (*u. s.*)

(2) To give proof. 306, 542.

ȜEUER; 143; *pl.* ȜEUERS, 553. A giver.

ȜEUYNG, *n. s.*, 265; *pl.* ȜEUYNGIS, 400. A giving.

ȜHE. Yea. 31.

ȜHIS. Yes. 521.

ȜIFTE, 403; ȜIFT, 403; *pl.* ȜIFTIS, 181. A gift.

ȜIT.

(1) Yet. 1.

(2) Moreover, also.

"To hate . . . his britheren and sistren and Ȝit his owne lif." 298.

ȜOK. A yoke. 420.

ȜOMAN. A yeoman. 371.

ȜONDIR, *adv.* Yonder. 151. See BȜENDE.

ȜONG, 226; *pl.* ȜONGE, 431; ȜONG, 64; *comp.* ȜONGER, 302. Young.

ȜONGTHE. Youth. 192.

ȜOURE, *sing. and pl.*, 87, 198, 423.

Your.

ȜUT, 163, 164; YȜUTTE, 138; (*past part. of ȜUTE or ȜETE.*) To melt metal. See Gloss. Wicl. Bible.

ȜUTTING, *n. s.* The melting or casting of metal. 138.

INDEX.

INDEX.

A.

Adrian I., upholds images, 254.
 Aetians, their tenets, 499.
 Ambrose, St., quoted, 170, 355.
 a chief ornament to the church, 335, 337.
 Ancona, marche of, given to the church of Rome by Matilda of Tuscany, 359.
 Anthropomorphites, their tenets, 498.
 Antidicomarites, their tenets, 499.
 Apollinarians, their tenets, 499.
 Apostolici, their tenets, 498.
 Arabians, their tenets, 500.
 Arians, their tenets, 499.
 Aristotle, referred to, under the title of the Philosopher, 27, 308.
 Arthur, king, a subject of painting and tapestry, 150.
 Athenians, worshipped Saturn, Jupiter, Mars, and the Unknown God, 146.
 Augustine, St., quoted or alluded to, 178, 240, 328-330, 376, 501.
 a chief ornament of the church, 335, 337.

B.

Bartholomew, St., legend of, 194, 227.
 Basilidians, their tenets, 497.
 Bernard, St., quoted, 409.
 worked miracles, 156.
 present at the council of Treves, 483.
 Bible, English version, alluded to, 119.
 Bohemian troubles, in the time of Huss and his followers, 86, 87.

Boniface IV., receives the Pantheon from Phocas, and converts it into a church, 362.
 Bonosianians, their tenets, 500.
 Byzantium, converted into the seat of empire by Constantine, as a new Rome, and called after him, 366.

C.

Carpocratians, their tenets, 497.
 Cassiodorus, his Tripartite History quoted or referred to, 352, 353, 354, 355, 361, 365, 376.
 Cataphrygians, their tenets, 498.
 Cathari, their tenets, 498.
 Catharine, St., her college in London, 215.
 her festival observed there, 215.
 a lamp hung before her image, 258.
 Cecilia, St., a disciple of Urban I., 357.
 Cephas, signifies *Head* according to Pecoek, 434, who misquotes Jerome for proof of such a signification, 437.
 Cerdonians, their tenets, 498.
 Cerinthians, their tenets, 497.
 Charlemagne, largely endowed the church of Rome, 359, 363.
 in his time the popes became lords of Rome, 363; before that time the Greek emperors possessed it, 363.
 Clocks, a recent invention, 118.
 Constantine the Great, fabled to have endowed the church of Rome, 323.
 fabled to have been baptized by pope Silvester, 323.

Constantine—cont.

- endowed only one church in Rome, called after himself, 358.
- was really baptized in Nicomedia by Eusebius, bishop of that place, and not by pope Silvester at Rome, 352, 353.
- his edict referred to, 354.
- his epistle referred to, 354.
- that epistle spurious, 354.
- originally intended to have translated his empire to Troy, 365.
- falsely affirmed in his spurious epistle to have declared his intention to translate his empire to Byzantium shortly after his baptism, 365.
- was warned in a dream to transfer his empire to Byzantium, 366.
- persecution of the church diminished after his time, 336.
- Constantine the younger, Constantius, and Constans, inherit the empire of Constantine the Great, 361, 362.
- Constantine Copronymus, opposes images, 254.
- Constantinople, the new name of Byzantium, 366.

D.

- Damasus, quoted or referred to, 353, 360, 364.
- Decreta Summorum Pontificum, referred to, 354, 357.
- Decretals, quoted, 407, 408.
- Diocletian, many martyrs in his reign, 336.
- Dionysius the Areopagite, quoted or referred to, 61, 170, 225, 418, 425, 446, 459, 460, 532.
- Doctormongers, a party among the Lollards, 87.
- Domitian, St. John in exile at Patmos in the last year of his reign, 56.
- many martyrs in his reign, 336.
- Donatists, their tenets, 500.

E.

- Eastern church, from the Apostles' time till now, allows the marriage of the clergy, 375.
- Ebionites, their tenets, 499.
- Ecclesiasticus, or Wisdom of Sirach, not canonical, 251.
- Eleutherius, pope, the church of England endowed in his time, 358.
- England, continually decreasing in population, in Pecock's opinion, 306.
- Epiphanius, St., referred to, 501.
- Eugenius III., approves the prophecies of St. Hildegard, 483.
- Eunomians, their tenets, 499.
- Eusebius of Casarea, quoted or referred to, 352, 353, 355.
- Eutychians, their tenets, 500.

F.

- France, continually decreasing in population, in Pecock's opinion, 306.
- struggles of Henry VI. to conquer, 90.
- at war with England for more than thirty years, 516, 517.
- Franciscan friars, not allowed to touch money, 543.
- but count it with a stick, 544, 555, 560.

G.

- Games and sports:—shooting, 120.
- merels, 120.
- quoits, 120.
- jowling, 256.
- mummings in disguise, 371.
- Gascony, the occasional residence of the king of England, 21. (Although this is only put hypothetically, there is little doubt that something historical underlies the hypothesis. Some Anglo-Gallic coins of Edward the Third are struck at Bourdeaux, the birth-place of Richard the Second, anciently included in Gascony. See Ainalie's Anglo-Gallic Coinage, pp. 6, 8.)

- Gelasius, pope, quoted, 365.
 Gerisim, the seat of Samaritan worship,
 96, 234.
 Germany, empire of, dates from Charle-
 magne, 363.
 Giraldus Cambrensis, the original authority
 for the story of the angel's cry in
 the air, when Constantine endowed
 the church of Rome, 351. (See
Addenda.)
 this story proved to be false, 350-366.
 Gospels of Matthew, Mark, Luke, and
 John, when written, 61.
 Gratian, his "Summe" referred to, 354,
 359, 364, 365, 407, 408.
 Gravesend, bishop of London, and chan-
 cellor of England, his commemora-
 tion in St. Paul's cathedral, 215.
 Gregory I, a chief ornament of the church,
 335, 337.
 Gregory II, maintains images, 254.

H.

- Harfleur, siege of, alluded to, as a subject
 of art, 258.
 Hector of Troy, a subject of painting and
 tapestry, 150, 258.
 Helvidians, their tenets, 500.
 Henricus Gandavensis, quoted and refuted,
 411.
 Henry V., his siege of Harfleur, alluded
 to, 258.
 Henry VI., his wars in France and Nor-
 mandy, 90, 516, 517.
 encouraged by Pecock to suppress the
 Lollards, 90.
 Hermes Trismegistus, quoted, 240, 241.
 Herod Antipas, his sovereignty dependent
 on the emperor of Rome, 315.
 Hieracitæ, their tenets, 494 (called *Eracitis*
 in text, but *see note*), 498.
 Hilary, St., quoted, 72.
 a chief ornament of the church, 335.
 Hildegard, St., her prophecies against the
 religious orders, 483, 484.
 these are of no great authority, though
 approved by a pope and a general
 council, 495.

I.

- Isidore of Seville, St., referred to, 501.

J.

- Jerome, St., quoted or referred to, 57, 126,
 251, 322, 352, 354, 355, 360, 437
 (quotation false), 447.
 a chief ornament of the church, 335,
 337.
 his opinions not infallible; and his
 opinion that the church became
 more corrupt as it became richer,
 refuted, 334-337.
 Jesus, the son of Sirach, his book of Ec-
 clesiasticus not canonical, 251.
 Johannes Januensis, his *Catholicon* re-
 ferred to, 33.
 John, St., date of his book of Revelation,
 56.
 Jovinianists, their tenets, 500.
 Julius Cæsar, a subject of painting and
 tapestry, 150.
 Julius, succeeded Silvester as pope, 353.
 in his time Constantine was baptized,
 353.

K.

- Known men, a title given by the Lollards
 to each other, 53, 64.

L.

- Laurence, St., his life a subject of Chris-
 tian art, 213.
 Leo the Isaurian, opposes images, 254.
 Lollards, mentioned *by name*, 128; else-
 where vaguely called "some of the
 lay party," or "Bible-men."
 various parties among them, 87.
 fickle in their interpretations of Scrip-
 ture texts, 93.

Lollards—cont.

- include notorious evil-livers among their adherents, 103.
- their opinion that all ordinances of divine law or service must be grounded in Scripture, 5.
- that every humble-minded Christian shall discover the true sense of Scripture, 6, 54.
- that arguments derived from reason against Scripture are to be discarded, 7.
- they call each other known men, 53.
- think that if a man keep God's law, he shall understand the true sense of Scripture without any human teacher; but if not, never, 102.
- object to images on scriptural grounds, 136, *sqq.*
- consider nearly all other Christians guilty of idolatry, 149.
- object to pilgrimages, 175, *sqq.*
- their other arguments against images and pilgrimages, 191–208.
- they object on scriptural grounds to the landed possessions of the clergy, 275, *sqq.*
- their other arguments against them stated, 321–325.
- some Lollards think church endowments lawful, but that they may be taken away from the clergy, if they misuse them, 380, 381.
- Wiclif's modification of this view, 413.
- the Lollards object to the various ranks among the clergy, and would only have priests and deacons, 416, *sqq.*
- they object to ecclesiastical laws made by papal and episcopal authority, 452, *sqq.*
- their arguments against them, 463–468.
- they object to the religious orders, 476, *sqq.*
- their arguments from Scripture against them, 477–483.

Lollards—cont.

- and from the prophecies of St. Hildegard, 483, 484.
- and from reason, 502–505.
- they object to the habits of the religious orders, 543.
- and to the Franciscan friars' practice of counting money with a stick, while they do not handle it, 544.
- they also object to invocation of Saints and priestly intercession, 561.
- to the costly and superstitious decorations of churches, 562.
- to the ceremonies used in the administration of the sacraments, 563.
- to oaths, 564.
- and to war and capital punishment, 565.
- London, artisans of different trades wear different clothing, 545.
- decorated with flowers and branches on Midsummer eve, 28.
- cutlers and spurriers, 50.
- lord mayor and aldermen, 157, 215, 216, 518, 519.
- commemoration of Bishop Gravesend in St. Paul's cathedral, 215.
- London buildings:—
 - London bridge, supported by rents, 338, 368.
 - St. Catherine's college, 215.
 - Paul's, St., Cross, sermons preached at, 30, 91, 112, 113.
 - Paul's, St., church, 32, 76, 215
 - the cross at the north door there, 194.
 - Whittington college, 112.
- Louis le Débonnaire, largely endowed the church of Rome, 359, 363.
- Lucius, king of the Britons, the church of England endowed in his time, 358.

M.

- Macedonians, their tenets, 499.
- Mahomet, the absurdity of his religion in prohibiting free discussion, 99.

Marcionites, their tenets, 498.
 Martin, St., worked miracles, 156.
 Martinus Polonus, mentions that the emperors confirmed the elections of the popes, 364.
 Matilda of Tuscany, endowed the church of Rome with the marche of Ancona, 359.
 Menandrians, their tenets, 497.
 Michael, Mount, the archangel's bones fabled to be buried there, 155.
 Midsummer eve, floral decoration in London on, 28.
 Miracle plays, 221.
 Montanists, their tenets, 498.

N.

Nero, St. Paul martyred in the last year of his reign, 56.
 many other martyrs in his reign, 336.
 Nestorians, their tenets, 500.
 Neutrals, a party among the Lollards, 87.
 New Testament, dates of various books of, 56, 57, 61.
 Nice, first council of, allowed the marriage of the clergy, 376.
 second council of, maintains and finally establishes images, 254.
 Nicholas, St., worked miracles, 156.
 his life a subject of Christian art, 212.
 Nicolaitans, their tenets, 497.
 Nicomedia, Constantine baptized there, 353.
 Normandy, struggles of the king of England to conquer, 90.
 Novatians, their tenets, 499.

O.

Opinion-holders, a party among the Lollards, 87.

P.

Pantheon, given by Phocas to Boniface IV., 362.
 Paternians, their tenets, 500.
 Paul, St., dates of various epistles of, 56, 57.
 (*For St. Paul's Cathedral, see London.*)
 Pauliani, their tenets, 498.

Pecock's life, his episcopal acts misconstrued by many, 106.
 at Whittington college, London, 112.
 he had not travelled out of England, 370.
 Pecock's works :—Book of Logic (English), promised only, 9.
 Book of Matrimony, 15.
 Book of Christian religion in three parts (English), 15, 36, 38, 41, 42, 47, 58, 92, 99, 101, 515, 518, 562, 563.
 Filling or spreading of the Four Tables (English), 16, 36, 47, 58, 392, 399, 562, 564, 565.
 Just apprising of Holy Scripture, in three parts (English), 20, 26, 29, 31, 36, 40, 47, 52, 66, 69, 84, 127, 128, 130, 168, 231, 314, 379, 411, 451.
 The Follower to the Donet (English), 36, 38, 42, 45, 47, 58, 80, 99, 101, 105, 133.
 Book of Faith and Sacraments (Latin), promised only, 38, 42, 80, 92, 99, 101.
 The Donet into Christian religion (English), 41, 47, 58, 143.
 Book of Faith, 45 (English ?), 564 (Latin ?).
 Book of Worshipping (English), 47, 119, 156, 166, 230, 253, 254, 255, 267, 273, 563.
 Provoker of Christian people (English), 47, 48.
 Book of Counsels (English), 47, 314.
 Just apprising of Doctors (Latin, begun only), 71, 320, 411.
 Proving of Christian faith, 99.
 Book of Sacraments (perhaps the same as the Book of Faith and Sacraments), 163, 564.
 Book of Baptism (Latin), 163, 427, 564.
 Book of Eucharist, 163, 564.
 The Before-crier, 218, 229.
 Book of Legends (promised only), 354.
 Book of Penance (Latin), 427.
 Book of Priesthood, 427, 451.
 Book of Lessons (Latin ?, promised only), 518.
 Outdraught of the Donet (*i.e.* Poor Men's Mirror), 541.

Pecock's opinions. It is no part of the office of Scripture to found any law of God which man's reason may discover by the light of nature, 10. various arguments in favour of this thesis, 10-51.

Scripture teaching concerning the moral virtues scanty, because it presupposes them to be known, 15-17, 23.

the first generations of men discovered moral truths by the light of nature only, 18.

subsequent generations, from the time of Abraham, Moses, and Christ, have been bound by the moral virtues discoverable by reason and by certain positive revealed laws, 18-20.

when Scripture seems to contradict reason in delivering a moral truth, it must be interpreted in accordance with reason, not *vice versa*, 25, 26.

Scripture rehearses moral truths and grounds articles of faith, 35, 36.

Scripture may be read by the laity with ecclesiastical permission, 37, 119.

the greater part of God's law is contained in natural and not in revealed religion, 39.

the doctrine of the Sacraments is more grounded in reason than in Scripture, 45.

his own works highly to be appraised by the laity, 47, 128.

it is as easy to undervalue the inward Scripture of reason as the outward Scripture of the Bible, 51, 52.

his opinion on the fallibility of reason, 74-80.

revealed religion, being positive law to man, is not so worthy in itself as natural religion, or the moral law, 83, 84.

necessity of a learned clergy to interpret the Scripture, 85.

mere popular preachers to be avoided as expositors, 88.

Pecock's opinions—*cont.*

a morally bad man may be a correct expositor of Scripture, 94.

the truth of any opinion can only be established by free discussion, 98, 99, 100.

change of time necessitates changes of institutions in the church, 106, 107.

he considers that both he and other prelates have been hastily condemned by the common people, 106, 109.

but admits some abuses among the clergy, 4.

pictures, images, relics, and shrines are means to remind men of their duty, 114.

their use sanctioned by implication in Scripture, 117, 118.

the same arguments that prove sports, ale, and modern clothes to be lawful, prove pictures, &c. to be lawful, 118-127.

Susannah's history is an apocryphal addition to Daniel, 126.

theology and philosophy distinguished, 132.

science, opinion, and faith distinguished, 133.

images not forbidden by Scripture, 136-147.

images sanctioned by reason, 148-161.

may lawfully bear the names of those whom they represent, 150.

images not occasions of idolatry, so long as men take them not for their Gods, 153, 154.

superstitious and false opinions about images, not a sufficient reason for abolishing them, 156.

some images are endued with miraculous virtue, 186.

Scripture and reason approve of images, 162-166.

Scripture does not forbid pilgrimages, 176-178.

neither does reason, 179-186.

Pecock's opinions—cont.

- his replies to the arguments of the Lollards against images and pilgrimage, 208-273.
- his disquisition on the origin of idolatry, 242-251.
- considers the book of Wisdom apocryphal, 250.
- the landed endowments of the clergy are sanctioned by Scripture and reason, 374-378.
- the passages of the Old and New Testament seeming to forbid them explained, 275-321.
- reply to the arguments of the Lollards on this subject, 325-371.
- these endowments not to be alienated, if the clergy misuse them, 394-405.
- the various ranks of the clergy not forbidden, but sanctioned by Scripture and reason, 417-451.
- his arguments for the papal supremacy, 434-444.
- he defends ecclesiastical laws made by popes and bishops from Scripture and reason, 453-463.
- his reply to the arguments of the Lollards on this subject, 468-475.
- he defends the religious orders as not being against Scripture or reason, but sanctioned by both, 476-542.
- his reply to the arguments of the Lollards on this subject, 484-502, 505-534.
- he defends the habits of the religious orders, 544-548.
- and their stately mansions and churches, 548-554.
- also the Franciscans, in counting money with a stick, 554-561.
- he defends priestly intercession and invocation of Saints, the costly decoration of churches, the ceremonies used in the sacraments, the lawfulness of oaths, and of war and capital punishment, by references to his other works, where they are vindicated at large, 561-565.

- Pelagians, their tenets, 500.
- Pepin, largely endowed the church of Rome, 359.
- Peter, is the head of the Apostles and the rock of the church, 440.
- certain expositions of Christ's promise to him reprehended, 441.
- the popes, his successors, 443.
- Petrus Comestor, quoted under the title of Master of the Stories, 529, 530.
- Pharisees, erroneously conceived by some to be reproved by Christ as an order, 529.
- their peculiarities, as described by Comestor, 529, 530.
- Philaster, referred to, 501.
- Philo, the author of the Book of Wisdom, 250, 251.
- Phocas, gives Boniface IV. the Pantheon, 362.
- Photinians, their tenets, 499.
- Popes, their temporal dominions how, and when bestowed, 359.
- Prague, disturbances there, in the time of Huss and his followers, 86, 87.
- Proverb, English, quoted, 48.

R.

- Religious orders. See *Pecock's opinions*.
- Revenues, of the clergy, whence derived in ancient times, 406-408.
- of religious houses, how spent, 370.
- Rituals and rites used in the English church in the fifteenth century, referred to, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 261, 262, 266, 269, 270, 387.
- of an earlier period, referred to, 203.
- Rome, not the place where Constantine was baptized, though fabled so to be, 351-353.
- ruled over by the Greek emperors till the time of Charlemagne, 363.

S.

- Sabellians, their tenets, 499.
 Samaritans, their religion in Christ's time,
 a mixture of heathenism and Juda-
 ism, 233, 234.
 Gerizim the seat of their worship,
 234.
 Saracens, free discussion prohibited
 amongst, 99.
 Severians, their tenets, 498.
 Silvester, fabled to have baptized Con-
 stantine, 323.
 did not really baptize him, 352, 353.
 died before Constantine, 353.
 his Acts quoted or referred to, 353.
 Socrates, his ecclesiastical history referred
 to, 355.
 Sozomen, referred to, 355.
 Stephen II., maintains images, 254.
 Superstitions:
 the man in the moon, 155.
 the three sister spirits, 155.
 the bones of the archangel Michael,
 buried in Mount Michael, 155.
 the horoscope, 450.
 Susannah, an apocryphal book, 126.

T.

- Tarasius, patriarch of Constantinople, up-
 holds images, 254.
 Tatianites, their tenets, 494, 498.
 Theodoret, referred to, 355.
 Theodosius, the Tripartite History com-
 posed in his reign, 361.
 Timothy, Paul's advice to, applicable to
 the Lollards, 1.
 bishop of Crete, 479.

- Timothy and Titus, how far to be con-
 sidered bishops, 444-447.
 Titus, destroys Jerusalem, 234.
 Trajan, many martyrs in his reign, 336.
 Treves, the council of, approves the pro-
 phesies of St. Hildegard, 483.
 Trithemite, their tenets, 501.

U.

- Uncertain chronicler, quoted, 322.
 Urban I., the church of Rome endowed
 in his time, 357.

V.

- Valentinians, their tenets, 497.
 Vespasian, destroys Jerusalem, 234.
 Vitalianus, pope, his election confirmed
 by the emperor, 364.

W.

- Waldenses, 501.
 Walsingham, pilgrimage to our Lady of,
 194.
 Western church, from the Apostles' time
 till the days of Augustine, allowed
 the marriage of the clergy, 375.
 Whittington college, London, 112, 113.
 Wiclif, alluded to under the name of "one
 clerk, but verily to say, one heretic,"
 413.
 his book referred to, 501.
 Wicliffites, their tenets, 501.
 Wisdom, Book of, not canonical, 250.
 written by Philo, 251.

INDEX TO THE APPENDICES.

- Ambrose quoted or referred to, 590, 612.
Aristotle quoted or referred to, 583, 587
604, 606, 611.
Augustine quoted or referred to, 573, 583,
585, 590, 593, 596, 597, 605, 607,
612.
Boethius, 590.
Bourchier, Archbishop, Bury's dedication
of his work to, 571-574.
his conduct relative to Pecock, 619,
620.
Bury, John, table of contents of his *Gladius
Salomonis*, 567-570.
dedication of this work to Bourchier,
571-574.
assisted by Lowe in its composition,
572, 573.
his reason for styling his book *Solo-
mon's Sword*, 573, 574.
plan of the work, 573, 574.
maintains Scripture and not reason to
be the ground of all moral virtues,
in a variety of conclusions against
Pecock, 582-613.
maintains that Scripture contains all
things necessary to salvation, 612.
Booth (Bishop of Durham) present at
Pecock's condemnation, 620.
Cato, his distichs quoted, 603.
Cerinthus, his company fled from by St.
John at Ephesus, 603.
Chaundeler, Thomas, Chancellor of Oxford,
burns Pecock's books at Carfax, 622.
Cicero, 590.
Dionysius the Areopagite quoted, 610.
Eboral, Thomas, his testimony against
Pecock, 619.
England, disturbed state of, 573.
Glossa Ordinaria quoted, 603.
Gregory the Great, 590.
Hermes Trismegistus, 590.
Hippodamus, 611.
Horace quoted (tacitly), 572.
Hugo de S. Victore, 587, 590.
Isocrates, 604.
Jerome quoted or referred to, 590, 612.
John Damascene quoted, 599.
Kempe, Bishop, present at Pecock's con-
demnation, 619.
Lambith (Lambeth), 620, 621.
Lombard, Peter, his book of Sentences
quoted, 599.
Lowe, Bishop of Rochester, praise of, 572
573.
present at Pecock's condemnation, 619.
Orosius, the prologue of his history referred
to, 571.
Pecock accused by Bury of heresy, ra-
tionalism, &c., 571-607.
worse than Wiclif or Mahomet, 602.
sarcasms on his vanity, 605.
titles of several of his works named,
594, 605.
his books burnt at London and Ox-
ford, 622.
his *Repressor* corrected by himself,
573.
vindicates his sermon at Paul's Cross
to Archbishop Stafford, 615-618.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>Pecock a despiser of the Fathers, 619-622.
 abjures his heresies, 619-622.
 sent to Maidstone, 620.
 and to Canterbury, 621.
Phaleas, 611.
Plato, 577, 590, 604, 611.
Porphyry quoted, 577.

Scylla and Charybdis (in allusion to the
 well-known line), 595.</p> | <p>Socrates, 611.
Solon, 611.
Stafford, Archbishop, Pecock's memorial
 to, 615-618.
 disputations against Pecock held be-
 fore him, 621.

Thomas Aquinas quoted, 610.

Uncertain (medieval?) poet quoted, 602.</p> |
|--|--|
-

ADDENDA ET CORRIGENDA.

Introduction, p. xi. Thinking it possible that the archives of Oriel College might mention the county of Pecock's birth, or some other particulars respecting him, unknown to me, I ventured to apply to the Rev. Dr. Hawkins, Provost of Oriel, for information, who politely replies:—

"I should be very glad if I could throw any light upon the subject of your inquiries, but I find no register of ours going back quite far enough. If I had the entry of his admission as Fellow, it would probably have mentioned the county, perhaps the very place of Bp. Pecock's birth; but the regular entries do not appear to begin till a few years afterwards. Lewis is certainly very particular in giving the day and year of his admission (Oct. 30, 1417), after Bp. Kennet; but I do not know whence Bp. K. obtained his information; and it is curious that whereas he speaks of Pecock being chosen Fellow in the place of Rd. Garsdale, S. T. P., elected Provost, I do not find the name of Garsdale in the lists of our Provosts. (That he was Fellow and one of the College Treasurers from 1409 to 1413 appears from some books of accounts older than the College Register.)

"In A. Wood's MSS., in the Ashmolean Museum, c. 1. 53, p. 67, the name of "Reynold Peacocke" appears in a list of the Fellows of Oriel, 1424, according to a memorandum which I find in the handwriting of the late Bp. Copleston.

* * * *

"I fear you will get no more exact account of the place of his birth.

"Thos. Gascoigne, from whom A. Wood takes his account of Pecock, was of Oriel College, and resided in it for many years, although not a Fellow. He was a contemporary of Pecock's, but certainly no friend of his."

P. xxv. note, last line, *for* generation *read* separation.

P. 19, l. 1, place a comma after *indicialis*; lines 16, 20, 23, and 33, place a comma after *cerimonies* and after *iudicialis*.

P. 20, l. 29, place a comma after *God*; also after *England*, p. 22, l. 11.

P. 25, l. 35, dele comma after *resoun*.

P. 28, note, *for* to *read* in.

P. 33, l. 2. The MS. of the *Repressor* used by Bury seems also to have been defective here. He quotes Pecock's text thus: "Yet the bookis of gramare reherce withinne hem trouthis of divinite, as it shewyd in *Catholicon* in diverse placis. Also though the faculte of Lawe Canoun and the faculte of divinite." &c., *Glad. Sol.* MS. cap. xix.

P. 35, l. 34, insert comma after *is*; and similarly, p. 37, l. ult. and p. 38, l. 28.

P. 61, l. 16. The reference (written on an erasure) is false, *for* xliij^o. *read* iij^o.

P. 61, l. 22. Stories maken mensioun] "Matthew wrote his Gospel in the vij^o. yere after Cristis ascencioun, and Mark wrote in the x^o. yere aftir Cristis ascencioun, as may be had by *croniclis of Martyn*," (i.e.

Martinus Polon. *Chron.* A.D. 40); Pecock's *Book of Faith*, p. 16. (Wharton's edn.)

P. 64, l. 10. The interrogation after *what thanne* should be cancelled, and the note thereon: there is none in Forhall and Madden's text of Wiclif's Bible, whence this is taken. *What = why* (71;). See Glossary.

P. 66, l. 15, *for vnsufficienci read vnsufficientli*.

P. 73, l. 9, *for bisttith read bisttith*; and see Glossary.

P. 85. Marginal summary. *For Scriptur read Scripture*.

P. 86, l. 34, *for you read ȝou*. (*You* never occurs in this MS.)

P. 90, l. penult., *for goon on read goon*, which is probably intended by the scribe.

P. 98. Cancel the note: there is no reason to suspect *ȝerun*.

P. 104, l. 19. Dele comma after *chapiter*, and insert comma after *considerid*.

Id. Marginal summary. *For tests read texts*.

P. 109, l. 16. The comma should probably be placed after *seie*, not after *ferthermore*. *Redili = evidently*. See Glossary.

P. 116, l. 9. Insert comma after *defende*.

P. 133, l. 31, *for ithfe read feith*.

P. 135, l. 23, *for hise read his* (*hise* is the plural form.)

P. 138, l. 26 and 33, dele hyphens both here and at p. 140, l. 6; p. 202, l. 28; p. 313, l. 24, and keep the words distinct as in the MS.

P. 139, l. 29, *for a read al*: (the letter has been accidentally broken in striking off the sheet: *a* is a northern form for *all*, such as never occurs in Pecock.)

P. 142, l. 8, *for xvj°*. (sic MS.) *read xxvj°*.

P. 146, l. ult., *for xvij°*. *read xvijj°*.

P. 164, l. 15, *wele* (note): this orthography occurs again at p. 188, but similarly in a later hand.

P. 167, l. 10, *for deuli read clenli*, cancelling the note; and see Glossary.

P. 185, l. 22, *for inlasse read in lasse*, cancelling the note; and see Glossary.

P. 223, l. 20, *for longer read lenger*, which seems to be the only form used by Pecock.

P. 224, l. 3. The reference is false. Probably Levit. xx. 8 is the place intended.

P. 225, l. 7, *for see read se*.

P. 227, l. penult., *for v. read iv°*.

P. 230, l. 17, *for self read silf*.

P. 242, l. 20. Both here and at p. 301, the first hand is perhaps right.

P. 246, l. 1, *for thert read therto*.

Id., l. 5, *for ij°*. *read ij*.

P. 247. Marginal summary. *For answered read further answered*

P. 257. Ditto. *For tranumption read transumption*

P. 266, l. 1, *for reherchid read rehercid*.

P. 272, l. 13 and l. 15, insert comma after *lasse*.

P. 276, note 1, *for t read twice*.

P. 279, l. 25, *for tha read that*.

P. 297. Marginal summary. *After lawfulness insert of possessing riches.*

P. 307, l. 14. It would have been better to have read *temporal* (there is a contraction in the MS.), here and below, p. 312, l. 68, p. 315 (*bis*), and elsewhere.

P. 314, l. 31, *for* all read *alle*. (*All* is a form unknown to this MS. See Glossary.)

P. 323. This silly story is again alluded to by Wiclif, and also by Johannes de Parisiis, circa 1290, who is rather an early authority for *angeli* in lieu of *diabolus*. "Quod vero Deo displicuerit (Constantini donatio) ex hoc sumitur argumentum, quod legitur in *vita B. Sylvestri* 'Papa, quod in donatione illa audita est vox angelorum, dicentium in "aere, *Hodie in ecclesia venenum effusum est.*" *De pot. reg. et pap.* c.xxii. quoted by Dr. Todd in notes to *Wycliffe's three treatises*, p. 163. This looks very much as if Giraldus, who wrote about a century earlier, had got his account from some fabulous biography of Sylvester. Similarly Lord Cobham: "Then the archbishop asked him, What he meant by that "venom? The Lord Cobham said, Your possessions and lordships. For "then cried an angel in the air, as your own chronicles mention, *Woe, "woe, woe! this day is venom shed into the church of God.*" Foxe's *Martyrs*, s.a. 1413 (vol. 3, p. 338, ed. 1844). It is mentioned in fine by Higden, *Polychron.*, lib. iv. c. 26. It thus appears how difficult it is to be sure to what works of the Lollard's Peacock alludes, seeing that they copy so often from each other, just as the chroniclers themselves do.

P. 331. Cancel note 1.

P. 333, l. antepen., *for* fitting read *sitting*, and cancel the note. See Glossary.

P. 351, l. 1, [Girald.] Higden, referring to "*Giraldus ubi supra*" (he had quoted his *Topographia Hibernie* a little before, but he also refers to other of his books), lib. iv. c. 26, says, "From that tyme forwarde by cause "of the grete rychesse that the chirohe of Rome hadde, it was made the "more seculer, and hadde more seculer besynes than spyrytuell deuocion, "and more pompe and boost outward than holynesse within forth, as it is "supposed. Therefore it is wryten that whan Constantyn hadde made "that yefte to the chirehes, The olde enemy cryed openly in thayer (the "air), *This daye venym is heled and shedde in holy chirche.* Therefore "Jerome, *In Vitas Patrum*, sayth, *Syth that Holy Chirche increased in "possessyons, it is decreaced in vertues.*" Trevisa's *Translation* (sig. y. iii., Caxton's edition). It deserves notice that a MS. in Archbishop Tenison's library has *the awngel of hevyn* written on an erasure in place of *the old enemy*. On Higden's authority we cannot well doubt that Peacock ascribed the legend to Giraldus; but what book of Giraldus is referred to by Higden must be left to others to discover. The passage does not, I believe, occur in the MS. of his *Descriptio Mundi* in the British Museum.

P. 355, l. 2, [Jerom.] I had remarked that the Index to St. Jerome's works does not indicate the passage; and on looking to Vincentius Bellouacensis *Spec. Hist.* lib. xiii. c. 102 (the reference in the note, taken from Nicolaus Cusa is false), I am a little doubtful whether he meant the assertion to rest on Jerome's assertion or not. "Ego legi (says Cusa) in "Vincentio *Hist.* xxiv. libro in fine secundum S. Hieronymum Constantinum uxorem Faustam et filium Crispum crudeliter occidisse, et in

"extremo vitæ ab Eusebio Nicomediæ episcopo baptizatum in Arianam hæresim declinasse."—*Br. Fasc.* p. 158. The first part of the sentence is certainly intended by Vincentius to depend on Jerome's authority, and perhaps the latter also. But there is little doubt that Higden led Peacock into error. "Jerom in *Historia Tripartita* seith, that Constantyn in his laste dayes was ycristen of oon Eusebius, Bishop of Nichomedia."—*Polychron.* lib. iv. c. 26 (*Trevisa's Translation*, MS. in Tenison's library). Higden has here made two errors, first in ascribing the *Tripartite History* to Jerome, and next in making that work say what it does not say. See *Repressor*, p. 353, note. Peacock's reference to Jerome is therefore probably false.

P. 361, l. 4, *for* endewing *read* endewing.

P. 363, l. ult., *for s* *read* so.

P. 383, l. 30, *for* nowen *read* mowen.

P. 389, l. 4, *for* ij^a. *read* ij.

P. 394, l. 18, *for* or *read* for, (letter broken off.)

P. 408, note, *dele* full stop after *pars*.

P. 413, Marginal summary. *For* misuse *read* habitually misuse. The correction is important.

P. 416, Marginal summary. *For* third *read* fourth.

P. 437, note 5, *for* quo aliud *read* quod aliud.

P. 469, Marginal summary, l. 3, *for* firs *read* first, (letter broken.)

P. 479, l. 18, *dele* stop after *liknes*.

P. 496, l. 7, insert comma after *accordingli*.

P. 497, l. penult., *for* her *read* hir.

P. 540, Marginal summary. *For* premisses *read* premiss.

P. 572. The Rev. T. Chevallier has been good enough to collate for me the preface and first chapter of Bury with the Durham MS., for which see Raine's Appendix to Rud's *Catalogue of MSS. in the Chapter Library at Durham*, p. 388. The first leaf is wanting, and the first words of the preface are *animalis homo*, p. 572, l. 14.

P. 572, l. 29, *vir geminus*.] The Durham MS. fortunately confirms my correction. Mr. Chevallier compares Athenæus, *Deipn.* lib. 1, c. 4 (vol. 1, p. 9, Schw.).

P. 573, l. 7, corrigat] *me* corrigat, Durham MS., the *me* being interlineated, but in the same hand.

P. 573, l. 24, *literarum*]. The Durham MS. here and at p. 574, l. penult., agrees with the Oxford MS. against my corrections, the former of which, however, is tolerably certain. Perhaps the last sentence had best be left as it stands in the MSS.

Pp. 575, 576, c. I. The Durham MS. begins by l. 21, and scarcely differs at all from the orthography of the Oxford MS.: in for yn, wick for wyche, wyche for wiche, *conclusyon* for *conclusioun*, ought for oughte, dooth for doothe, *parfithly* for *parfithely*, and *Goddys* for *Goddys*, are the only deviations noticed by Mr. Chevallier.

P. 576, c. II. l. 5. The Durham MS. also reads *autem*.

LONDON:

Printed by GEORGE E. EYRE and WILLIAM SPOTTISWOODE,
Printers to the Queen's most Excellent Majesty.
For Her Majesty's Stationery Office.

